

PRIME MINISTER ATTLLE, PRESIDENT TRUMAN, PREMILR STALIN AND THEIR AIDES, AT POTSDAM (Pages 401. 402)

The World's Great Events

An Indexed History of the World from Earliest Times to the Present Day



ILLUSTRATED

VOLUME TEN
From A.D. 1939 to date

P. F. Collier & Son Corporation

COPYRIGHT, 1945
BY P. P. COLLIER & SON CORPORATION

COPYRIGHT, 1940, 1942, 1943, 1944 BY P. P. COLLIER & SON CORPORATION

COPYRIGHT, 1920, 1922, 1924, 1926, 1933 BY P. F. COLLIER & SON COMPANY

COPYRIGHT, 1908, 1913, 1915, 1916 BY P. F. COLLIER & SON

CA

"Europe Completes a Cycle," copyright, 1939, Events Publishing Company, Inc.; "The Nazis Come," copyright, 1941, Florence Jaffray Harriman; "Battle to the Sea," copyright, 1940, Iime, Inc.; "The Army of Despair," copyright, 1943, The Crowell-Collier Publishing Company; "Pearl Harbor," copyright, 1943, Gilbert Cant; "The Knockout at Midway," copyright, 1943, Harper & Brothers; "The First 'Second Front," copyright, 1942, Events Publishing Company, Inc., "A Close-Up at Stalingrad," copyright, 1944, The Atlante Monthly; "Salerno," copyright, 1943, Weekly Publications, Inc.; "Report from Tarawa," copyright, 1943, Weekly Publications, Inc.; "Report from Tarawa," copyright, 1943, Myeeia; "The Miracle of American Production," copyright, 1943, American Mercury, Inc.; "The Invasion," copyright, 1944, Henry Holt and Company; "America's Greatest Naval Battle," copyright, 1945, The Crowell-Collier Publishing Company; "Miltary Surgery," copyright, 1944, The Crowell-Collier Publishing Company; "A Letter from Iwo Jima," copyright, 1945, The Atlante Monthly; "Farewell to F.D.R.," copyright, 1945, The Salent Monthly; "Farewell to F.D.R.," copyright, 1945, The Salent Monthly; "Farewell to F.D.R.," copyright, 1945, The Weekly Publications, Inc.; "We Must Win Another Battle in Germany," copyright, 1945, The New York Times Company; "Terror in Japan," copyright, 1945, The Crowell-Collier Publishing Company; "United Nations; Last Chance," copyright, 1945, MeGraw-Hill Publishing Company, Inc.;

CONTENTS

VOLUME TEN

FROM A.D. 1939 TO DATE

	PAGE
BRITAIN MUST GO TO WAR (A.D. 1939)	1
EUROPE COMPLETES A CYCLE (A.D. 1939)	11
THE NAZIS COME (A.D. 1940)	29
BATTLE TO THE SEA (A.D. 1946)	59
THE ARMY OF DESPAIR (A.D. 1940)	65
THE INVASION OF RUSSIA (A.D. 1941)	77
Pharl Harbor (a.d. 1941)	87
Congress Declares a State of War with Japan (a.d. 1941).	109
THE KNOCKOUT AT MIDWAY (A.D. 1942)	113
THE FIRST "SECOND FRONT" (A.D. 1942)	135
A CLOSE-UP AT STALINGRAD (A.D. 1942-1943)	151

	PAGE
Salerno (A.b. 1943)	173
Report from Tarawa (a.d. 1943)	183
Penicillin (a.d. 1943)	193
THE MIRACLE OF AMERICAN PRODUCTION (A.D. 1943) Burnham Finney	203
THE INVASION (A.D. 1944)	215
V-Day in Paris (a.d. 1944) Ernie Pyle	251
America's Greatest Naval Battle (a.d. 1944)	² 57
Military Surgery (A.D. 1944)	301
A Letter from Iwo Jima (a.d. 1945)	315
FAREWELL TO F. D. R. (A.D. 1945)	333
VICTORY IN EUROPE (A.D. 1945)	341
We Must Win Another Battle in Germany. Curt Riess	357
Terror in Japan (a.d. 1945)	371
United Nations: Last Chance (a.d. 1945)	, 20-
THE ATOMIC AGE (A.D. 1045)	387
THE "RISING SUN" SETS (A.D. 1045)	403
Frank W. Price	409

ILLUSTRATIONS

VOLUME TEN

PRIME MINISTER ATTLEE, PRESIDENT IRUMAN, PREMIER STALIN	
AND THEIR AIDES AT POTSDAMFronti	spiece
PACING	PAGE
CHANCELLOR HITLER REVIEWS THE GERMAN VICTORY PARADE IN	
Warsaw and Gives the Nazi Salute to the Artillery as	
IT PASSES	26
From a photograph	
British and French Troops Queue Up on the Beaches of Dunkirk to Await Rescue. In the Epic Evacuation, May 30 to June 4, 1940, Some 335,000 Trapped Men Were Transported Safely to England	42
From a photograph	
NAZI VICTORS IN THE PLACE VENDOME, PARIS, AFTER THE SURRENDER OF THE UNDEFENDED CITY, JUNE 14, 1940. A CLIMAX IN ONE OF THE GREAT WORLD TRAGEDIES	74
From a photograph	
PEARL HARBOR, DECEMBER 7, 1941. U.S. BATTLESHIPS West Virginia, Tennessee and Arizona Lie Stricken After the Japanese Attack. The Arizona, Which Exploded and Sank, Was a Total Loss	106
. 5 1	
Destruction in Stalingrad. Soldiers and Armed Civilians in One of the Bloodiest Battles in Russian History Turned Back the German Invaders Who Had Penetrated the Central Part of the City. Losses in Men and Equipment	
ON BOTH SIDES WERE ENORMOUS	154
From a photograph	

FACING	PAGE
Aerial View of the Prisoner of War Camp at Mateur, North Africa, Filled with German Troops Captured in the Last Days of the Tunisian Campaign. Axis Resistance Ended May 12, 1943	170
D-Day, June 6, 1944. Nazi Underwater Obstacles Are Revealed by the Ebbing Tide on a Normandy Beach. In the Foreground Are Allied Vehicles Wrecked During the Landing Operations From a photograph	234
American Troops and Equipment Pour Ashore in the Lingaren Gulf Area of Luzon, in the Philippines, on January 9, 1945	282
United States Marines Crouch in the Volcanic Sands of Iwo Jima Early in the Invasion of This Vital Stepping Stone to Japan, February 19, 1945	330
From a photograph	346
The Formal Surrender of Japan, September 1, 1945. Scene Aboard the U.S.S. Missouri in Tokyo Bay Just Before General MacArthur Signed the Surrender Documents 4 From a photograph	ļīo

BRITAIN MUST GO TO WAR.

(A.D. 1939)

NEVILLE CHAMBERLAIN

(Address made to the House of Commons, September 1, 1939)

DO not propose to say many words tonight. The Time time has come when action rather than speech is re- for quired. Eighteen months ago I prayed that the re- action. sponsibility would not fall upon me to ask this country to accept the awful arbitrament of war. I fear that I may not be able to avoid that responsibility, but, at any rate, I could not wish that conditions in which such a burden should fall upon me were clearer than they are today.

No man could say that the government could have done more to try and keep open the way for an honorable and equitable settlement for the dispute between Germany and Poland, nor have we neglected any means of making crystal clear to the German Government that if they insisted on using force in the manner in which clear to they have used it in the past, we were resolved to oppose Germany. them by force.

Now that all the relevant documents are being made public, we shall stand at the bar of history knowing that

Reprinted by permission of Vital Speeches.

German Chancell ir tesponsinle the responsibility for this terrible catastrophe lies on the shoulders of one man. The German Chancellor has not hesitated to plunge the world into misery in order to serve his own senseless ambitions.

I would like to thank the House for the forbearance they have shown me on two recent occasions in not demanding from me information which they recognize I could not give while these negotiations were still in progress.

All correspondence with the German Government is being published in the form of a White Paper which will be available to Members, coming in relays, while the House is sitting.

I do not think it necessary for me to refer in detail now to these documents, which are already past history. They make it perfectly clear that our object has been to try to bring about discussions about the Polish-German dispute between the two countries themselves, on terms of equality, the settlement to be one which safeguarded the independence of Poland and which secured its due observance by international guarantees. There is just one passage from a recent communication of ours, dated August 30, which I should like to quote, for it shows how easily the final clash might have been avoided if there had been the least desire on the part of the German Government to arrive at a peaceful settlement. In this document we state this:

Clash might have been avoided.

"This government fully recognizes the need for speed in the initiation of discussions. They share the apprehensions of the Chancellor arising from the proximity of two mobilized armies standing face to face. They accordingly most strongly urge that both governments should undertake that during the negotiations no aggressive military movements will take place. His Majesty's government feels confident that they can obtain such an undertaking from the Polish Government if the German Government would give similar assurances."

That telegram, which was repeated to Poland, brought Polish an instantaneous reply from the Polish Government, troops will dated August 31, in which they say that the Polish Government are also prepared, on a reciprocal basis, to give Reich. a formal guarantee, in the event of negotiations taking place, that Polish troops will not violate the frontier of the German Reich, provided that a corresponding guarantee is given that there would be no violation of Poland by troops of the German Reich.

We never had any reply from the German Govern- No reply ment to that suggestion. It was one which, if it had been from followed, must have saved the catastrophe which took Government. place this morning. In the German broadcast last night, which recited the sixteen points of the proposals which they had put forward, there occurred this sentence: "In these circumstances, the Reich Government considered its proposals rejected."

not violate frontier of

I must examine that statement. I must tell the House what are the circumstances.

Proposals
not communicated
to Poland.

To begin with, let me say that these proposals have never been communicated by Germany to Poland at all. On Tuesday, August 29, in replying to a note which we had sent to them the German Government said that they would immediately draw up proposals for a solution, acceptable to themselves, and would, if possible, place them at the disposal of the British Government before the arrival of the Polish negotiators.

It will be seen by an examination of the White Papers that the German Government has stated that they counted on the arrival of a plenipotentiary from Poland in Berlin on the 30th, the following day.

England awaits proposals. In the meantime, of course, we were awaiting these proposals, but the next thing was that when our Ambassador saw Herr von Ribbentrop, the German Foreign Secretary, he urged upon him that when these proposals were ready—for we had heard no more about them—he should invite the Polish Ambassador to call and should hand him the proposals for transmission to his government.

Von Ribbentrop will not invite Polish Ambassador. Thereupon, reports our Ambassador, in the most violent terms Herr von Ribbentrop said he would never ask the Ambassador to visit him. If, he added, the Polish Ambassador asked him for an interview it might be different.

The House will see this was on Wednesday night, which, according to the German statement of last night,

is now claimed to be the final date after which no negotiation with Poland would be possible.

It is plain, therefore, that Germany claims that Poland Germany was in the wrong because she had not on Wednesday en- claims tered into negotiation with Germany on proposals which Poland 15 she (Poland) had never heard. Now, what of ourselves? at fault. On that Wednesday night, at the interview to which I have just referred, Herr von Ribbentrop produced a lengthy document which he read aloud in German at a rapid speed. Naturally, on this meeting, our Ambassador asked him for a copy of the document.

He replied that it was now too late, as the Polish representative had not arrived at Berlin at midnight and so we never got a copy of those proposals. The first time we heard them was on the broadcast last night. These were the circumstances in which the German Government said they considered their proposals were rejected. It is now clear that their conception of negotiation was that on an almost instantaneous demand the Polish plenipotentiary should go to Berlin, where others have been before him, and should then be confronted with a statement of the demands to be accepted in their entirety or refused.

I am not pronouncing an opinion on the terms themselves, for I do not feel called upon to do so. The proper Proposals course, in my view, was that these proposals should have been put before the Poles, who would have been put before given time to consider them and to say whether in their the Poles.

should have been opinion they did or did not infringe those vital interests of Poland which Germany had assured us on a previous occasion she intended to respect.

Only last night the Polish Ambassador did see the German Foreign Secretary, Herr von Ribbentrop. Once again he expressed to him what indeed the Polish Government had already said publicly—that they were willing to negotiate with Germany about their disputes on an equal basis.

Poland u illing to negotiate.

What was the reply of the German Government?

The reply was that without another word German troops crossed the Polish frontier this morning at dawn and are since reported to be bombing open towns. In these circumstances there is only one course open to us.

His Majesty's Ambassador in Berlin and the French Ambassador have been instructed to hand to the German Government the following document:

"Early this morning the German Chancellor issued a proclamation to the German Army which indicated clearly that he was about to attack Poland. Information which has reached His Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom and the French Government indicates that German troops have crossed the Polish frontier and attacks on Polish towns are proceeding.

German troops cross Polish border.

> In these circumstances it appears to the governments of the United Kingdom and France that by their action the German Government have created conditions—namely, an aggressive act of force against Poland

threatening the independence of Poland-which call for the immediate implementation by the governments of the United Kingdom and France of the undertaking to Poland to come to her assistance.

"I am accordingly to inform Your Excellency that unless the German Government are prepared to give His Majesty's Government an assurance that the German Government have suspended all aggressive action against Poland and are prepared promptly to withdraw their forces from Polish territory, His Majesty's Government English in the United Kingdom will, without hesitation, fulfill Government their obligations to Poland."

ready.

If the reply to this last warning is unfavorable, and I do not suggest it is likely to be otherwise, His Majesty's Ambassador is instructed to ask for his passport. In that case we are ready.

Yesterday we took further steps toward the completion of our defense preparations.

This morning we ordered complete mobilization of Complete the whole of the navy, army, and air force. We have mobilization also taken a number of measures both at home and abroad which the House perhaps would not expect me to specify in detail.

ordered.

Briefly, they represent the final steps in accordance with a prearranged plan. These last will be put into force rapidly and are of such a nature that they are deferred until war seems inevitable.

Steps have also been taken under powers conferred by the House last week to safeguard the position in regard to stocks and commodities of various kinds.

Comp : 1-04 u th 1914. The thoughts of many of us must inevitably at this moment be turning back to 1914. In comparison with our position then how do we stand at this time? The answer is that all three services are ready and that the situation in all directions is far more favorable and reassuring than in 1914.

Air-raid precautions. For behind the fighting services we have built up a vast organization of civil defense under the scheme of air-raid precautions.

As regards immediate man power requirements, the navy, the army and the Royal Air Force are now in the fortunate position of having almost as many men as they can conveniently handle at this moment.

There are, however, certain categories of service in which men are required immediately both for military and civil defenses. These will be announced in detail through the press and the British Broadcasting Corporation. It is most satisfactory to observe that there is today no need to appeal in a general way for recruits, such as was issued by Lord Kitchener twenty-five years ago. That appeal has been anticipated by many months, and men are already available.

Men already available.

So much for the immediate present.

Now we must look for the future. It is essential in face of the tremendous task which confronts us, more espe-

cially in view of our past experience in this matter, to organize our man power this time upon as methodical, equitable and economical a basis as possible. We therefore propose immediately to introduce legislation directed to that end, and a bill will be laid before you which, for all practical purposes, will amount to an expansion of the military training act.

Under its operation all fit men between 18 and 41 Expansion will be rendered liable to military service if and when of military called upon. It is not intended at the outset that any considerable number of men, other than those already liable, will be called up, and steps will be taken to insure that men essentially required by industry will not be taken away.

training

One other allusion before the close of my speech, and that is to record my satisfaction and the satisfaction of His Majesty's Government throughout these days of crisis to Signor Mussolini, who has been doing his best to reach a peaceful solution.

It only remains to set our teeth and enter upon this Determined struggle, which we so earnestly endeavored to avoid, to the with a determination to sec it through to the end.

end.

We shall enter it with a clear conscience and with the support of the Dominions and the British Empire and the moral approval of the greater part of the world. We have no quarrel with the German people except that they allowed themselves to be governed by a Nazi government. As long as that government pursues the No peace in Europe.

method which it has so persistently followed during the last two years there will be no peace in Europe.

We should merely pass from one crisis to another and see one country attacked by another by methods which have now become familiar to us with their sickening technique. We are resolved that these methods must come to an end, and if, after the struggle, we can reestablish in the world the rules of good faith and the renunciation of force, then even the sacrifices entailed upon us will find their fullest justification.

EUROPE COMPLETES A CYCLE

(A.D. 1939)

LUDWIG LORE

▼RACING the war to its diplomatic origins is not an easy task. It is, however, an important one because it helps us to determine, at least approximately, who was responsible for the outburst.

Where to begin? How far back to go? The bitterness between Germany and Poland which culminated in the present war is not of recent date. It has been there ever since the Germans took a large part of Poland after the bitterness Napoleonic wars and made common cause with the Czarist Russia to keep their Polish subjects in subjection.

Germanof long standing.

At the outbreak of the World War the German Imperial Government promised the Poles to restore their ancient kingdom—and made Poland the no-man's land of the war in the East. Then the Versailles Treaty created a new Polish State, but, in the process, hacked Germany in two, creating a situation that precluded a lasting German-Polish peace.

Reprinted by permission of Current History.

Thus, when Hitler came to power, he inherited a situation already tense with antagonism, largely, to be sure, of his own making. Hitler's accession threw the Poles into a panic, and they were profoundly relieved when, instead of invading their country, Hitler and the Polish ambassador made the astounding announcement that their two countries had come to an understanding, when in January, 1934, Germany and Poland signed a ten year non-aggression pact.

Nonaggression pact.

Poland's desertion of her old ally, France, which had nursed her through the difficult years of her early state-hood, had a pronounced effect on European diplomatic relationships. For France, fearing an undue strengthening of Germany's power, turned to the Soviet Union, concluded her famous non-aggression pact with Moscow, and helped Litvinoff perfect a chain of peace treaties with the small countries along Russia's western frontier—a move which in turn made Poland press even more frantically into Hitler's embrace.

Russia makes treaties uith countries on uestern frontier.

After the death of Marshal Pilsudski, Polish dictator, who had been dominated completely by his pro-German Foreign Minister Col. Beck, his successor General Smigly-Rydz made new overtures to England and France, without, however, breaking off relations with Germany. It was his idea that Poland could best safeguard her own and European peace by observing strict neutrality between the contending forces. Nor did he

overlook the fact that France and England were in a position to give financial aid which Poland badly needed.

So Poland balanced precariously until Germany's Anschluss with Austria wakened all her old fears anew. Thereupon she held several discussions with Moscow and Rumania, which ended in a Polish-Rumanian Polish-Treaty, the terms of which were never clearly defined. Rumanian Whether or not Rumania forgot her resentment over Moscow's refusal to give up Bessarabia, and agreed to let Russia march troops through her territory in case of war, has never been established. In the present war Rumania, so far, has observed painstaking neutrality.

Treaty.

That was how matters stood when Germany marched into Czechoslovakia last year and set up the stage for the Czechworst of Poland's many diplomatic blunders. Poland's Polish relations with Czechoslovakia had always suffered from the fact that the post-war peace treaties left unsolved frontier problems. In a peace treaty she signed with Czechoslovakia in the early 20's Poland had promised to drop her claim on portions of Slovakia, while Czechoslovakia had agreed to do likewise in regard to parts of Eastern Galicia. In 1934 there had been a new and serious flare-up of hostilities as a direct result of Poland's pact with Berlin. Most of the controversy centered around the district of Teschen in the south-east corner of Silesia, and feeling was still tense in the fall of 1938 when the Czechoslovakian crisis forced by Hitler shook slovakian Europe to its foundation. Poland at once announced her- crisis.

self in on any division of Czechoslovakia. Hungary presented similar claims and Czechoslovakia, crushed by the Munich tragedy, yielded to both.

Poland's fear of Russia. To understand Poland's strange foreign policy, one must appreciate how powerfully it was influenced at all times by her fear of her Russian neighbor, which was every bit as great as her dread of German invasion. That this fear was well grounded is all too grimly evidenced in the thoroughness with which an opportunistic Russia invaded her country a few weeks ago and snuffed out whatever remaining chances she may have had against Germany.

Soviet-Polish war of 1921. The bad blood engendered by the Soviet-Polish war in 1921, when the Red Army almost smashed the young Polish Republic after Marshal Pilsudski's invasion of the Ukraine, left an indelible stain on Russo-Polish relations. Poland professed to live, and probably did live, in constant apprehension, though nothing was further from Moscow's thoughts in the early years of the Soviet Revolution than a war of territorial acquisition. In fact, the Soviets themselves lived in constant fear of invasion by the western powers. These two fears, instead of neutralizing each other, intensified distrust and hysteria.

Resentment at Communist propaganda. As the years passed Poland lost some of her terror of Russian invasion, but her resentment at Communist propaganda grew in the same measures. Worst of all, however, was her knowledge that, in any war between Russia and capitalistic Europe, Poland would inevitably

become the battleground. It was this that made the life of the Polish Foreign Minister an endless endeavor to play Moscow against Berlin and Berlin against Moscow, to keep either from becoming too powerful for safety.

In 1032, Poland engineered a non-aggression pact with Russia. This was before the coming of Hitler, and the agreement was received by the German press with little, if any, disapproval. In September, 1933, the news that Moscow had sent a personal gift to Marshal Pilsudski, together with an invitation to come to Moscow to participate in a Red Army's celebration, gave rise to the report that the two countries had concluded a military alliance, though Moscow vigorously denied it.

Reports of military alliance denied.

One can imagine Moscow's feelings in January, 1934, when it learned of the Polish-German 10-year pact. Colonel Beck hastened to the Russian capital with reassurances and a few weeks later two Soviet-Polish protocols were added to Europe's diplomatic documents. But feeling between Moscow and Poland remained tense. When Tension Poland learned that France had proposed a military loan between to Moscow in connection with the Franco-Russian Treaty, she demanded that France should permit none poland. of the loan to be used by Russia to build roads and bridges to the Polish borders. Thereafter Warsaw carefully abjured anything but the most formal relations with her Soviet neighbor, in an effort to avoid giving Germany the slightest reason for complaint.

Russia

Poland
masses
army on
Ukraman
border.

Last year, a new rift threatened Polish-Soviet relations when the Poles entered the Czech situation with their demand for a portion of Ruthenia. Russia stormed and Poland replied by massing most of her army on the Ukrainian border, but her heart was not in it. President Moscicki and Colonel Beck were in favor of facing matters out on the side of the victorious Hitler, but Marshal Smigly-Rydz counselled against it.

While all this was going on, there was a new development on the continent—a growing determination by England and France to create an aggressive front against further Nazi expansion. In Warsaw, too, there the conviction was growing that what happened in Europe would eventually depend on England and France. Wherefore Colonel Beck betook himself to France late last December to talk matters over.

Germany backs Ukrain: in nationalist movement. Germany's backing of a Ukrainian nationalist movement was causing Warsaw anxiety. The Nazi Government was pursuing a broad scheme for a Greater Ukraine which would include parts of Poland, Rumania and Russia, along with a section of Czechoslovakia (Ruthenia). The situation seemed to call for a united defense by Russia, Rumania and Poland, with France as the arbiter of such an agreement.

While Poland's old pact with France had never been denounced, it had become almost meaningless. There was a reasonable doubt whether France would feel called upon to defend the Poles against German assault. How-

ever, the outcome of Colonel Beck's visit to Paris was more favorable than he could have hoped. Late in February Warsaw announced that he would also visit London shortly. On March 21st a British delegation arrived in Polish-Warsaw to see Colonel Beck on "matters of general con-British cern:" on March 22nd London reported that Poland had requested a Polish-British military alliance as the price for her signature to a stop-Hitler declaration. It was intimated also that Poland had approached Moscow for a guarantee of help, but that the Soviets had refused to commit themselves without the certain knowledge that Britain and France would combat an active German thrust. Not long afterward Warsaw reported that the road had been paved for closer Polish-British trade relations to stimulate Poland's new industrialization plan, and a few weeks later, on March 30th, Prime Minister Chamberlain pledged French and British military assist- Chamberlain ance to Poland in case of attack by Germany, leaving it pledges to Poland to decide whether or not such aid should be sent. It was London's first official departure from Munich.

relations.

assistance to Poland-

In the future history of Europe, the word "Munich" will be synonymous with a foreign policy that secks to appease an aggressor nation in the hope of getting some small concession in return. On September 30, 1938, the Munich Conference between Chamberlain and Daladier Munich on one side and Mussolini and Hitler on the other ended Conference. its negotiations with the following pledge:

Importance
of AngloGerm in
relations.

"We, the German Fuehrer and Chancellor and the British Prime Minister, have had a further meeting today and are agreed in recognizing that the question of Anglo-German relations is of first importance for the two countries and for Europe.

"We regard the agreement signed last night and the Anglo-German naval agreement as symbolic of the desires of our two peoples never to go to war with one another again.

"We are resolved that the method of consultation shall be the method adopted to deal with any other questions that may concern our two countries, and we are determined to continue our efforts to remove possible sources of difference and thus to contribute to assure the peace of Europe."

London
indignant
over invasion
of Czechoslowakia.

To recall the details of the Czechoslovakian deal is surely superfluous. How the Czechs were betrayed into defenses, how Hitler forced them to accept Reich domination—all this is fresh in our minds. There was a storm of indignation in London. When Hitler took Czechoslovakia into his Empire seven months later the Prime Minister explained, ruefully, that this was something no one could have foreseen. Hitler was not stopped. Paris and London were content to register paper protests, and the British Prime Minister delivered a petulant speech. But Czechia remained a German satrapy.

There was no excuse for what happened in Munich and after. Hitler's record was there for everyone to read.

On December 1, 1935, he had joined Prague in a treaty which pledged both parties to submit all differences to a permanent arbitration commission. Yet when President Benes of Czechoslovakia demanded to be heard before the commission in September, 1938, he was informed that it had been abandoned. Furthermore, Hitler had Hitler's promised Austria, not once, but many times, to respect treachery. her sovereignty and independence. He had repudiated his naval agreement with Britain just three months before. Surely there was no valid reason to believe that he would keep his word now.

Chamberlain has been violently attacked for having acted in bad faith. The fact that Hitler's treachery to Czechoslovakia wrought so deep a change in this austere man proves that these charges were groundless. March, 1939, was the turning point in Mr. Chamberlain's life, Tunning aye, and a turning point in British history. England be- point in gan to arm in earnest. She almost doubled her air fleet in a few short months. New departments were added to her Defense Ministries. There was an upheaval and a wholesale casting off of old ways and methods.

Hand in hand with this internal readjustment there has been a reorientation of British relations with France On February 6, 1939, Mr. Chamberlain in the House Chamberlain of Commons pledged to France "the immediate co-opera- pledges tion of this country in case of any attack to the vital interests of France, from whatever quarter it might come,"

co-operation to France.

heading off various rumors that London planned to leave the French to see it through alone. Italy's demand for Tunis found England so positively on the side of the French that Rome dropped the whole business. France. for her part, was a great deal more positive on the question of German colonies than she had ever been before.

The first opportunity to test the strength of the new Franco-British alliance came when France asked England to break with her age-old tradition of no conscription in peace time. England rose to the test and military conscription was adopted with amazingly little protest a fine testimonial to the British workers' sense of social and international solidarity. Another test came when Paris asked London to propose an arms alliance to the Soviet Union as the only chance of preventing another war. England complied, though the thought of approaching Moscow must have been gall and wormwood.

When London sent her first invitation to Moscow last March, the Foreign Commissar responded with gratifying willingness. There had been rumors of negotiations between Moscow and Berlin for a trade agreement as early as last November but the Russians gave no sign of having weakened in their determination to fight Fascism to the last round.

Russia refuses to accept British terms.

Military

conscription in England

> It soon became clear, however, that Moscow had not the slightest intention of entering into an agreement with Britain on London's terms. She made demand after demand, offered objection after objection. Just what

> > 20

transpired during these discussions was never officially reported. It was said that she wanted protection against Protection a possible German invasion of the Baltic Republics, and of Baltic nobody will deny that this demand was justified. Others Republics. reported that she wanted the right of protective intervention in these states should they be directly or indirectly menaced by the Reich. Against such an agreement, which would have permitted the Red Army to march into the Baltic area whenever Moscow chose to believe Baltic security threatened, the countries in question raised a loud protest.

At the time it appeared that the real point at issue was mutual distrust between the British and Russian states- Mutual men. There were rumors that London was negotiating distrust. an underhand settlement with Hitler, and their persistence seemed to justify apprehension, particularly since Chamberlain stubbornly refused to take either Anthony Eden or Winston Churchill, conservative opponents of appeasement, into his Cabinet.

Later there were reports that Moscow was holding up the agreement with two conditions: 1) that no party to Russia's the pact should be allowed to conclude a separate peace conditions. without the permission of all the others; 2) that Russia must move into military action simultaneously with Britain in the event of hostilities. In other words the impression was that Moscow wanted to protect herself against another surprise d la Munich, in which she might be left holding the bag. Chamberlain, on his side, un-

doubtedly had more than an intimation of the game that Hitler and Stalin were preparing behind the scenes,

Be that as it may. The facts are that Mr. Strang, a prominent member of the British Foreign Office, was sent to Moscow, only to be recalled after many weeks of fruitless dickering; that Moscow finally demanded an Anglo-French military commission to discuss technical military questions with a like Russian commission; that this commission was sent to the Russian capital and was still on the spot when the bomb finally burst.

On August 20th Moscow and Berlin announced the completion of a Russo-German trade pact under which the Soviet Union would take German goods to the amount of 200,000,000 marks and sell to Germany 180,-000,000 marks' worth of manganese, oil, wood, ores and other war supplies. The pact was signed at once. Four days later von Ribbentrop arrived in Moscow and concluded a Russo-German non-aggression pact in less than three hours of negotiations with Foreign Commissar Molotoff. Ten days later it was ratified by the Supreme Soviet and by the German Reichstag. It has been argued and is undoubtedly true, that a non-aggression pact need not necessarily have a political significance. Unfortunately the speeches and declarations that accompanied its adoption justified no such conclusion. Moreover the pact in itself is virtually a military alliance, since in it Russia undertakes to supply Germany with raw materials she needs for her army and her war industries. The mili-

tary nature of the alliance was thrown into bold relief when, on September 17th, Soviet Russia marched into the Russia Polish Ukraine, thus directly helping Germany to score the knock-out blow on Poland and enabling the Reich to transfer troops to the West.

marches into Polish Ukraine.

What makes the Russo-German agreements so suspicious is the secrecy with which they were engineered. Soviet defenders insist that Moscow in self-defense was driven to act as she did by Chamberlain's obstinate refusal to come to terms. Yet there is every indication that the Russo-German treaty was already under discussion when Paris and London began their Moscow talks. It was certainly far advanced when Russia asked London to send a military mission. Moscow has found it difficult to explain this double dealing.

But by their fruits ye shall know them, and the fruits of the Russo-German agreement were not long in ripening. On the day of its ratification, Hitler marched his Hitler's army into Poland, giving the lie to the official Commu- troops nist Party version that the U.S.S.R. had made this last supreme sacrifice to preserve world peace.

Poland.

In the light of what has happened since—the sending of a commission of high military officials to Berlin disguised as embassy attachés, and especially the Russian invasion of Poland on the East-one is forced to conclude that Stalin, faced with a choice between greater power for Russia and a possible war on the side of democracies, too weak to take a positive stand, fearing, perhaps, another Munich appeasement, chose the former, letting the international labor movement and the world revolution take care of themselves as best they can.

Collapse
of untiComintern
Axis
predicted.

When the Russo-German treaty was first announced some observers predicted the collapse of the anti-Comintern Axis, involving Germany, Italy, Japan and minor powers, as one item on the credit side of Moscow's ledger. Immediate events gave some weight to this assumption. Mussolini did not plunge into war when Germany did. In Spain, Franco likewise issued a neutrality declaration, declaring openly that his anti-Communist convictions made it impossible for him to come to terms with Russia. Japan's sharp disapproval of the Russo-German treaty was to be expected in view of her undeclared war with Russia in Outer Mongolia and China and at various other points along the east-Siberian frontier. However, Germany has succeeded in persuading Tokio to settle her quarrel with Moscow. With the aid of Germany and Russia, Japan is now free to pursue her undeclared war in China with much greater chance of success. It is an open secret that the guerrilla wars with which Chiang Kai-shek has been harrying Nippon's armies were largely financed and equipped by the Soviet Union.

Japan free to pursue Chinese War.

It is possible that Stalin intends to turn his back on Europe altogether with the idea of making rich Siberia the center of gravity of Russia's economy. That would leave Germany a free hand to pursue her expansionist aims in eastern Europe, strengthened by the assurance

that Russia no longer would offer resistance at the other end of the line.

Meanwhile, Moscow's defection from England and France and her military action against Poland add tremendously to their burden. The war on the western front may go on for months, perhaps years, without decisive advantages for either side.

However, it is possible, indeed it is more than likely, that a number of the small neutral states will be drawn Neutral into the vortex before the war is over. That the German states army will have to violate one or more neutral states if likely to be the war lasts much longer may be taken for granted. The Oslo states—Sweden, Denmark, Norway, Finland. Belgium, Holland and Luxemburg-have concluded a Oslo states mutual assistance pact and are expected to denounce all conclude trade relations with the German aggressor if the sov- pact. ereignty of any of them is violated. That in itself would be an enormous contribution to the allied cause since Russia has no appreciable surplus with which she could feed a blockaded Germany for any length of time.

Berlin still hopes to persuade the Balkan states to come to her assistance, particularly Bulgaria, whose king, a German by descent, has shown sympathy for the Axis Powers. Italy and Germany had been mending their fences in the Danubian and Balkan areas for years, while Britain and France until recently pursued an incredibly short-sighted policy. Their repeated refusals to give financial aid to these financially weak states might easily

involved.

I skev to counteralance to Axis Powers. have driven them all into the Axis. What kept them out was the fear of becoming German vassals. An effective counter-balance to the Axis Powers in southeastern Europe has been the Turkish Republic, which has taken an unqualified stand with the Allied Powers, even to offering to close the Dardanelles to German shipping.

To what extent the United States will come to the aid of the Allied Powers remains to be seen. On the side of Germany, Italy also is an unknown factor, though this writer has never believed and still does not believe in Rome's continued neutrality. Mussolini unquestionably is keeping out of the fight for the time being in an understanding with Hitler, for strategic and other reasons Exhausted as they are, after the African and Spanish campaigns, his troops would not weigh heavily in the balance. As a neutral, on the other hand, he can keep the Allies from moving in on Germany from the south-east and make it almost impossible for Rumania and Yugo-slavia to break their neutrality in favor of Poland and her associates.

Italy as a neutral is help to Germany.

Out of this welter of cross purposes and seeming confusion there is emerging a clear division between two world ideologies, two schools of political thought. This is no longer a war between nations. When Chamberlain and Eden declared that there could be no peace with Hitler they lifted the conflict to a new plane. Today the peoples of Europe are in a war of democracy against



CHANCELLOR HITLER REVIEWS THE GERMAN VICTORY PARADE IN WARSAW AND GIVES THE NAZI SALUTE TO THE ARTILLERY AS IT PASSES (Page 27) FROM A WIDE WORLD PHOTOGRAPH

fascism as well as intolerable social and political sup- Democrace pression.

avainst

From the diplomatic maze out of which this conflict Fascism. grew there is arising with startling clearness the fact that, for the first time in modern civilization, governments were forced by public opinion to take up arms against an aggressor nation. The price will be incalculable and the masses of all nations will pay it in blood and terrible suffering. Will it be worth it? That is for the peoples in the democratic countries to determine.

[September 28, 1939. Warsaw surrenders to German forces. November 4. The United States arms embargo is repealed in favor of a "cash and carry" trade with belligerents. November 30. Russian troops invade Finland. December 13. German pocket battleship Graf Spee. disabled in battle with British cruisers, seeks refuge in harbor at Montevideo. December 17. Ordered out of Montevideo by the Uruguayan Government, the Graf German Spee is scuttled by her crew. February 4, 1940. The crew United States enters into diplomatic relations with Saudi Scuttles the Arabia for the first time. March 12. Russia and Finland sign peace treaty. April 9. Germans march into Denmark and Norway.]

Graf Spec.

THE NAZIS COME

(A.D. 1940)

FLORENCE JAFFRAY HARRIMAN

INDSIGHT we all seem to have. But it is fantastic that none of the things which happened in the week preceding the fatal daybieak of April 9th awakened us to danger. A hundred incidents should have prepared us. Instead we were transfixed, her danger. still watching the war in Finland. Early in January the ten-million-dollar loan to Norway for purchase of foodstuffs in America was arranged. In the middle of January, the King opened parliament, calling for a policy of strict neutrality and for greater defense appropriations. Princess Martha went about quietly laying plans for the taking over of men's work by women in case of war.

Norway unaware of

Even the Altmark incident, with all its political implications, excited us less as a portent that war was already in our own fjords than as some grotesque medieval story of rescue from dragons. Norwegian neutrality had been violated, but by whom? That was the important question. The Nazi ship had come down through Nor-

Altmark incident.

From Mission to the North, published by J B Lippincott Company, Copyright, 1941, by Florence Jassray Harriman

Legendary quality of the Altmark incident. wegian territorial waters, its ship's paper having been examined at Bergen, but the ship's hold not having been investigated. But the British had reason to believe that she carried British prisoners from ships sunk in the Atlantic by the *Graf Spee*. The very name of the British destroyer which discovered and pursued the *Altmark* up the narrow Jossing Fjord, *H.M.S. Cossack*, turned the incident into headline and legend. The fighting with cutlasses, the discovering of the prisoners, the rescue itself, of men who had been below hatches for weeks, were so dramatic that the legal consequences were overlooked by ordinary people. And a curious and equally startling incident in the aftermath was entirely unreported in the Press—unreported certainly, hushed up, more likely.

One afternoon in February, a Nazi plane landed, without warning, at Fornebö airport just outside Oslo. Without a by-your-leave, thirty passengers were disgorged who scattered over the field with cameras, taking photographs, making sights and memoranda. Asked for papers, the Pilot officer showed a permit to investigate the Altmark, some forty miles away. The effrontery of the incident was a warning, but the quite sincere, pro-British official of the company operating the field, when questioned by the British Legation, explained that the Germans were planning a commercial airline between Germany and Norway. One of his juniors, however, with no taste for easy explanations, was dining with me that night; he returned again and again to the subject

Strange explanation.

with foreboding. But not even he had a glimmering that within two months Nazi planes would be landing troops from Denmark on Fornebo Field as regular as any ferry Events no service. Squadrons of ten planes, each with mechanical one foresaw. precision depositing fifty soldiers with equipment, and returning to Silt for more. But I go too fast.

On Friday, April 5th, all the officials of the Norwegian Foreign Office received invitations to see a peace film. A German The engraved cards from the German Minister indicated "peace film" an occasion. They read "full dress and orders to be worn." The invitation arriving at such short notice, the Foreign Minister and the more important personages were previously engaged. But all the Bureau chiefs and a number of minor officials, in white ties and with mild curiosity, accepted and went. What they were treated to was a film, terrifyingly documentary and horrible, of the bombing of Warsaw. The German Minister explainedthe entertainment did require explanation—that the pictures were peace propaganda, because they proved to all observers what happened to any country which resisted Nazi attempts to "defend it from England." The audience was shocked, and-this seems strange now-still puzzled, as to why the film had been shown to them, to Norwegians.

The Foreign Minister and Mrs. Koht did not see the film. They were, as a matter of fact, dining with me. My party was for the new French Minister and Countess dunner de Dampierre. The Foreign Minister, who arrived half party.

A diplomatic

an hour late, explained briefly that the day had been the most nerve-racking of his official life. I had had an interview with him at midday, and he went on to say that after I had left, the German Minister, Dr. Brauer, had visited him, and that the British and French Ministers had occupied him until half past seven. His face was drawn, and I sensed that the day really had been more tense than usual, but for months he had been between these fires, and the evening passed without anyone's awareness that we were on the eve of tragedy.

Norway's Foreign Minister troubled.

Invitation to dinner at the German Legation. Early the next day, Dr. Brauer called me personnally on the telephone. Would I dine at his Legation on April 19th? He was inviting also the Foreign Minister and Frau Koht, and the Danish and Swedish Ministers and their wives. He threw in cosily that it would be his own wife's first appearance after her return from the hospital, and would I excuse her if she retired at half past ten. As I think I have said, dinner parties in Oslo used to run on well past midnight in candid talk, sometimes with dancing, and often with cards. Frau Brauer was a great favorite with all the corps. A small, pretty woman, looking far more French than German, she had just borne her first child, after twelve years of marriage. The Minister went on: "The baby's name is to be Dorothea. Do you know what that means?"

"The gift of God."

"Right," he said, perhaps a little surprised at my know-

ing, "and that is why we call her that." I could not help smiling at my end of the phone.

The next day, Sunday the 7th, came the formal engraved invitation for the dinner with "pour memoire" written in the corner. By April 19th no "Aide-memoire" was necessary to remind me of Nazi notions of hospital- The real ity. For days and days, by then, I had been dodging their Nazı bombs on the outskirts of a good many towns, and find- hospitality. ing it hard to get shelter anywhere.

On the morning of April 8th, news came to the Legation that the British had laid bombs at Narvik, the harbor British fjord in the north, terminal of the railroad from Sweden mine-laying and port for the great iron mines of the north. In the course of the morning, a telephone call from the United States Legation in Copenhagen apprised us briefly that a large body of the German fleet was passing through the Great Belt. The call did not tell us how many ships. "A great many. Details will be cabled you." I put on my hat and set off as fast as I could for the Foreign Office. The Minister was at a meeting of the Störting, the Norwegian parliament. I gave my news to Mr. Bull, whose job is like that of our Undersecretary of State. Neither he nor his Government had any definite information to give me as No lear of to the Nazi fleet's destination. As I look back, my im- Nazi attack pression still is that neither Mr. Bull nor his associates considered the likelihood that the destination was the Oslo Fjord, and I cannot recall a single diplomat that day who even suggested that we ourselves were in the

line of the coming battle. Most people surmised that the fleet was on its way to engage the Royal Navy in the North Sea. The British must have based all their plans upon this one expectation of a North Sea battle, because certainly—notwithstanding that they had promised to patrol the mines which they had laid—when the Nazi attack came, all British ships were discovered to have been withdrawn from Norwegian waters.

Brush ships all wuthdrawn.

Just before dinner, a coded cable from Copenhagen came to me, giving the number and classes of the ships which had passed through the Kattegat, and reported great activity all day at Silt, the air field on the coast of Denmark. The message closed "we fear retaliations." This we construed to mean retaliations against England for her mine-laying.

Air raid alarm not taken seriously. At half past eleven that night, Oslo sounded the air raid alarm, but as the street lights were not turned off for some time, we, at the Legation, did not take it very seriously. Members of the staff telephoned in to ask if I thought they ought to come round and take shelter in our new bomb-proof room in the basement. It had been finished only three days before and we had joked about it, saying, "Now the Finnish War is over, our bomb shelter is finished, too." I told everyone cheerfully that I was going to bed and advised them to do the same. Presently, both house and street lights went off, and we ran around in the dark in search of matches and candles. And still we thought it was just another of the occasional

practice air raid alarms we had been having all through the winter. Only, never before had the city authorities failed to give warning of one beforehand. Ray and Margaret Cox had been dining with an official of the Foreign Office and had kindly stopped in to ask if I were frightened. What did I think it was, they asked. It seems incredible now that not one of us connected that alarm with the proximity of the German ships; the idea of their attacking Norway still seemed so remote a possi- Crown bility. I have since been told that the Crown Princess, Princess with a woman's intuition, had sensed danger, and had senses commenced packing Monday afternoon.

danger.

After the "all clear" the Coxes went home, and everyone went to bed. It has never been explained why that alarm was given. Perhaps it was that some reconnoitering planes had been sighted.

At 3:00 A.M. the telephone made me jump out of bed. Sir Cecil Dormer asked me if I would take over the British Legation, as German warships were coming up the fjord. Generally, such a thing is not done without permission from Washington. In the emergency it was impossible to delay. The answer was "yes."

German warships approach.

I ran downstairs, and put in a call for Dr. Koht at the Foreign Office. He told me ships were approaching, but Foreign that the weather was so thick they had not yet been posi- Minister tively identified as German, although, "of course," he added, "we are sure that they are." Twenty minutes later, he telephoned to say there was now no doubt of

evasive.

their nationality. He would let me know, shortly, the plans of his Government.

In the meantime, Ray Cox and one of the clerks had arrived, and we got off a cable to the Department of(State. It was not possible to reach Washington by telephone. We suddenly became aware that the voice of the Oslo telegraph operator, who was saying that perhans our message would not get through to Washington, was an unfamiliar one. More German, we thought, than Norwegian accent. We put in a call for the United States Legation at Stockholm. Minister Sterling, we knew. might not be there, as he was en route from a short, much-needed rest, after his strenuous duties throughout the Finnish campaign. Mr. Greene, Secretary of Legation, answered the phone, and agreed to forward our message to Washington both by telephone, if possible and by cable, I could hear him catch his breath, and his tone change, as I dictated our cable and he caught the full significance of the news.

Message routed through Stockholm

Within the hour, the French Minister made the same request of me as Sir Cecil Dormer, to take over his Legation. We called our consuls and they hurried over, leaving their families to dress, pack and follow them Commercial Secretary Klath went to seal the French Legation and Vice Consul Kelsey went to the British, and got from the Ministers their requests to me in writing. Again I spoke to Dr. Koht. He said the Court and Government were going by special train to Hamar, and

Allied Ministers hasten departure he hoped that I would accompany them. When, at twenty minutes to seven, the Foreign Office called to say that the train to evacuate us would leave at seven o'clock, twenty minutes was too little time and I could not be ready. Wives and children of the Staff had been arriving so thick and fast that between five and six o'clock twentyfive of us had sat down to breakfast. We made several trips to the bomb-proof room before, during, and after the meal. German bombers whirred overhead, circling German the city. We could hear the little Norwegian planes bombers pursuing and the fire of anti-aircraft guns.

overhead.

It was decided that Margaret Cox, her boy Alan, and the Consulate wives and children should go to Sjusjon, one of the mountain resorts above Lillehammer. My Ministry own instructions being to "follow the Government," I and would stop off at Hamar, some few miles nearer Oslo, Consulate and join them. It had been planned that, in case of a Russian invasion during the Finnish War, evacuation should take place in the direction of Lillehammer, through the Gudbrandsdal Valley. As it turned out that was quite the worst place we could have gone. But who could foresee that?

By 9:45 we were all in our cars—I was proud of the speed and calm of our mobilization—and joined the pro- Speedy cession that was steadily streaming out of town. In my and calm trusty Ford were more suitcases than seemed possible. The chauffeur, one of the clerks, a maid, a typewriter, me, and the code book. As we approached Lilleström,

on the outskirts of Oslo, we could hear the snap, snap, snap of machine-guns overhead. A small Norwegian plane was giving chase to a Heinkel—we craned to watch. Drivers pressed forward not exactly frightened, but we all breathed easier, as we moved out from under those dark outlines in the sky. Only one car, the third ahead of us, was struck by falling shrapnel. No one was hurt, but dents and scraped paint were sharp reminders of how narrow the escapes were.

Narrow escapes.

As I had been in bed only one hour and had had breakfast between five and six, I was beginning to feel the strain. Though all around us was one of those lovely northern spring days which made you feel as if the whole world were young again, I was aware only of the contrasts between the earth itself and the ill will and crimes among men.

Kjeller airfield bombed. As we passed Kjeller airfield—the field from which I had made my flight over the glacier that first summer in Oslo—we saw that it had been bombed and that the hangars were still burning. Stunned and silent groups stood on the street corners of the little settlements we passed, dumb before the rush of events. Men in uniforms and grim lads with muskets, alone, or in small companies of a dozen or so, hurried past us, apparently on their way to answer the order for general mobilization.

Oslo occupied by Nazis. Behind us the Nazis had occupied Oslo. From all reports they had simply moved in. Someone, describing it, kept repeating, "They let the Nazis in with smiles on

their faces, frozen smiles." There has been a great deal written about how the easy occupation of Oslo was due to treachery. What we have come to call the "fifth column" had indeed been busy; the Nazis were indefatigable in an infinite variety of ways, from defamation of the British, to a thousand minor tricks and courtesies of propaganda, in an effort to make the Norwegians German-friendly. There was trade acceleration. There was interchange of tourists and students. But not a bit of real evidence has been adduced, aside from Major Major Ouisling and his small group who moved swiftly to ob- Quisling's tain possession of telephones, telegraph and radio, that treason. the Norwegian people, for a single moment, welcomed the invasion. Everything in the Norwegian Democracy was opposed to Nazi brutality. If the "frozen smile" was upon the faces of any of those who saw the German troops march in, it was from shock at the Gorgon's visit. As for Quisling, many people had for a long time regarded him as of unsound mind.

The seizure by him and the Germans of the instruments of communication spread havoc. Orders would come through to officers of the Army and Navy to report ready for battle, only to be followed by orders, "Offer no resistance to the Germans." It was a dark day in history. Only the invasion seemed to go as planned.

The unexpected sinking of the battleship Blücher and Blücher disabling of the Gneisenau in Oslo Fjord were the Ger-Gneisenau mans' only major set-back and delayed their plans by disabled.

sunk and

a full eight hours. If all had gone as schemed, the King himself and the Government would have been surrounded before there was time to evacuate. Minister Brauer paced the quay expectantly. But Oslo was not taken from the sea. The new warfare from the air made the coup.

Odn taken ly an attach.

Hou the warship Blucher

uas sunk.

Mani Germans drown.

A single man, a retired naval officer (I wish I knew his name), is hero of the strange delay. To him, in his house on the mainland near the island on which stands Fort Oscarborg, came news that German ships were bearing up the fjord. He came to the shore. No sign of life in the fort; no sign yet of the oncoming ships. He untied his boat and rowed himself across to where the fort's two old guns, affectionately treated as museum pieces, turned their muzzles to the sea. One of them, because it had fallen into the water when being hoisted into place back in 1900, had long been known as "Moses," its fellow. therefore, as Aaron. Inside the fort he rallied the younger officers, gave the orders to them to man the guns. As the Blücher came leisurely within five hundred feet of the fort, old Moses belched, carrying the ship's bridge and top hamper clean off into the water, and with it, the General in Command of the expeditionary force, the Admiral and high officers of the Gestapo who stood beside them. Then Aaron followed suit. The Blücher and her crew, the German financial experts, laden with plans for a new fiscal system for the country, and Heaven knows what other papers, went down in Oslo Fjord.

The Germans in that day of their "famous victory" must have lost upwards of twenty thousand men by drowning alone. The British official communiqué for April 10th speaks briefly of troop ships sunk in the North Sea.

The last official version given me is that "the old fort at Oscarborg was really manned and had its commanding officers on the spot. Whether the old guns or the Already more modern guns did sink the Blücher is not known." a legend. But the first story has already settled into legend. It is the one that people tell, and the one I like to believe. Anyway, after the sinking of the Blücher, Nazi officers went to Horten and demanded sketches of her.

The Norwegian officers answered, "We never have had any."

"But you must have, because the Blücher had only one weak spot, and you hit her there."

Meanwhile, the little Norwegian gunboat, the Olaf Tryggvason, who had convoyed the City of Flint in Feats of November, was actively defending the naval station of Norway's Horten, where she had been reconditioning. She crippled small navy. the *Emden* so badly that she was put out of action. Now the Olaf Tryggvason serves with the Royal Navy in the North Sea. The German cruiser, Karlsruhe, was also sunk outside Kristiansand the same day. When the war is over, there will be many gallant stories to be told of the tiny, outmoded Norwegian Navy manned by seamen second to none; and of the coastal forts, only one of which fell without resistance.

Rallving
of the
peasant
youth.

That the citizens of Oslo were petrified in those first days is explicable. The blitzkrieg seemed to be over before it had begun. But there was no such lethargy amongst the country people, far from airports, to whom the rumor came of menace. The peasant youth rallied. They literally sprang to arms, with hunters' guns and tools, faithful to their Norwegian colors. But that is not the right way to express it; they opposed the danger, willing to lay down their lives, but the suddenness of the attack and the breakdown of communications made concerted action in the beginning impossible. Rumors flew about that the British were coming to help.

It took us six hours that lovely April day to make our steady but uncertain way in our heavily laden car to Hamar. The roads were not only crowded, but everybody we met stricken-not afraid, but uncertain as to direction. Nobody could tell what was happening, and when we reached Hamar we found not only every hotel, but every inch of space, under every roof, "full up" with members of the Government, so we trekked on to Hösbjor. Here we found that the family of the Crown Prince and members of the French and British Legations had preceded us. While we were dining, Sir Cecil Dormer came to my table and whispered that he had just heard that the Germans in their armored cars were expected at Hamar in half an hour. The French and he were going on to Elverum, and didn't I think I had better join them. I inquired where the Government in-

Elverum suggested for a haven.



BRITISH AND FRENCH TROOPS QUEUE UP ON THE BEACHES OF DUNKIRK TO AWAIT RESCUE IN THE EPIC EVACUATION, MAY 30 TO JUNE 4, 1940, SOME 335,000 TRAPPED MEN WERE TRANSPORTED SAFELY TO ENGLAND (Page 63) FROM A BRITISH COMBINE PHOTOGRAPH

tended to go, and when I heard they were leaving Hamar at once for Elverum, I, of course, agreed to follow. Just before we had entered the dining room, a member of the Foreign Office, standing outside the hotel in Hösbjor, had looked at the tinderbox of a building and shaking his head at me said, "Yes, the enemy must know the British and French are here. They will surely bomb Bombing this place tonight. It will take ten minutes, no more, for expected. it to be destroyed completely." Recalling this cheerful bit of information, it was a pleasure for me, though I was tired, to move along to Elverum.

It was now dark and the scene in front of the inn was a shambles. Everyone, and that includes most of the British Legation staff which, swelling and swelling after Great Britain declared war, was now numbered at forty, scurried to salvage what little luggage they had brought. People were politely but firmly shoved aside; suitcases grazed shins on the crowded staircases. And I think we all must have looked like intent runners in a foot race, stretching for the tape. I don't in the least intend to imply that there was any panic, just that our manners No panic were a little grim. The French, with great agility, were but a little well on their way ahead of all of us. In the blackout, it gumness of was risky to leave one's bags and boxes and go back for more, and all the motors looked alike. I carried the code book which I had been warned not to let out of my sight day or night; and someone lugged a typewriter, which in the end we never used. Without analyzing the situa-

manner.

Expectations that were disappointed. tion, I think we all, subconsciously, expected to settle down comfortably, as the Belgian Government had done in 1914, and send out "Dispatches as usual." This was 1940, not 1914. We were not yet ready to imagine that King and Government would be hunted like wild animals. With me was one of the clerks from the Legation to do the typing and coding, and my maid who, being a British subject, would be made prisoner, I had feared, if left behind in Oslo. In the confusion of getting away from Hosbjor, the clerk lost her small trunk and all the new wardrobe she had acquired six weeks before, when she was evacuated from Helsinki. And my maid also had lost a bag.

Losses en route.

But there was no way of turning back to look for missing things, if we were to hold our place in the long creeping line of cars winding their way through the night, from the Gudbrandsdal to the Osterdal Valley Outside Elverum, we came on a squad of ghostly soldiers, in white suits, familiar to us from the Finnish War, preparing to erect a barricade as soon as the King and the Royal Family passed by. They did their work so well that when the pursuers came along, two hundred of the Germans were killed, and their quarry got away. When the news came through that the Nazi air attaché was among the fatalities, it was the only death that afforded any satisfaction. He had been at the German Legation in Oslo, had accepted hospitality and courtesies from the Norwegians, and now he had led the attempt to capture

A barricade to protect the King

or kill their King. At Elverum we drew up with a sigh before a commodious hotel. The proprietress shook her head. "There is not one bed in Elverum tonight." Darkness was black over the town except for the schoolhouse, Incomplete which was a blaze of light. There the Störting was sit-blackout. ting, a veritable beacon for the Germans, but proof enough of the naïveté of the Government, neutral until then, and unused to stratagems. A hundred years of peace had bred in them kindness, hospitality, and decency. One does not learn suspicion in a day, nor how to meet the wiles of war. As we stood in the April night wondering which direction to take, His Majesty and the Royal Family passed by in motors, bound, we later learned, for Trysil, some seventy miles further north. Meantime, someone directed both the British delegation and our car to a farm on the fringe of Elverum, and towards this our snake-like cavalcade proceeded. They gave us rooms in a primitive guest house. We were busy allotting the sleeping quarters when the British Minister received word from the police that the Germans had left Hamar on their way to Elverum. We could not know then how effective the barricade the soldiers in white had been building would prove.

At once, Sir Cecil and Lady Mary and their numerous retinue gathered their luggage to go further afield. As a neutral, I felt it unnecessary for me to continue the trek. The fact that I had had only one hour's sleep in the last thirty-eight may have had something to do with my

Wiles of war not grasped ut once

decision. They all went. Suddenly we found ourselves alone in the house. Then every sound made us jump. Suppose the Germans had traced the British that far and entered to catechize us as to their whereabouts! Fortunately, the barricade had held. We slept until 5:30 A.M. Then the first contingent of German planes came roaring toward Elverum. From then on, there was little cessation for them or us. The war had caught up with us.

The telephone wires in some directions were still unbroken. I was able shortly, that afternoon, to talk to Dr. Koht in Elverum, and to our Minister in Stockholm. It was impossible to connect with Oslo. An air alarm in the evening sent us all scurrying to the wood near the house. The snow lay still, white and deep. Some carried their bags with them, trying to use them to rest on. A crowd of business people had arrived from Oslo that morning, and the "guest house" was a hive of refugees. The lady who owned the farm said firmly that we would have to feed ourselves. So we bought eggs, sardines and biscuits at a little country store. There was a stove of sorts in the basement of our cottage but, as twenty-seven people were trying to use it at the same time, we were lucky to find space to boil an egg apiece.

Next day the Foreign Minister communicated the news that the Government was moving into Nybergsund. There they might remain for two days before going westward, meaning, I supposed, the Gudbrandsdal ValA.B. 1940

ley. He asked if I would come over to see him as soon as possible.

I quickly got my car, but when we tried to take the road, we suddenly realized we were in a trap. Every available road, even the short one into Elverum, was bar- Barricades ricaded; and how well! Wooden ship masts were laid on all roads. criss-cross on each other to a height of eight or ten feet, and fifteen to twenty feet in depth, with barbed wire threaded through them. At one of these barriers a young Captain came forward and told us to go back at once, as ten Nazi armored cars were due at any moment. I gazed in dismay at the twenty-five young country boys with their rifles, and two Red Cross nurses and a doctor, in a sedan, standing quietly by.

"How can such a mere handful of you," I asked, "hope to defend yourselves against so many Germans?" He ook me by the arm. He led me to the edge of the road and said "Look." There, on the thick wooded hillside, ompletely concealed from anyone approaching the barier, I could spot scattered machine-gun nests. By such uerilla warfare alone was the attack made so costly that Guerilla venty Germans were killed to every one Norwegian. warlare he Germans getting out of their cars would walk penly up a road from the woods, and a fusillade would me that mowed them down like ninepins. I often onder what did happen that particular afternoon, and the charming young Captain is alive today.

costly to Germans There is a code in the Norwegian countryside, that no man may make a blind attack on another, no matter what the feud. The enemy must have warning first. A Captain later told me the story of how his company was drawn up in ambush, ready to open fire on an approaching Nazi detachment, when he heard one of the boys say to the others, "It isn't fair to take them by surprise, we must fire into the air first, then they'll know that we are here." The Captain shivered as he told me the story "I stopped them just in time, and explained later that in war one dare give no quarter."

No ume for chu alry.

> Someone else told me that on the first day he had passed two hundred Germans going north and presently he met sixty Norwegian soldiers going south. He stopped to tell them that they were marching into a trap and must turn back. They assured him that it would be all right, as they were only going to the mobilization post. "We will talk to the Germans and explain every thing," they assured him, "and it will be all right" Stupid, of course, and they were all made prisoners as soon as they were met and were less than no use in the defense. These incidents are trivial, but they show how honest, how fair, and how unfitted for a war with Nazu Norway was. Yet after the first shock, though weapon and training were inadequate, and officers few and un prepared for the new tactics, the young Norwegians tool their places in the lines and stood firm.

Soldiers captured.

The story of the bus drivers has been told before in America. It has become a modern saga. A group of bus Saga of the drivers was under orders to convey a detachment of Ger- bus drivers. man reinforcements to a given point. They left notes for their families. "If we are forced to make this trip," they wrote, "you will not see us again ever." So much they told and no more. There were three bus loads. They came to a steep hill with a sharp turning at the bottom. Instead of putting on the brakes, prepared to turn gently, as they had so many times before with home folk on the journey, they drove with brakes off headlong into a deep ravine. Three Norwegian patriots and a hundred Germans fought no more.

In the wood where we sought shelter from bombs, on the night of the twelfth, there were strange noises. It seems that the Cadet school at Elverum had turned their horses loose to save them from confiscation, but the next day, being observed, the beasts were machine-gunned Horses from the air. I think of those horses still, contrades in gunned our misery, more frightened perhaps than we at the from Heinkels overhead.

the air.

At half past three on Friday I was in touch with Dr. Koht again. This time at Nybergsund. A half hour later, the hotel was bombed and the King forced to run King to the woods for his life. Dr. Koht still said he thought forced it a good idea if I could be nearer the Government, and to flee. I determined to make one more effort to reach them. There is a certain sort of satisfaction in moving, and it

Elverum burned. seemed no more risky than halting for cover, so wayward and unpredictable was the bombing. All day planes had been flying low over our heads in the direction of Elverum. Suddenly the dropping of incendiary bombs was observed, and we could see that the whole town was being enveloped in a thick cloud of yellow smoke. Wicked tongues of fire presently began to lick through the poisonous smoke screen. Someone tried to telephone. The wires were cut. The road north now being absolutely closed, I decided to experiment. I would try going south and detouring. The main road was closed, of course; the snow was impassable on the ways through the forest. Still, there must be some way. Eventually we gave up in despair. Every road was blocked either by stockades or snowdrifts.

Every road blocked.

A farmhouse refuge. We caught sight of a comfortable-looking farmhouse and climbed out to knock. The sweet-faced mistress of the place opened the door and welcomed us. But there was no bedroom for us—besides her own eight children, she was already sheltering several mothers from Oslo and their babies; but the parlor was ours if we wanted to have it. We could still hear the rumble of planes flying low, but they were not overhead. We all relaxed as if we had suddenly come home, so simply did Mrs. Peterson offer us hospitality. Late as it was, and with only a little running water in her kitchen, she made us coffee and gave us cakes and boiled eggs. I shall never forget that Norwegian country parlor, the family portraits that

looked down from the wall, telling I know not what story of better days; the linen sheets and pillowslips with their handmade lace insertion, the many little touches of grace in our welcome. Our beds were narrow sofas, and Anightin there were no blankets to spare from the babies; but we a country slept in our clothes gratefully, while the farmer and the parlor. chauffeur discussed roads to take us on our way. The farmer did his best, and before dawn went scouting on his skis through the neighboring forests, but snowdrifts barred every lead. He could, he finally offered, take us beyond the forest in a sledge, if we cared to leave the car behind until the war was over. "But on the other side of the forest, what shall we do without the car?" That was something he could not answer. He went off again in search of a clever neighbor. How to get the car over the forest? The neighbor had an idea. They would both try to get us by the barrier on the road to Elverum. The friend, arriving on his bicycle, took charge. If we hur- A quick ried, between air raids, the soldiers at the barrier would departure. devise us something. The sink being in use, I was at the pump in the yard, breaking icicles for my tooth brush, when I heard the news.

I called out that we would come at once. Only the clerk saw no hope and crumpled up. She clung to the idea that we ought to get a safe conduct from the Germans. Out of patience, I told her to choose quickly, to come along, or to stay on the farm until the war was over. I confess that I, too, felt that the Germans flying

Germans hunt down the King.

at low altitude were almost in my hair. The deafening roar was terrifying. But so intent were they on laying waste any town in which the King might be, that it was not until several days later that their shrapnel began to rake the roads.

All in the car at last, with the farmer and his friend clinging to the runningboards, we sped down the road to the barricades. The soldiers saluted warmly and set

Help at a

harricade.

Elverum a mass of debris. to work at once. I felt like something from an old picture-book of rescues in the Alps. The blockade and barbed wire ran from the steep hillside on the right to the precipitous bank of the River Glomma. Each of us was passed from one soldier to another and squeezed round the end of the entanglement; while the car itself, held in check by six or eight of the soldiers, was let slide slowly down onto the ice of the river's rim. "Lucky for you," spoke up someone, "there's no sun today to melt the ice on the river edge." Several more men went down with poles, "to fish out the car if it breaks through." Five hundred yards further upstream the men found an incline, steep but not impassable, and shouldered the car up onto the dirt road again. There was no way at all to thank our rescuers for letting us out of bondage. We could only give them change to get cigarettes. And this we do: we remember them with gratitude.

Where Elverum had been, but a few hours before, only the church and the Red Cross hospital were still standing. In the hospital were many wounded Germans. We

drove down the principal street which was littered with débris, past the wreck of the very hotel that had been "too full" to receive us less than a week before. The ashes were still steaming. Hardly a house but what had been razed to within four feet of the ground. There had heen over three hundred casualties. The car stopped and we gazed around. There is something ghastly in a ruined city. And we who looked about us knew how pleasant and how vital the human life of Elverum had been.

We got out of the car while the chauffeur took off the chains, which had been necessary for the river escapade, and as we stood there, Captain Ibsen, grandson of the great poet, came up to speak to me. He wanted to know if I could get a message through to our Legation and Amessage through them to his wife, Lillybel, one of the best known Norwegian actresses. He wanted her to know where he was and that he was still alive. This I was afraid would not be possible until I crossed the border into Sweden. But I would try. Everyone along the way everywhere bombarded me with similar requests. The invasion had been so sudden, the mobilization so instantaneous, that none of the men knew where their families were and No way for could only surmise what was happening in Oslo.

Captain Ibsen gave me warning that the long bridge this side of Nybergsund might be destroyed; he had heard bombings from that direction shortly before. Nothing for us to do, though, but to drive on, a long, cold drive, over the mountain pass with only one stop,

men to get family news.

for gas. We had biscuits and chocolate for lunch, and felt lucky to have them! Bus loads of soldiers passed us from time to time, moving probably to the Gudbrandsdal Valley, where we thought fierce fighting was now going on.

As we approached the bridge, we slowed up. We found it intact, but there were very large craters at either end, showing that bombs had been dropped but missed their objective. On the far side, where Nybergsund should have been, there was nothing to be seen but smoking ruins. Not a wall was standing. Wiped out! The only two men left in the whole place were talking disconsolately together in the middle of the road. In spite of the American flag on the roof of our car, they were suspicious of us and avoided telling us anything. No, they "knew nothing" of the whereabouts of the Government, and the only information we could get from them was that there had been only one casualty. A little girl of four had been killed as she ran across the street.

Afterwards, I wondered if I had shown them my passport whether they would have been less reticent. They seemed so stunned.

After considering the matter from every point of view, I came to the conclusion that there was no use searching any further at that time. The members of the Government might have taken any one of three roads. Also, as it had not been possible for several days to communicate with our Minister in Stockholm, it seemed wise to go to

the border where I could telephone him that we were still alive. One road, we were told, was not yet free enough of snow, so we took the other that skirted the River Glomma.

It was comforting to settle back in the car on a route that had so far escaped the Nazi bombers. We drove east and south through the Glomma Valley, the sun at times so bright and the sky so blue, the snow so quiet, that it seemed as if good dreams followed bad dreams. Nothing was real. For all the sun, it was freezing cold, and the way was long, until we reached the border. The young man at the Customs was not one to be lightly taken in. Doubts of A woman the American Minister to Norway?—No, a customs Madam, he would telephone to Headquarters before he officer. let us pass. My English maid stood nervously about, uncertain what she, too, would have to face, but when my unlikely story had been verified, and I was welcomed across the border and had explained that she was one of my household, all went smoothly, and no one ever asked to look at her passport. Just as well because I had hidden all her papers in the front of my dress when there seemed a chance of encountering German raiders. We had made great plans, too, as to what to do with the code book, far The code two large for eating, too bulky to be tossed unnoticed into book a the snow, not easily burnt in a hurry.

Swedish troops, plenty of them, apparently well organized and disciplined, manned the border. We saw artillery and armored cars on either side of the road, and

problem.

Communications

the dream of the afternoon was gone. War, as yet only potential war, hemmed us round again. My business was clear-to get in touch with Freddie Sterling and he guided by whatever information was (or so I hoped) pouring into Sweden, and my orders from Washington The ABC of blitzkrieg is the seizure of communications No one who has not been through it can readily under stand what that first week of the Norwegian War was like. And everywhere these blows effect the same phe nomena. The whole outside world is shut out, orders are interrupted, falsified, and every hysterical personality tends to float rumors, give frightened orders and mult ply the fog. I understand what happened in June n France the better for the period of running and waiting in Norway. For a week, from hour to hour, we did not know what was happening. Everybody I came in contact with behaved well. A certain stolidity in the Norwegian character saved us from panic, but could not prevent a general bewilderment.

I think I never had a clear picture of the many directions from which the attack came until long afterward I saw some graphic maps in the German propaganda magazine (printed in English for distribution in Africa and Latin America) showing how planned and how complete the attack from the air and all along the long coast had been.

Attack long and completely planned.

My own duty was simply to collect all possible information, whether I could collate what I saw and heard of

not, to find the Norwegian Government, and to keep in touch with Stockholm.

The Customs officer waved us through, and we were End of the directed to a small pension at Holjes.

BATTLE TO THE SEA

(A.D. 1940)

IGGING a tunnel under the English Channel from Calais to Dover (22 mi.) is a project discussed since Napoleon's time, repeatedly vetoed by Britain lest it bring an invader from the Continent. Last week both Britain and France might have devoutly thanked God for such a passageway had it been bombproof. After the abrupt surrender of Belgian King Leopold's Leopold, some 600,000 survivors of the northern Allied abrupt armies were locked in a triangular trap between the Lys surrender. River, the Artois Hills and the North Sea. As 800,000 Germans on the ground and thousands more in the sky relentlessly pressed the trap's jaws together, Allied Generalissimo Maxime Weygand with his Armies south of the Somme could do nothing but let General Georges Maurice Jean Blanchard, commanding the condemned forces, fight his way unaided to the tideline, where rescue ships waited.

The result was a scene of carnage and valor more concentrated in space and time than anything modern history ever saw: men by hundreds of thousands retreating

Courtesy Time Magazine, @ Copyright, Time, Inc., 1940.

True figures not revealed.

sands pressing forward in a desperation to surround, slaughter, annihilate. To preserve morale on both sides, and because the arithmetic was next to impossible, true figures on the loss of life were glossed over officially. But it could be guessed that not less than 500,000 men were killed, wounded or captured in seven days on a patch of earth about the size of an average U. S. county (970 sq. mi.). Additional casualties among the millions of civilian refugees were incalculable. At least 1,000 airplanes were shot down. Every town and hamlet from Boulogne to Cambrai and north to Bruges was shattered by explosives or leveled by fire. Virtually every acre was pocked by missiles, stained with blood, strewn or piled with corpses.

in a desperation to live, other men by hundreds of thou-

British withdrawal forced. Perhaps King Leopold surrendered when and as he did because he knew or suspected that the British were about to withdraw, as they had from Norway, with their host's Army covering their rear. Certainly his surrender forced their immediate withdrawal. But it was an orderly withdrawal with the wounded sent first; a courageous, masterful rear-guard action conducted by General Lord ("Tiger") Gort in full cooperation with the French.

When the Belgian surrender fatally exposed their left flank, the British, who were falling back from Arras-Cambrai to Lille, crossed the Lys River to Ypres and formed the east wall of an escape corridor along the Yser Canal to the sea. The flower of their Army, the proud Guards regiments-Coldstream, Grenadier, Welsh, Irish, Scots-had to let their line fold back from the southeast while artillery and remaining armored units covered the rear.

At the bottom of the fatal pocket, below Lille, were what was left of France's mechanized divisions, under Remainder General René Jacques Adolphe Prioux, 61. The French of French tanks fought in hollow squares like Xenophon's Greeks, giving ground only when holes in their ranks forced retreat to close them. Time and again they drove the Germans off the hills around Cassel and Poperinghe. The Germans thrust through between Cassel and Ypres, cutting the Allied pocket in half, but two of General Prioux's divisions smashed through, continued up the escape corridor's western wall toward the sea. The Ger- Germans mans reported capturing General Prioux and staff, who capture stayed behind till the end. German tanks, infantry, artillery crunched ever closer, climbing over heaps of their own dead, toward the port of Dunkirk. Just before getting there, the retreating Allies opened canal floodgates to the east and west. But German aircraft continued to lay down bombs and machine-gun slugs in devastating sheets.

mechanized forces.

General Prioux.

Along the French coast lay a heterogeneous Allied Allied armada under Vice Admiral Jean Marie Charles Abrial, commanding the Dunkirk naval area. French and British warships lay off shore, protecting themselves overhead by flaming curtains of anti-aircraft fire, covering the land

armada along French coast.

troops' retreat with a flowing dome of projectiles from their heavy guns. Ashore they sent seamen, marines and engineers to construct breastworks and gun emplacements for their soldiers to fall back on, and demolition parties to blow up wharfage and fuel stores. Because the ports of Boulogne and Calais were tightly encircled by German forces, the main rescue embarkation was prepared at Dunkirk, but furious action ensued at Boulogne -point-blank fire between tanks and destroyers-and at Calais, where a British garrison held out stoutly in the citadel although water, food and ammunition had to be parachuted to them by the R. A. F. At sea, three British destroyers went down under dive-bombings and torpedoes-the Wakeful, Grafton and Grenada. The Germans claimed sinking the battleship Nelson (the British scoffed).

Boulogne and Calais encircled.

Three British destroyers sunk

Spectacle at Dunkirk. At Dunkirk, the spectacle was prodigious, appalling. Inside the blazing line of warships lay transports of every description, from big merchantment and passenger steamers to channel ferries, private yachts, fishing smacks, tug-drawn coal barges. Over these craft wheeled swarms of German high bombers, down at them plunged wedge after wedge of dive bombers. Day and night the sea air was filled with screaming gulls and bats of death, including two whole German air corps commanded by Air Generals Grauert and von Richthofen (Wolfram, 44, cousin of World War I's "Red Knight," the late Baron Manfred).

Dunkirk is a man-made harbor cut into a sandy tidal plain, with a mole sticking out to protect a channel leading into a network of seven ship basins. When German bombs blew up the locks which held water in the basins at low tide, Dunkirk's inner loading piers became a muddy, smouldering shambles. Embarkation had to be Difficulties carried out by shallow-draft ships at the mole or by whale of embarboats, dories, rafts and wreckage bobbing in the surf kation. along the flat shelf of seashore. A calm sea and bright sunshine made the rescue ships perfect bomb targets for two days, and dozens of them were smashed, burned, sunk. Britain admitted loss of 30 warships. Then a blessed fog rolled in for 48 hours, saving countless lives.

When the soldiers reached the sea they hid (one of them said later) "like rabbits among the dunes." They were in smoke-grimed rags and tatters, many shoeless, Grim some still lugging packs and rifles, others empty-handed condition in their underclothes after swimming canals. They were of the too din-deafened and inured to horror to be fully sensible of the incredible cataclysin that still raged over them. Some clutched souvenirs—a blood soaked doll for a small daughter; a machine gun snatched from a crashed German plane with which one squad of men kept on shooting at new attackers and got two. Ambulatory wounded joined the rest in staggering into the oil-scummed waves, floundering out to reach the rescue craft amid spuming bomb-geysers. Day and night overhead the restless roar of air battle continued as depleted advance units of the

soldiers.

Royal Air Force were reinforced by squadrons of the Coastal Command. To join this action came a game but outmatched auxiliary squadron of British businessmen, week-end fliers.

[May 10, 1940. German forces invade Belgium, Holland, and Luxembourg. Winston Churchill succeeds Chamberlain as Prime Minister of England. May 14. The Dutch Army surrenders to Germany. May 28. Despite protests from his cabinet, King Leopold unconditionally surrenders Belgium, and he himself becomes a German prisoner. May 30-June 4. Vessels of all types safely evacuate 335,000 British and French troops from Dunkirk in epic Channel rescue. June 10, 1940. Italy declares war against France and England. King Haakon of Norway and his government retire to England. June 13. Paris is declared an open city and is evacuated by the French. June 14. German troops occupy city of Paris. June 15. Russians take possession of Lithuania. June 22. Germany and France sign armistice in Compiègre Forest, where the armistice of 1918 was signed. Terms provide for Nazi occupation of more than two-thirds of France.

335,000 men evacuated.

THE ARMY OF DESPAIR

(A.D. 1940)

QUENTIN REYNOLDS

♥HERE was no dawn. This was puzzling at first because it had been a clear night. Now the air was heavy with a smoky fog so thick that you could reach out and grab a piece of it in your hand. When you let it go your hand was full screen of soot. Then you realized that this was a man-made fog, over Paris. a smoke screen thrown over Paris to hide the railroad stations from the bombers. But for the first time in its history Paris had no dawn.

The restaurants and the hotels were all closed. For nearly a week there had been no way of hearing from or communicating with the outside world. A reporter without means of communication is a jockey without a horse. No matter what story you wrote now, you would be its only reader. And now the Germans were pounding on the gates of Paris. Already their mechanized forces had at the gates. encircled the city on three sides. Within a day the thing

Reprinted by permission of Quentin Reynolds and Colliers, The National Weekly.

that couldn't happen was inevitably going to happen. They would be in Paris.

The Government leaves Paris. It was time to say farewell to Paris. Virtually everyone else had left. The Government had left the cable office, and the wireless had moved south. With the exception of a few newspapermen who had been assigned to the death watch the entire press had left. They had to leave. They had to follow their communications. Hotels were closed. There were no telephones and not a taxicab on the streets. Today Paris was a lonely old lady completely exhausted. The last of the refugees were leaving, some on bicycles, some on foot, pushing overladen handcarts.

No siege of Paris.

I had stayed behind to write the story of the siege of Paris, confident that the army would hold out in the north. Now it developed that there would be no siege of Paris. A lonely old lady was not a military necessity. She was to be reluctantly abandoned. The problem of how to leave Paris was solved by one of those incredible bits of luck that come only to fools who have waited too long. The Grand Boulevard was almost deserted this morning. One middle-aged women was sitting at a table at a sidewalk café, one of the very few where one could still get coffee and bread. She was telling a few bystanders of her plight. She had driven into the city that morning in her small one-seated car. She had the car and two hundred francs, that was all. She would stay in Paris but she needed money. With money one could buy food even

Woman with a car.

from Germans. She wanted to sell her car. Sell her car? For weeks people had been combing Paris looking for cars. Offering fantastic prices, offering anything for How transmeans of leaving when the time came. I bought the car portation on the spot.

was secured.

She gave me the key. I gave her five hundred dollars, which left me with five. No signing of papers, no transferring of ownership. I don't know her name yet but I have her car.

Now I was mobile. Now I, too, could follow the Government, follow the wireless and the cable offices. My car was a Baby Austin, no bigger than a minute. Its tank was full of gasoline, enough to carry me a few hundred miles. There was room in it for a knapsack, a mattress, a typewriter and a steel helmet. And so the tiny car and I said farewell to Paris and headed south.

We didn't catch up with the great army of refugees Army of until we passed the city limits. From then on we were a refugees. member of this army. It is one thing to see thousands of weary refugees in the newsreel; it is something quite different to be one of them. We moved slowly; sometimes we would be held up for as long as three hours without moving. The road stretched from Paris to Bordeaux four hundred miles away and it was packed solid that entire distance. Thousands of these people had come from the north; many had been on the road for two weeks. They had only one thought: move south. Move Moving away from terror that swooped down from the skies. south.

Move away from the serfdom that would be theirs under German rule. Few had any money. Few knew where they were going.

Some rode in open trucks and large, open wagons drawn by horses. Inevitably the sides of these would be buttressed by mattresses. These were not for sleeping. These were protection against machine-gun bullets. Refugees coming from Belgium and from Holland and refugees who had come from the north had been machine gunned by Messerschmidts not once or twice but repeatedly. This is not rumor; it is fact.

Refugees machinegunned.

Speed with bicycles.

Thousands in our army of refugees rode bicycles and they made the best time. Often a military convoy came down the road against our tide of traffic. Then we would stop and wait interminably until it passed. Those on bicycles managed to keep going, winding in and out of the massed traffic.

Thousands were walking, many carrying huge packs on their shoulders. This was a quiet, patient army. There was little talk. The hours passed slowly. My uniform and military pass gave me priority. And yet in eight hours I had only covered fifty miles.

Gasoline a pressing need. It started to rain as night fell. Now we began to be held up by trucks and automobiles that had run out of gasoline. There was no gasoline to be had. Women stood on the roadside crying to us for gasoline as we passed. We could only look ahead and drive on. The rain continued to fall softly and the night grew very dark, which

made us breathe easier. Even German bombers can't see through a pall of blackness.

Individuals would emerge from the mass when we stopped. Here on the roadside was a woman lying asleep, People on her head pillowed on her bicycle. Here was a farm the road. wagon that had broken down. A man and woman with their three children, the youngest in the mother's arms, looked at the wreck. The rear axle had broken and when the wagon collapsed its weight had completely smashed one wheel. They stood there looking at it, their faces empty of everything but despair. The road was completely jammed now. A man went from car to car asking: "Is my wife there? She has lost her mind. She has lost her mind."

He asked me and I said: "No, she isn't here." And he looked his amazement at hearing his mother tongue. He was English, had owned a bookstore in Paris. We heard a strange laugh and he ran toward it quickly. I followed. He had found his wife. She had left their car and now she had returned to it. She kept laughing.

Their car had run out of gasoline. They had no food. Out of The woman laughed and then cried a little and said, gasoline. "Help us."

I took the man back to my tiny car. I showed him my gasoline meter. I had less than three gallons left. There was no room in my car for anything. I had no food. I couldn't help. People around us looked on, saying nothing. There was nothing to be said. Thousands were in the same predicament. But this woman had cried. That was breaking the rule a little bit. No one else was crying.

"Alerte alerte." Our army went on through the night. Hours later a whisper ran back: "Alerte . . . alerte." It had started perhaps miles ahead and had come back to us. The very few cars that had been showing lights snapped them off. Bombers were somewhere overhead in that black, unknown world above us. We were very quiet, thousands of us.

I stepped out of my car. I flashed my light once to see where we were. I was in the middle of a bridge. Not a good place to be with German bombers overhead. But there was no place to go.

We stood on the bridge, kept from going either backward or forward by the press of cars and trucks and wagons and bicycles and people and by the blackness of the night. Far to the right we could see occasional flashes and now and then hear the sound of the guns. Faintly now we heard the hum of a plane. It may have been the drone of fifty planes, flying high. It's hard to tell at night. Then it stopped. It may have been a French plane or fifty French planes.

Listening for airplanes.

Our army resumed its weary, tragic march. Now some turned off the road. We were in a beautiful part of France. It was raining too hard to sleep in the fields that bordered the road. I drove as long as I could, but the intense blackness of night strains your eyes as effec-

Intense blackness. tively as strong light does and when I had gone off the road twice I gave up.

Occasionally a car crawled by or a silent bicyclist or a few on foot passed. From the thousands and thousands ahead and behind came an overwhelming silence that somehow had the effect of terrific, overpowering noise. This silent symphony of despair never stopped. It was impossible to sleep. We sat in our cars and our wagons and waited for the dawn. It took hours for it to come Waiting and when it arrived it was a murky dawn. Without food for or drink, we set forth south, always south.

the dawn.

We passed through small towns. Streams of cars half a mile long would be lined up at a gasoline pump that had run dry days before. Now we passed stranded cars every few minutes. Sometimes people pushed their cars, hoping that there would be fuel in the next town. There was no fuel in the next. There was no fuel and there Neither fuel was no food. We were the stragglers in this army. For nor food. more than a week it had been passing this road.

At one town we passed a railroad station. A long freight train was just pulling in from Paris. The doors of the freight cars were open and humanity poured out, spilled, overflowed. These were the cars on which the famous sign, "Forty men, eight horses," was scrawled during the past war. Forty men. There were at least one hundred men and women and children in each of these Train freight cars. At each station the doors were opened for machinefive minutes. This train had been on the road nearly three gunned.

days from Paris. Once the train had been machine-gunned. Not one, but everyone I spoke to, told me the same story. It had been machine-gunned by eight German planes. French fighters had come and driven them off. Had anyone been hit? No one knew.

The congestion increased the farther south we went. People looked even wearier. Thousands of them had walked from Paris. We were a hundred and fifty miles from there now. Finally I arrived at Tours.

Bombers over towns. There was no rest for weary wanderers in Tours. The bombers came, aiming for an airport on the outskirts of the city and for a bridge that led south. The huge square in front of the city hall was packed with tired refugees. They ran when the bombs crashed. When bombs fall close to you, your only thought is to get somewhere else. They ran but their heavy feet rebelled and when they fell they lay where they had fallen, shapeless bundles of apathy and despair. Three times within an hour the Germans came and the horrible, shrill noise of tearing silk that the bombs made as they screamed earthward and the shattering explosions a second later drained whatever small vitality there was left in the pain-racked bodies of these miserable children of ill fortune.

Courage and stoicism They had to move on. They stumbled on south, bearing the cross of their despair with the same courage and stoicism that another had borne a cross nearly 2,000 years ago. Then we all had to leave. The Government had left and the wireless had moved south to Bordeaux.

Tours became another ghost town. I took back roads to Bordeaux to avoid the packed humanity of the main route. Near Bordeaux I joined the main road and once more became one of this army.

Bordeaux was bulging at the seams. Bordeaux was an Crowds in overfilled sack of flour tied too tightly around the middle. Bordeaux. It was night and thousands were standing in front of restaurants. When they were told that there was no food left they continued to stand there. Wild rumors chased one another along the dark, packed streets. The Cabinet had resigned; Reynaud was out; there was talk of capitulation. Added to the pain and misery stamped, perhaps permanently, on the faces of these homeless, there was now bewilderment. This thing couldn't be. This country their ancestors had built could not die. They and their fathers before them had tilled the soil, had nursed vineyards and had watched green leaves grow into sturdy vines and had seen the wonder of grapes being born and living and growing. Then they had turned the grapes into pure wine. What crime had they committed that they should now lie miserably in fields and in city streets. Had they placed too much faith in their rulers?

I sat in a crowded restaurant. The alerte sounded. Fear of Lights were put out and service ended. A trembling Nazi voice cried: "Fifty Boche planes are coming over Bor- airplanes. deaux. I heard it. I know it is true. Fifty planes will kill us all." The voice came from the woman who ran the

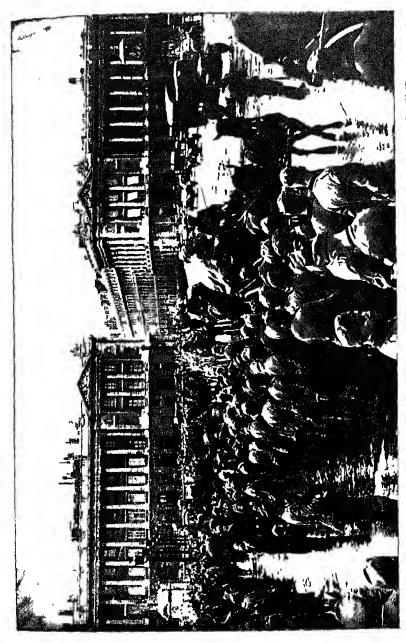
restaurant. No one moved. No one said anything. We were all a little bit embarrassed for the woman. Then an officer laughed, "Stop talking nonsense, Madame. Go back to your kitchen and find fifty eggs. We are all hungry." The woman stared ahead for a moment. brushed the hair back from her forehead and turned into the kitchen. The night was soft, trying perhaps to make one forget the helpless misery of three million homeless who were on the streets of Bordeaux. But no one looked up. The magic of the night was ignored. People were too tired. The English journalists hurried to a destroyer that had been sent for them. They had to get out quickly. We Americans were safe enough for the moment. We crawled into loft buildings to sleep. It was easy to sleep on hard floors. The flight from Paris had been a long and tiring one.

Misery of the homeless.

In the morning the homeless again started their pathetic trek to the south. Many left cars on the streets. There was no gasoline. Many abandoned broken wagons and cars and smashed bicycles. Where were they going? They didn't know. Writing this, I can see the street below filled with the pitiful, ragged army of refugees For days and for weeks they had endured this agony. It is not a pleasant sight to watch, this twentieth-century Gethsemane.

Agony of the refugees.

> [June 27, 1940. Rumania yields to Russia's demand for Pessarabia and northern Bukovina. July 1. German



NAZI VICTORS IN THE PLACE VENDOME, PARIS, AFTER THE SURRENDER OF THE UNDEFENDED CITY, JUNE 14, 1940. A CLIMAX IN ONE OF THE GREAT WORLD TRAGEDIES (Page 64) FROM AN INTERNATIONAL NEWS PHOTOGRAPH

forces occupy Channel island of Guernsey and Jersey. July 2. French government moves its headquarters to French Vichy. July 3. British sink or damage several French Government warships off Oran, Algeria, after French Fleet rejects ultimatum of surrender or immobilization. July 21. Lithuania, Latvia, and Estonia declare themselves part of the Soviet Union. August 6. The Italians attack British Somaliland. August 15. London is bombed by German planes for the first time. September 6. King Carol of Rumania abdicates in favor of his son Prince Michael. September 14. Congress passes the selective service bill calling for the registration of all men between the ages of 21 and 35. September 27. Germany, Italy, and Japan sign treaty in Berlin pledging mutual assistance in case Axis any one of them is attacked. October 13. The Yankee mutual-Clipper makes round-trip flight from New York to Ber- assistance muda in less than twelve hours. October 16. About pact. 16,000,000 Americans register for the draft. October 28. Italian forces invade Greece. November 5. President Roosevelt is elected to a third term by 449 electoral votes to Wendell L. Willkie's 82. November 20. Hungary joins the Berlin-Rome-Tokio alliance. November 23. Rumania also becomes part of the alliance. November 24. Slovakia follows example of Rumania and joins German-Italian-Japanese alliance. January 22, 1941. Tobruk falls to British forces. March 1. Bulgaria signs Germany-Italy-Japan pact. March 7. Italian Somaliland is completely captured by British troops. March 11. President Roosevelt signs

Vichv.

lend-lease bill. April 6. Nazi armies invade Yugoslavia and Greece. April 13. Russia and Japan sign neutrality pact. April 17. Entire Yugoslav army surrenders to Nazı forces. April 23. Germans break through Thermopylae pass. May 6. Haile Selassie returns to Ethiopian throne. May 27. German battleship Bismarck is sunk off French coast. June 6. Crete is abandoned to the Axis. June 11. Nazi troops are massed at Russian frontier. June 22. German armies invade U.S.S.R. on front extending from the Baltic to the Black Sea.]

Bismarck is sunk.

THE INVASION OF RUSSIA

(A.D. 1941)

WINSTON CHURCHILL

THAVE taken occasion to speak to you tonight because we have reached one of the climacterics of the war. In the first of these intense turning points, a year ago, France fell prostrate under the German hammer and we had to face the storm alone.

Defeat of France.

The second was when the Royal Air Force beat the Hun raiders out of the daylight air and thus warded off the Nazi invasion of our islands while we were still illarmed and ill-prepared.

The third turning point was when the President and Congress of the United States passed the lease and lend enactment, devoting nearly 2,000,000,000 sterling of the "lease-lend" wealth of the New World to help us defend our liberties and. and their own.

Those were the three climacterics.

The fourth is now upon us.

At four o'clock this morning Hitler attacked and in- Attack on vaded Russia. All his usual formalities of perfidy were Russia.

Broadcast from London, June 22, 1941.

Hitler's tormulas of perfidy.

Attuck in force without warning.

observed with scrupulous technique. A non-aggression treaty had been solemnly signed and was in force between the two countries. No complaint had been made by Germany of its non-fulfillment. Under its cloak of false confidence the German armies drew up in immense strength along a line which stretched from the White Sea to the Black Sea and their air fleets and armored divisions slowly and methodically took up their stations.

Then, suddenly, without declaration of war, without even an ultimatum, the German bombs rained down from the sky upon the Russian cities; the German troops violated the Russian frontiers and an hour later the German Ambassador, who till the night before was lavishing his assurances of friendship, almost of alliance, upon the Russians, called upon the Russian Foreign Minister to tell him that a state of war existed between Germany and Russia.

Treachery on a vast scale.

Thus was repeated on a far larger scale the same kind of outrage against every form of signed compact and international faith which we have witnessed in Norway, in Denmark, in Holland, and in Belgium, and which Hitler's accomplice and jackal, Mussolini, so faithfully imitated in the case of Greece.

Churchill's warnings.

All this was no surprise to me. In fact I gave clear and precise warnings to Stalin of what was coming. I gave him warnings as I have given warnings to others before. I can only hope that these warnings did not fall unheeded

10 1941

All we know at present is that the Russian people are defending their native soil and that their leaders have called upon them to resist to the utmost.

Hitler is a monster of wickedness, insatiable in his lust for blood and plunder. Not content with having all Europe under his heel or else terrorized into various forms of abject submission, he must now carry his work of butchery and desolation among the vast multitudes of Russia and of Asia. The terrible military machine which Hitler's we and the rest of the civilized world so foolishly, so terrible supinely, so insensately allowed the Nazi gangsters to build up year by year from almost nothing; this machine cannot stand idle, lest it rust or fall to pieces. It must be in continual motion, grinding up human lives and trampling down the homes and the rights of hundreds of millions of men.

military machine.

Moreover, it must be fed not only with flesh but with oil. So now this bloodthirsty guttersnipe must launch his mechanized armies upon new fields of slaughter, pil- New oil lage and devastation. Poor as are the Russian peasants, fields workmen and soldiers, he must steal from them their daily bread. He must devour their harvests. He must rob them of the oil which drives their plows and thus produce a famine without example in human history.

needed.

And even the carnage and ruin which his victory, After should he gain it—though he's not gained it yet—will Russia, bring upon the Russian people, will itself be only a stepping stone to the attempt to plunge the four or five

China.

hundred millions who live in China and the 350,000,000 who live in India into that bottomless pit of human degradation over which the diabolic emblem of the swastika flaunts itself.

World menaced by Nazi It is not too much to say here this pleasant summer evening that the lives and happiness of a thousand million additional human beings are now menaced with brutal Nazi violence. That is enough to make us hold our breath.

But presently I shall show you something else that lies behind and something that touches very nearly the life of Britain and of the United States.

Nazism u orse than Communism. The Nazi regime is indistinguishable from the worst features of communism. It is devoid of all theme and principle except appetite and racial domination. It excels in all forms of human wickedness, in the efficiency of its cruelty and ferocious aggression. No one has been a more consistent opponent of communism than I have for the last twenty-five years. I will unsay no words that I've spoken about it. But all this fades away before the spectacle which is now unfolding.

Russians
visioned
guarding
their homes.

The past, with its crimes, its follies and its tragedies, flashes away. I see the Russian soldiers standing on the threshold of their native land, guarding the fields which their fathers have tilled from time immemorial. I see them guarding their homes, their mothers and wives praying—ah, yes, for there are times when all pray for

the safety of their loved ones—for the return of the breadwinners, of their champions, of their protectors.

I see the 10,000 villages of Russia, where the means of existence was wrung so hardly from the soil, but where there are still primordial human joys, where maidens laugh and children play. I see advancing upon all this, in hideous onslaught, the Nazi war machine, with its Horrors of clanking, heel-clicking, dandified Prussian officers, its the Nazz crafty expert agents, fresh from the cowing and tying down of a dozen countries. I see also the dull, drilled, docile, brutish masses of the Hun soldiery, plodding on like a swarm of crawling locusts. I see the German bombers and fighters in the sky, still smarting from many a British whipping, so delighted to find what they believe is an easier and a safer prey. And behind all this glare, behind all this storm, I see that small group of villainous men who planned, organized and launched this cataract of horrors upon mankind.

onslaught.

And then my mind goes back across the years to the days when the Russian armies were our Allies against the Russians in same deadly foe, when they fought with so much valor the earlier and constancy and helped to gain a victory, from all share in which, alas, they were, through no fault of ours, utterly cut off.

World War.

I have lived through all this and you will pardon me if I express my feelings and the stir of old memories. But now I have to declare the decision of His Majesty's Government, and I feel sure it is a decision in which the great Dominions will, in due course, concur. And that we must speak of now, at once, without a day's delay. I have to make the declaration, but can you doubt what our policy will be?

Brimin's single purpose.

We have but one aim and one single irrevocable purpose. We are resolved to destroy Hitler and every vestige of the Nazi regime. From this nothing will turn us. Nothing. We will never parley; we will never negotiate with Hitler or any of his gang. We shall fight him by land; we shall fight him by sea; we shall fight him in the air, until, with God's help we have rid the earth of his shadow and liberated its people from his yoke.

Any man or State that fights against Nazism will have our aid. Any man or State that marches with Hitler is our foe. This applies not only to organized States but to all representatives of that vile race of Quislings who make themselves the tools and agents of the Nazi regime against their fellow countrymen and against the lands of their births. These Quislings, like the Nazi leaders themselves, if not disposed of by their fellow-countrymen, which would save trouble, will be delivered by us on the morrow of victory to the justice of the Allied tribunals. That is our policy and that is our declaration.

All possible aid for Russia. It follows, therefore, that we shall give whatever help we can to Russia and to the Russian people. We shall appeal to all our friends and Allies in every part of the world to take the same course and pursue it as we shall, faithfully and steadfastly to the end. 4.D. 1941

We have offered to the Government of Soviet Russia any technical or economic assistance which is in our power and which is likely to be of service to them. We shall bomb Germany by day as well as by night in ever- Germany increasing measure, casting upon them month by month a heavier discharge of bombs and making the German people taste and gulp each month a sharper dose of the miseries they have showered upon mankind.

bombed day and night.

It is noteworthy that only yesterday the Royal Air Force, striking inland over France, cut down with very Exploits small loss to themselves twenty-eight of the I-Iun fight- of the ing machines in the air above the French soil they have Royal Air invaded, defiled, and profess to hold.

Force.

But this is only a beginning. From now henceforward the main expansion of our air force proceeds with gathering speed. In another six months the weight of the help we are receiving from the United States in war materials of all kinds, especially in heavy bombers, will begin to tell. This is no class war. It is a war in which the whole British Empire and Commonwealth of Nations is engaged without distinction of race, creed or party.

It is not for me to speak of the action of the United United States, but this I will say: If Hitler imagines that his States to attack on Soviet Russia will cause the slightest division continue of aims or slackening of effort in the great democracies, who are resolved upon his doom, he is woefully mistaken. On the contrary, we shall be fortified and encouraged in our efforts to rescue mankind from his

sending supplies. tyranny. We shall be strengthened and not weakened in our determination and in our resources.

This is no time to moralize upon the follies of countries and governments which have allowed themselves to be struck down one by one when by united action they could so easily have saved themselves and saved the world from this catastrophe.

But, when I spoke a few minutes ago of Hitler's bloodlust and the hateful appetites which have impelled or lured him on his Russian adventure, I said there was one deeper motive behind his outrage. He wishes to destroy the Russian power because he hopes that if he succeeds in this he will be able to bring back the main strength of his army and air force from the east and hurl it upon this island, which he knows he must conquer or suffer the penalty of his crimes.

Deeper motive behind invasion of Russia.

Hopes to accomplish objective before winter.

His invasion of Russia is no more than a prelude to an attempted invasion of the British Isles. He hopes, no doubt, that all this may be accomplished before the winter comes and that he can overwhelm Great Britain before the fleets and air power of the United States will intervene. He hopes that he may once again repeat upon a greater scale than ever before that process of destroying his enemies one by one, by which he has so long thrived and prospered, and that then the scene will be clear for the final act, without which all his conquests would be in vain, namely, the subjugation of the Western Hemisphere to his will and to his system.

The Russian danger is therefore our danger and the ger of the United States just as the cause of any Russian fighting for his hearth and home is the cause of free men and free peoples in every quarter of the globe.

Let us learn the lessons already taught by such cruel Lessons experience. Let us redouble our exertions and strike with aheady united strength while life and power remain.

taught.

June 26, 1941. Finland enters war on Nazi side. June 27. Hungary declares war on Russia. July 7. Upon agreement with Danish Minister to the United States, American naval and marine units occupy Iceland. July 13. Great Britain and Russia sign mutual aid pact. July 16. Germans claim capture of Smolensk. August 14. President Roosevelt and Prime Minister Churchill conclude hasis of common war and peace aims, known as the "Atlantic Charter." August 24. Churchill warns Japan "Atlantic that Britain will side with the United States in the event Charter" of war. September 6. Russians defend Leningrad against Nazi columns in furious battle. October 25. German troops capture Kharkov. November 17. President Roosevelt signs law repealing the Neutrality Act. December 6. Britain declares war on Finland, Hungary and Rumania. December 7. Japan attacks Pearl Harbor.]

concluded.

PEARL HARBOR

(A.D. 1941)

GILBERT CANT

APANESE treachery is nothing new. On February Japanese 8, 1904, Admiral Togo attacked the Russian Pacific treachery Fleet at Port Arthur without warning and crippled at Port three major units. In this way he laid the basis for the crushing defeat at Tsushima of the Baltic Fleet, comhined with the remnant of the force which he had "copenhagened" at Port Arthur. This naval history was well known to all American officers, and especially to those who had had the advantage of serving in Japan. One of the most studious of them, Captain William D. Puleston, wrote in the summer of 1941, "there will be no American Port Arthur." Captain Puleston was a better judge of history than of some of his superior officers.

Arthur.

There were nine American battleships based on Pearl American Harbor in late November and early December 1941. ships at There were also three aircraft carriers which had been Pearl integrated with the Pacific Fleet, and the necessary sup-Harbor. porting cruisers, destroyers, submarines and auxiliaries.

Copyright, 1943, by Gilbert Cant.

Carrier
task force
on mission
to Wake
Island.

On November 28 a carrier task force with the Enterprise as flagship left Pearl Harbor to deliver twelve Grumman fighter planes to Wake Island. This operation coincided with the receipt at Pearl Harbor of a warning from the Navy Department that negotiations with Japan were near a breakdown. As a result, Admiral Halsey was ordered to attack and destroy any non-American naval craft which his task force might encounter. In this respect, Admiral Kimmel, Commander-in-Chief of the Pacific Fleet, appears to have gone beyond the instructions he had received to provide for the security of the fleet. He had taken a similar extreme measure in regard to the security of its base, in ordering that any Japanese submarine which appeared within the prohibited defense areas off Pearl Harbor and other naval anchorages should be destroyed without question put.

No carrier at Pearl Harbor. Since the second carrier task force also was absent on a mission, there was not a single carrier in Pearl Harbor on the morning of December 7. There were, however, eight battleships, seven cruisers, twenty-eight destroyers and five submarines. The battleship Colorado was on the west coast of the United States. The Pennsylvania was in dry dock, and the seven remaining battleships were moored in a double line off Ford Island, in what is known as Battleship Row. Leaving nothing to chance, the Japanese actually sent one of their midget submarines into the sanctum sanctorum to make sure that the heavy American ships were in their assigned pews. There was

a net with which the entrance was supposed to be closed during the hours of darkness, but it had been designed for man-sized submarines. In any case, it was opened at 0458 (4:58 A.M.) to permit the passage of two American minesweepers and was not replaced. How the midget Net not subs, of 45 tons and with a range of only 200 miles, replaced. reached the waters off Oahu, has not been officially disclosed, but it seems most likely that they came from large, ocean-going submarines, at first designed to carry scaplanes, but with the hangars converted for the newer and more deadly brood.

Of the twenty-eight destroyers in the base, twenty-five were in the water, and all of these presumably had sonic The subdevices for the express purpose of detecting the approach marines of submarines. But nobody expected to find Japanese were not submarines dodging under the sterns of American battleships in Pearl Harbor, and as a matter of fact nobody did for several hours to come.

detected.

The Navy and the Army each had one more chance to learn that an attack was imminent. A suspicious object was sighted off Pearl Harbor at 0630 by the U.S.S. Antares, a target repair ship. This object was attacked, Submarine as Kimmel had directed, by a Navy patrol plane coop- sighted by erating with the destroyer Ward. The destroyer had time to fire one shell at the submarine, which had had the gall to surface, but not enough time to identify it positively before it dived. The destroyer commander's position was far from enviable. The rule that any submarine

the Antares

approaching the base must identify itself, on pain of attack, was clear. But in the uncertain light, there was no assurance that this was not an American submarine which might be having difficulty with its elevator planes. Despite the uneasy fear that he might be killing three score or more of his own comrades, the destroyer commander obeyed his orders and dropped depth charges. He saw enough wreckage to convince him that the sub was destroyed. The depth charges were dropped between o633 and o645. Within that period the patrol plane loosed a single bomb.

Depth charges dropped.

The Ward's commander reported his action to base, and was told to verify. After some consideration he repeated his report to the watch officer at the base, at 0712. The chief of staff was notified, but no alert warnings were issued. A possible explanation may be found in the attitude of the officer to whom the patrol plane pilot reported his action: "Keep quiet: most likely it's one of our own subs." The Navy's record of efficiency in guarding its main base is not sustained by this incident. The sinking of any non-American submarine was virtually an act of war. The presence of such craft should have been the clearest warning of imminent danger. A gun was fired, a bomb was dropped, depth charges were exploded, men were killed, and yet no alarm was sounded to bring the fleet to action stations.

No alarm sounded.

If there had been better cooperation between the Army and the Navy, the Ward's encounter might have been

properly assessed. The responsibility for operating the Army warning system to detect warships and aircraft at a dis-responsible tance from the coasts rested with the Army. The vigilance exercised naturally stood in direct ratio to the expectation of attack. In this connection it is best to quote from the Roberts Report:

for warning

On November 27, 1941, there was sufficient partially trained personnel available to operate the aircraft warning system throughout twenty-four hours of the day. . . . An arc of nearly 360 degrees around Oahu could have been covered. Admiral Kimmel, on and prior to December 7, 1941, assumed Navv that the aircraft warning system was being fully operated by made no the Army, but made no inquiry . . . as to what the fact was inquiry, with respect to its operation.

Actually the aircraft warning system was being operated from 0400 to 0700, the hours around dawn during which a surprise attack was most to be feared. The War Department states:

Joseph L. Lockard, then a private, was the operator in charge of the detector unit. . . . At approximately 7:02 A.M. [0702] a signal was detected on his instruments which, in the opinion planes of Lockard, signified a large number of airplanes in flight detected. approximately 132 miles distant. . . . Lockard promptly contacted the duty officer of the information center and furnished him with complete particulars of the readings.

The Roberts Report supplies the additional point that the unidentified planes were on a bearing slightly east of north of Oahu, and goes on to say that Lockard:

. . . reported this fact at 7:20 A.M. [0720] to a lieutenant of the Army who was at the central information center, having been detailed there to familiarize himself with the operation of the system. This inexperienced lieutenant, having information that certain United States planes might be in the vicinity at the time, assumed that the planes in question were friendly planes, and took no action with respect to them. The recording of the observation made indicated that these airplanes were tracked toward the island and then lost.

Planes
assumed
to be
friendly.

Japanese planes approached Oahu. The Japanese planes which were the subject of this report were heading directly for the northeastern part of Oahu. Others approached their targets from a more westerly direction, the Japanese evidently having split their task group into two forces to reduce the likelihood of detection, and to minimize their losses in case one portion should be intercepted. What vessels they used is not yet known with certainty, but the available data point accusingly at the three carriers *Hiryu*, *Soryu* and *Koryu*. Probably they carried an increased complement of fifty planes each, of which 25 per cent would not be expected to return from the first attack for refueling and rearming.

Fırst objective. The naval air station at Kaneohe Bay was the first objective. The commandant, Captain H. M. Martin, was at breakfast. Hearing aircraft of which he had had no advance notification, he looked out and saw three flights of three planes each making a right turn into the bay. His instantaneous official reaction, the result of careful training and strict discipline, was anger at the prohibited

right turn. His fifteen-year-old son, David, drew attention to the Rising Sun insignia. It was 0748. The Japanese planes skimmed over the water, no more than fifty feet high, toward the anchored American seaplanes. Crews which were being ferried out to service the seaplanes were the first victims of hostilities in the Pacific. Heavy Their small boats were raked with machine gun fire as casualties. the Japanese aircraft, now winning the designation "enemy," swept on over the seaplanes. Casualties were heavy among both men and planes. The latter were riddled by incendiary bullets and their gasoline tanks caught fire. The enemy kept on over the ramp on which some seaplanes had been drawn out of the water. These were wrecked. Then the hangar was set afire. As the Japanese turned to execute a figure 8, they were brought under fire—by a single Lewis machine gun on a portable mount which an ordnance man had snatched from the armory and set up atop a large garbage can.

The enemy planes, apparently all fighters, departed Enemy unscathed. Twenty minutes later there appeared nine planes fighters and nine bombers. The latter dropped two bombs each. According to an unofficial investigator, the squadron which had shattered Kaneohe flew on toward the Marine Corps' air base at Ewa. The pattern at Ewa was the same as at Kaneohe. The only opposition came from free machine guns on improvised mounts in exposed positions, and casualties were far heavier among the defenders than among the attackers.

unharmed.

Perfect cnemy technique. But Kaneohe and Ewa were minor objectives compared with the Army's big fighter plane base at Wheeler Field, its heavy bomber base at Hickam Field, and the Navy's field for wheeled planes on Ford Island, in Pearl Harbor. The enemy's technique was perfectly uniform and uniformly perfect. First the fighters strafed the exposed American fighters, pinning them to the ground, helpless. Then the bombers came to complete the destruction, under an umbrella of fighters which had an incidental offensive value in strafing.

Air attack helieved impossible.

Sabotage feared.

The first phases of these coordinated and simultaneous attacks took less time to execute than they take to describe. The enemy's task was made infinitely easier by the fact that both Army and Navy authorities in Hawaii had dismissed a surprise air raid on the Territory as impossible, but had been greatly disturbed by fears of sabotage. There were in the islands 157,000 persons of Japanese origin, of whom almost one-fourth were aliens. It was known that there was a potential fifth column among them; how large was not known. However, the authorities overestimated the danger of sabotage at our military installations, and ordered aircraft to be drawn up in lines in the open on the fields, where they could be guarded most efficiently by sentries whose beats and arcs of fire would overlap. This precaution, desirable against sabotage, was fatal when the "impossible" surprise air attack developed. Great numbers of planes were parked wing-tip to wing-tip in neat rows clear of the trees or other natural cover. The Japanese fliers could have asked for nothing more.

The Army's fighter planes at Wheeler were Curtiss P-40s (Tomahawks if they were models A or B, Kittyhawks if they were models C or D). Sixty-six of these were destroyed. Others, at this and other fields, were Fighter temporarily disabled or were unable to take off because planes at the runways were blocked by wrecks or pocked with homb craters.

Wheeler disableil.

For cold-blooded efficiency, the attack on Hickam was the most remarkable. Scarcely a bomb or a bullet was wasted. A sheet metal worker who was rushed first to Efficient Wheeler and then to Hickam has described both. Of the attack on former, where the six large buildings included four Hickam hangars, he writes: "It was dreadful. Half of it was a mass of smoking embers. Four hangars were gone. Fully forty planes were destroyed, never having left the ground. The rows of tents next the hangars had been machine gunned until they looked like sieves." But he found Hickam "heartrending—worse by far than Wheeler. The barracks were destroyed. The only building left almost untouched was the hospital."

Field.

The Navy's field and hangars on Ford Island were given the same treatment as the Army installations. Four squadrons of Catalina flying boats (Consolidated PBYs) were smashed and burned. The Ford Island hangars were bombed and strafed; anything which appeared on the runways was strafed. If it had not been for the day's

Bad weather prevented additional casualtie.

delay caused by the bad weather, all the aircraft from Admiral Halsey's task force would have been targets at Ford Island. As it was, only the eighteen units of Scouting Squadron 6, flying ahead of the task force from the *Enterprise* to Ford Island, became involved in the attack on Pearl Harbor, and as attackers, not as targets. They had been flown off from the carrier at 0700 when 210 miles southwest of Barbers Point and arrived over Oahu at the height of the action. Four were shot down, but not without taking their toll of the enemy. Of those which landed on Ford Island when their gasoline and ammunition were expended, thirteen were serviceable to fly later in the day.

These eighteen planes of VS6 are included in the total of 202 naval aircraft available at Oahu that day. Of these, 150 were disabled in the first few minutes, including eighty which were totally destroyed. Of the fifty-two naval planes not disabled, few were of types suitable for repelling aerial attack. The Army had 273 aircraft on the island; ninety-seven were destroyed at Hickam and Wheeler fields alone before they could leave the ground. How many more were lost in combat and at subsidiary fields is not known, but with the ratio of naval plane losses as a guide, a hundred more must have been permanently or temporarily disabled.

Many planes disalled.

The first warning of the imminent attack on Pearl Harbor itself was given by lookouts atop the Navy Yard signal tower at 0755. No word of the hostilities which

began seven minutes earlier at Kaneohe Bay had been communicated to them, possibly because of severed telephone lines at the outlying station. Ironically enough, the Japanese had to expend their first ammunition against a civilian flivver plane which a Honolulu lawyer named Civilian Roy Vitousek was flying, just for fun, but which hap-plane pened to be in the way as fifteen Zero fighters came in fired at. to strafe Ford Island and Hickam. The lookouts heard the machine-gun fire and saw the Japanese insignia, and hoisted visual alarm signals. The response was instantaneous. It must be borne in mind that no advance warning had been received, so no condition of alert was in effect aboard the eighty-six naval vessels of all types then in Pearl Harbor. Only the ready machine guns aboard Machine the larger craft were manned. But—contrary to reports guns that the bulk of the men were absent on overnight liberty manned. or were recovering from hangovers—the Roberts Report states that 60 per cent of all officers were aboard their ships, with 97 per cent of the enlisted men, when the attack began, and this constituted adequate complements of men fit for duty.

The Japanese pilots had exact instructions not only Japanese as to the vessels they were to attack and where they were had exact located—for example, the West Virginia was moored information. alongside the Tennessee, with the latter inshore—but also as to the portions of the ships which were most vital and most vulnerable. Within a minute or so after the fighters and bombers had begun their assault on the air-

Torpedo
planes
and divebombers
were major
threats.

fields, other squadrons swooped on the battleships. Twenty-one torpedo planes were employed in four groups. The Navy says they were "assisted effectively" by dive-bombers, thirty of which appeared in eight waves during this phase of the operation. These two types of planes, expertly teamed, constituted the major threat. At the same time, they were the most vulnerable to a concentrated fire from machine guns and antiaircraft artillery. The Japanese pilots showed great determination in pressing home their attacks, but there is nothing to suggest that the enemy was using suicide squadrons so early in the war.

Americans amazed at Japanese persistence.

American naval men, who certainly are not lacking in courage, were amazed by the persistence with which the Jap fliers completed their runs in the face of machine-gun fire which broke out immediately from the battleships, and of artillery which was brought into play within four to five minutes. A senior officer of the Nevada, who was aboard the hospital ship Solace waiting for mass to begin, "saw a flight of torpedo planes flying toward Battleship Row, dropping torpedoes. I even saw one headed for my ship, but it burst into flame and a loud cheer went up." This may have been a defective torpedo, but more likely an alert gunner aboard the Nevada had trained a machine gun upon it and perforated the warhead casing. The officer "couldn't understand why many more of the raiders didn't come down in that blaze of fire from our ships, but they stayed right

on their course." He underwent a strafing attack on his way to the Nevada, and almost as soon as he stepped aboard, he saw a torpedo hit the Arizona. "It was a dead The sound, like a big swish of wind going through foliage." Arizona The Arizona was under simultaneous dive-bombing attack. Japanese pilots up to this moment had been derided as ill-trained, myopic and lacking in a sense of balance, but one of them maneuvered his craft into position for a perfect bullseye, the hit of which every aviator dreams but rarely achieves—directly upon the smokestack. The twenty-six-year-old battleship's funnel lacked the elaborate precautions built into later vessels to minimize damage from such a hit, and the heavy bomb penetrated the fire rooms. The boilers blew up first. Then the for- Boilers ward magazine, containing 14-inch shells and cordite blew up. charges in silk bags, went up. The effects can better be imagined than described.

tor pedo.

The officer who had just returned to the Nevada believed that the flames would reach the bow of his ship, since she was anchored on the Arizona's quarter, and suggested that they get under way. "The engine-room said it would take a half hour, but I said we had better get under way right now. We cast off the lines, backed the engines, and the bow started moving out. We cleared the Arizona and a repair ship [the Vestal] which was Ammualso alongside about forty feet away. Our gun crew shielded by shielded the ammunition with their own bodies as we gun crew.

moved past the blazing Arizona. As we squared off down the channel the Japs began dive-bombing."

Presumably this officer was Lieutenant Commander Francis J. Thomas. For Thomas, although a reservist, was senior surviving officer aboard the *Nevada*. He took command, and the Navy says he handled his ship "in an outstanding manner." His Navy Cross citation reads: "Although the *Nevada* had been torpedoed and bombed, he displayed excellent judgment in promptly getting her under way and moving her from the proximity of another ship which was surrounded by burning oil and afire from stem to stern."

Excellent judgment.

The Nevada
struck by
divebomber.

The old *Nevada* was hit by a dive bomber almost as soon as she started down the narrow, winding channel for the safety that was believed to lie in the open sea, where she would have greater maneuverability. Before first-aid squads could clear the wounded from her decks, more Japanese planes saw what seemed to be a golden opportunity—to sink her in the channel and thus bottle up the entire battle fleet for untold weeks to come.

The first bomb had struck the *Nevada's* deck close to a 5-inch antiaircraft battery. Only one gun stopped firing. Every other piece of artillery aboard which could be elevated to a high angle was in action, along with machine guns. Lieutenant Clarence E. Dickinson of the *Enterprise*, who must be regarded as an expert witness since he had been trained in dive-bombing, estimates that eighteen to twenty Japanese planes took turns in trying

Expert witness.

to sink the Nevada. His judgment of their performance is that they were "so eager that bombs fell first on one Aim not side of the old battle-wagon, and then on the other." accurate. Nevertheless, the Nevada was hit several times and as she neared the end of the narrow channel alongside Ford Idand she received orders not to leave the harbor. Her engines were reversed and she was run gently aground opposite the hospital. Presumably the decision to keep her inside the harbor was based not only on the danger of her being sunk where she might block the exit, but also on the hazard presented by submarines lying outside.

The Oklahoma, sister ship of the Nevada, was hit by one or more "tin fish" dropped by the first flight of torpedo bombers. She at once developed a heavy list. The first torpedo struck a few seconds after the quartermaster had announced over the public address system: "All hands to general quarters! This is no ---. The Japs are attacking!" Most of the men whose assigned posi- Hundreds tions were above decks reached their battle stations and trapped manned the guns as the Oklahoma began to heel over. Many kept on firing until they were literally washed from their positions by the rush of water over the decks of the capsizing battleship, and cheered the more fortunate Nevada as she passed them. Hundreds were trapped below. Even before the smoke of battle cleared, civilian workers were notified that boat crews passing the overturned hull had heard tappings. They swarmed over the

in capsizing Oklahoma.

slimy, exposed bottom of the ship, cut holes in its steel plates, and rescued thirty-two.

The California and West Virginia also were heavily hit. The former was berthed alone and exposed, south west of other ships in "The Row;" the latter was in the outer line with the Oklahoma. The Nevada, although exposed at the end of the Row, had room to maneuver while the Tennessee and Maryland were sheltered be tween the outer line and the island. The three last-named thus escaped torpedoing. The Nevada, as already noted was hit by bombs and somewhat severely damaged; the Tennessee and Maryland also were struck, but the bombs either were lighter or were poorly aimed, for they did no structural or other military damage such as would incapacitate the vessels. The Pennsylvania, in drydock, was hit more than once, but at least one of the bombs was a dud, and did only physical—as distinct from explosive—damage to the 14-inch forward turret which it struck. Examination of this missile disclosed that it was not a true bomb, but a 15-inch armor-piercing shell which had been modified by the attachment of wooden fins, The explosive charge was found to be forty years old.

Little
damage to
the Tennessee and
Maryland.

Torpedoes proved deadly.

The torpedoes also may have been old, but they proved deadly enough. One struck the *California* directly below the foremast and opened an oil bunker. The fuel spurted upwards and over the decks, and caught fire. Eyewitnesses say the battleship looked like a tanker which had been hit. A sailor, roasting and suffocating even in the

crow's nest, leaped almost a hundred feet into the water, covered as it was with blazing oil. He was forced to Fires swim under water for the greater part of the distance to Ford Island. When he crawled ashore, all the hair had heen burned from his head. But he was more fortunate than many of his shipmates. They were among the hundreds who were fatally or seriously wounded by burns during this morning of literally blazing action. Efforts to control the fires aboard the California required the flooding of many compartments which so decreased the ship's buoyancy that she settled slowly in the mud, with a pronounced list.

aboard the California.

The West Virginia was the only one of our 16-inch The West gun "Treaty" battleships to suffer heavily from the Japa- Virginia nese attack. There was no doubt about the Japanese determination to destroy her. She was the target of especially concentrated assaults and was struck by four torpedoes and two heavy bombs. At least one of the torpedoes struck her aft, so that she began to settle by the stern. The damage control officer, realizing that the danger of serious damage on the inshore side of the ship was negligible, ordered the ballast tanks on this side flooded, Bullast tanks to counterbalance the increased weight given to the ex-flooded. posed side by water rushing in through the four torpedo holes. In this way the West Virginia was kept on an even keel, whereas she might well have capsized, after the manner of the Oklahoma.

suffered heavily.

The commanding officer of the West Virginia Was Captain Mervyn S. Bennion, who went to his station in the conning tower at the first alarm, but moved to the signal bridge, to have a less obstructed view in directing his ship, as soon as he realized that the fleet was under aerial attack. At the moment he stepped on to the ex. posed bridge the captain was struck by a fragment of the bomb which had ricocheted off the Tennessee, and the upper part of his abdomen was laid open. Despite the severity of his wounds, he retained consciousness and he refused to allow himself to be carried from the bridge for greater protection.

Commanding officer struck by homb fragment.

Young an outstanding hero.

Blown overboard.

One of the outstanding heroes of the entire action was Commander Commander (later Captain) Cassin Young, of the repair ship Vestal, which was moored alongside the Arizona and near the Nevada. Captain Young was to be killed in action eleven months later as commanding officer of the San Francisco. The citation accompanying the award of the Congressional Medal of Honor for valor as captain of the Vestal at Pearl Harbor reads: "He proceeded to the bridge and later took personal command of the antiaircraft gun. When blown overboard by the blast of the forward magazine explosion of the Arizona, to which the Vestal was moored, he swam back to his own ship. The entire forward part of the Arizona was a blazing inferno with oil aftire between the two ships. Despite severe enemy bombing and strafing at the time and his shocking experience of having been blown overboard, Commander Young with extreme coolness and calmness moved his ship to an anchorage distant from the Arizona."

So much for Battleship Row. The Japanese had set out to break the backbone of American naval power in the Pacific. Of the nine battleships then in that ocean, eight had been at Pearl Harbor; one was damaged in drydock, one was destroyed, one was capsized, one was "sunk at one end," one was "sunk at one side," one was heached; only two were relatively unscathed. With the absent Colorado, they made a total of three capital ships Three ships capable of taking the seas within a day or two, but they fit for duty. were outnumbered four to one by the enemy's battle line. To that extent, the Japanese attack was, as the Navy officially concedes, "very successful." The fact that our aircraft carriers escaped was, as already mentioned, largely fortuitous. With the carriers, and on sundry other assignments away from the fleet's main base, were the bulk of our cruisers and destroyers. But there were other tempting targets which the enemy did not overlook.

Militarily the least important of these was the gunnery training ship Utah, still bearing her old battleship name training ship although long since demilitarized. Because she was lying at a carrier berth, the Japanese swooped in and fired torpedoes at her without taking time to check their identification, and after she capsized there was no way for

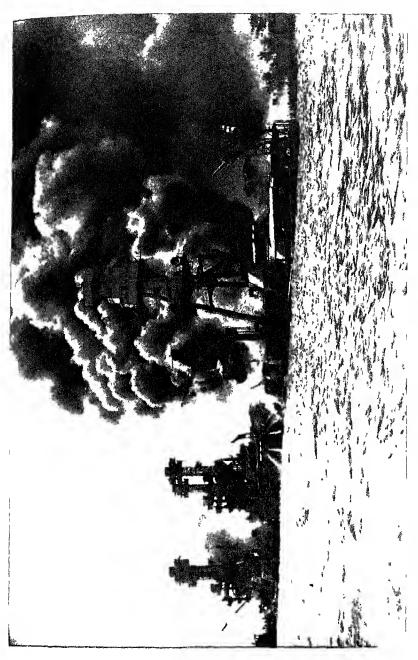
Gunnery mistaken for carrier. them to obtain confirmation. So Tokyo long nursed the illusion that a carrier had been sunk.

Light cruiser Helena damaged. The new light cruiser *Helena* was damaged by a torpedo, and the *Honolulu*, similar but slightly less modern, suffered a severe bomb hit. A third light cruiser, the 18-year-old *Raleigh*, of only 7,050 tons, absorbed a torpedo.

In drydock with the *Pennsylvania* were the destroyers *Cassin, Shaw* and *Downes*. The first and last were struck by bombs which detonated their magazines, fired their oil and rendered the vessels valueless except for scrap. The *Shaw* was hit in the bow and set afire. The flames could not be controlled with the limited water available, and gradually they crept toward the forward magazines. The explosion which resulted when the fire reached the stored ammunition was only less spectacular than that aboard the *Arizona*. An immense ball of fire ringed by heavy black smoke rose hundreds of feet into the air and then burst with a secondary explosion which knocked down scores of people within a radius of two or three hundred yards.

Japanese admit loss of submarines. The Japanese have admitted the loss of the entire force of "special submarines," and have variously described it as numbering five, seven and nine craft. They also conceded the loss of two standard submarines off Pearl Harbor; one of these evidently was the Ward's victim.

By far the greater part of the action described took place between 0755 and 0825. There was then a fifteen-



PEARL HARBOR, DECEMBER 7, 1941. U.S. BATTLESHIPS WEST ITRGINIA, TENNESSEE AND ARIZONA LIE STRICKEN AFTER THE JAPANESE ATTACK. THE ARIZONA, WHICH EXPLODED AND SANK, WAS A TOTAL LOSS (Puge 104) FROM AN OFFICIAL U.S. NAVY PHOTOGRAPH

minute lull, disturbed only by isolated aerial combats between the few defending American planes and stragglers among the Japanese fighters and dive bombers. This relative calm was ended by the appearance of hori- Horizon, a zontal bombers, which the Navy says "crossed and re- bombers, crossed their targets from various directions and caused serious damage." Dive bombers also reappeared within a short time, but dropped few bombs and devoted themselves largely to strafing. The main combat squadrons tetired at 0945. Reconnaissance planes and nuisance raiders appeared three times around noon and once in the evening, but there was little more they could accomish against a base which was now on the alert.

The American fleet had been "copenhagened," or, to American take the more modern and precise analogy, "port- fleet arthured." The only immediate, material cost to the "copennalapanese was an undetermined number of aircraft, up to about sixty, and less than a dozen submarines, most of which were little better than expensive toys. But the enemy paid an incalculable price in psychological weapons. Until "this date which will live in infamy," the colossus of the Western Hemisphere had slumbered as long and almost as soundly as Rip Van Winkle. The fury which was aroused in the American people by this Fury of the treacherous assault was worth more than any battleships. American The loss of such antiques as the Arizona and Oklahoma people. meant far less than the loss of trained personnel, and on

ready agreement with the warm emotional reaction of the public. No less than 2,117 officers and men of the Navy and Marine Corps were killed, while 960 listed as missing must be given up for lost, shattered beyond recognition by bombs or torpedoes or entombed in the bowels of their ships.

No need for propaganda. In the Navy, there was no need for a propaganda campaign to "Remember Pearl Harbor." It was impossible for the men of the fleet to put it out of their minds until they had avenged it, for it was by far the greatest disaster in American naval history.

CONGRESS DECLARES A STATE OF WAR WITH JAPAN

(A.D. 1941)

TOINT RESOLUTION: Declaring that a state of war exists between the Imperial Government of Japan and the Government and the people of the United States and making provisions to prosecute the same.

Whereas the Imperial Government of Japan has com- Japan's mitted unprovoked acts of war against the Government and the people of the United States of America: Therefore be it

unprovoked acts of war.

Resolved by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled. That the state of war between the United States and the Imperial Government of Japan which has thus been thrust upon the United States is hereby formally declared; and the President is hereby authorized and directed to employ the entire naval and military forces of the United States and the resources of the Government to carry on war against the Imperial Government of Japan; and, to bring the conflict to a successful termi- Pledge for nation, all of the resources of the country are hereby success. pledged by the Congress of the United States.

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS A.D. 1941-1942

[December 8, 1941. President Roosevelt in an address before a joint session of Congress rehearses the facts of Japanese aggression against Hawaii, Guam, the Philippines, Wake Island, Midway Island, Hong Kong and Malaya, December 7 and 8, and asks that Congress recognize that a state of war exists between the United States and the Japanese Empire. On the same day, Congress declares war on Japan, unanimously except for one dissenting vote in the House.

War comes to the Pacific.

Wake
Island
occupied by
Japanese
forces.

Japanese take Bataan.

December 8, also, England declares war on Japan. China declares war against Germany, Italy, and Japan. Free French Forces announce war with Japan. December 11. Germany and Italy declare war on the United States. December 17. American army, navy, and air force commanders in Hawaii are ousted. December 22. Wake Island is occupied by the Japanese. December 25. Hong Kong surrenders to Japan. December 27. Nippon planes bomb "open city" of Manila. January 1, 1942. Representatives of 26 countries at war with the Axis sign United Nations Declaration pledging no separate peace. January 2. Manila and Cavite naval base fall to Nipponese. February 1. Germany proclaims Vidkun Quisling Premier of Norway. February 15. Singapore surrenders unconditionally to Japanese forces. March 8. Rangoon falls to Nippon troops. April 9. Bataan falls to Japanese. April 18. Japanese mainland is bombed for first time by United States bombers under leadership of Major James H. Doolittle. May 6. Garrison at Corregidor yields to

A STATE OF WAR WITH JAPAN 3.D. 1942

Japanese. May 7-8. United States Navy defeats Japanese warships in Battle of the Coral Sea. May 16. Mrs. Oveta Culp Hobby is made director of the Women's Army United Auxiliary Corps, first women's army group ever organized in the United States. June 1. Mexico declares war Battle of the on Germany, Italy, and Japan. June 3-6. United States Coral Sea. warships and planes win victory over Japanese naval units in Battle of Midway.]

States victory in

THE KNOCKOUT AT MIDWAY

(A.D. 1942)

FLETCHER PRATT

of June 4th the crisis of the Battle of Midway had been passed, though no one in the American forces knew it at the time. The Japanese had struck hard with their sea-borne air forces at our island base and had damaged it; still more had they damaged the aerial resources of the defense. But our land-based aviators had also struck at them; they had lost at least one of their transports, one carrier at least was in very bad shape, a second damaged, there were bombs in other vessels all through the fleet; and their aerial losses were such that only victory could pay for them. They had not won this victory. They were accepting a drawn battle, turning round to come back later for another try—perhaps no later than the next day—when a force of which they were completely ignorant came rushing into action.

Crisis passed.

Unexpected American attack.

It was the American carrier striking force of Admiral attack. Spruance.

Reprinted from *The Navy's War*, by Fletcher Pratt, published by Harper and Bros.

Three carriers.

hurrying toward Midway that eventful morning, had three carriers—Yorktown, Hornet, and Enterprise. The carriers were hull-down from one another, now somewhat northeast of Midway, still running fast toward the scene of action. In all the ships, pilots had been called from their bunks at three o'clock; by four they were in the ready-rooms, talking excitedly as weather information and the course and speed of the enemy were posted on the blackboards. On some vessels loudspeakers were tuned in on the battle frequency; everyone aboard could hear the shouts of Henderson's men as they went into their desperate adventure, the voice of a young B-17 pilot, breaking with emotion on the high note, the clear, rapid words of Colonel Sweeney making his assignments. A flash from the high command said the Japs were at

This striking force, which you will recall had been

Flash from high command.

rapid words of Colonel Sweeney making his assignments. A flash from the high command said the Japs were attacking Midway. The Jap bombers making that attack must have been almost in sight of our ships behind the thin, chill haze that covered the morning where they were, and still the ships were pushing west at such speed that the destroyers were taking it green over their bows. At 7:30 the pilots manned planes and were summoned from them again, stamping the deck and apostrophizing the bridge—"Wouldn't you think at a time like this they'd get things straight up there?"

Just before nine Spruance got straight the two matters that had to be straight before he could release his thunderbolt. First, the enemy carriers had been found. Sec-

and, his own carriers had moved into position where tighters could give the attacking planes cover all the way In. The American fleet had now run through its haze area into clear bright weather. "Pilots, man your planes!" "Man your

From Lieutenant Dickinson's unidentified carrier planes!" there were 14 torpedo planes, 36 dive bombers and fighter escort; from each of the other carriers about the same, to make up the greatest concentration of sea-air strength set seen in war. The Hornet's Torpedo Squadron 8 was under Lieutenant Commander John C. Waldron; among the flying clouds of the weather front near the target he lost contact with the rest of our planes and could not find the enemy. Convinced that the course he had flown should have brought him to intercept the Japs near Japs turn where they were last reported and that the clouds would back. not hide so great a concentration of ships, he reasoned that there was only one explanation for missing themthe Japs must have turned back whence they had come. He turned northwest therefore, and a little after II o'clock found them, four carriers sliding along in a close group, with all the retinue of other ships around.

The long run had taken nearly all his gas, he had lost the fighters that were to cover him, and the Japs were now located. "Request permission to withdraw from action to refuel," he radioed. But the enemy had slipped observation once; they might do it again and return with "Attack their superior force. "Attack at once" radioed back the at once."

"Human Machine," though the men in those planes were his friends.

Jap fleet bunched around carriers. Ensign George Gay was one of that squadron. He has described how they found the Jap fleet closely bunched round their carriers, a line less than ten miles long from end to end, to get the maximum effect from their AA fire, and how Zeros swarmed round the American planes as they went in, taking every advantage of the fact that a torpedo plane has to make a long level run before launching.

"I'm hit," said Gay's machine-gunner over the interphone, but the plane still worked; Gay drove in toward the bows of an onrushing carrier, dropped his missile. swung up and along her side toward the stern. A Jan shell went off right in the middle of the rudder controls, burning his leg, and at almost the same moment a bullet hit his left arm. The plane stalled and struck the water, already several miles astern of the carrier. As Gay came up, the tail of the machine stuck out of the water, but of his gunner and radioman there was no sign; they were gone with every other man of Torpedo 8. Gay was the only survivor. A bag floated free from the wreck with a rubber raft in it, and a small black bombardier's cushion. He grabbed the cushion, bandaged his wounds under water, and looked up in time to catch the most spectacular sight of the war.

Only survivor.

> Lieutenant Commander Clarence McCluskey with Bombing 6 and Scouting 6 (all carrying bombs this day)

10 1942

had found the Japs and was attacking-this time with fighter cover. The undamaged carrier Kaga was making her full 30 knots into the wind, trying to shoot off her refueled fighters; for the attack had come as a dreadful Surprise surprise to the Japs, who thought they were done with attack. Midway. The first three bombs missed, and back on our carriers the radios picked up McCluskey's fervent swearing. But of the next three, one landed among the airplanes on the Kaga's afterdeck, lighting a fire that burned with electric brilliance even in the candid davlight; one went through into the hangar deck to toss a column of debris aloft; and one set light to the planes forward, ready to fly. Then there were hits and hits till the Kaga blazed from stem to stern and the last man The Kaga in the formation gave his load of bombs to a destroyer, which stopped with smoke and steam gushing from the engine room. Gay saw a prodigious column of flame shoot up from the Kaga and even at his distance felt a shock through the water. Her magazines had gone.

ablaze.

When he looked at the other carriers he could see the Akagi burning fiercely, fired by Lieutenant Best's Bombing 6, with nobody knows how many hits as she sought in vain to maneuver with that torpedo hole in her side. The Soryu too was alight; she had been hit by Bombing 3 (normally the Saratoga's squadron, but the Navy has not said what ship they flew from June 4th). And two Two of the battleships were burning. All across the horizon a long line of warships were rocking and blazing on the

battleships burning.

Torpedo planes lost. slow Pacific swell. Down near the water our torpedo planes from our other carriers were coming in, much harried by Zeros, which seemed to have taken them as their especial targets and let the ships care for themselves against the bombers—one reason why it was bomber's field day while the torpedo men suffered. Out of 41 American torpedo planes that left the carriers that morning only 6 got home, and nobody knows whether they accomplished much or little. No one has much detail of any kind on this last stage of the attack. Gay saw only that line of burning giants with destroyers hurrying round to pump and salvage. Dickinson, from his more comprehensive point of view aloft, saw the undamaged *Hiryu* hurrying away into the mists. The second phase of the battle was over and the Japanese were a beaten fleet.

Japanese beaten.

It must have been about this time that the radios carried the message reported by Correspondent Casey—the gasp of a Japanese scout as he came through a cloud: "My God, the whole United States fleet is out here!"

The Hiryu still intact. But there was life in those Japanese yet; there was one punch left in the *Hiryu*. Our carriers had turned and were steaming southwestward, keeping their distance from those fast Japanese battleships, since they had nothing stronger than fighters left aboard and nothing better than cruisers to cover them. (The *Scharnhorst* had sunk the *Glorious* in a few minutes off Norway under such conditions.) The three carrier groups were spread very wide, hull down from one another, which kept the Japs

from hitting all of them at once as theirs had been hit. but also increased the enemy's chances of finding and hitting at least one—a variation in method that will doubtless long exercise tacticians. Put it that this was a special case; there was no longer any chance of concealment in that clear, still day with our planes battering the Japanese ships, and Spruance's spread formation allowed the fighter planes from all to go to the aid of the first carrier attacked.

It was the Yorktown, the northernmost ship, that was The struck just after I o'clock by 36 dive bombers from the Yorktown Hiryu, which may have followed some of our planes is struck by home from their foray. "Stand by to repel air attack," Hiryu said her loudspeakers, and the fighter patrols of the other carriers joined the Yorktown's. "It was damned spectacular," said an officer of one carrier. "On the horizon there would be a flash of flame and a mass of thick black smoke plunging downward to the sea. There would be another flash and another downward pencil; finally it looked like the sky over there was covered by a curtain of smoke streamers."

Only seven Jap planes came through that hornet's nest of American fighters, but they came in a mood of Oriental desperation, and despite losing three more at Oriental the ship, they planted bombs. One hit the Yorktown desperation. just abaft the island, smashed up the guns there, and started a fire; another hit in the forward elevator well and started more fire from the tanks of the planes on

bombers.

the hangar deck; and still another bomb went through the side of the funnel, blowing out the fires in the ship's engine room. The Yorktown stopped; watching her from the Hornet's deck they could see a tall column of smoke shoot straight up. But on the damaged carrier the fires were got in hand and Engineer Officer John F. Delaney said he could work her up to fifteen knots after repairs.

American jubilation. Among our other ships the mood had become a kind of restrained jubilation. They had heard the words and broken exclamations on battle frequency—"Take the one on the right, Joe." "Boy, look at that bastard burn." "Zero on your tail, Zero on your tail"—and a few fliers' reports were on hand. Everyone was saying our big attack on the Japanese fleet had been a success, though how much of a success would be uncertain till the planes came trailing in just before and during the attack on the Yorktown.

Torpedo 8 all down. But the *Hornet's* planes did not come home at all; Torpedo 8 was all down, as we have seen, and the ship's scout-bombing groups had traveled just enough farther than the rest to leave them short of juice to get home. A few crash-landed at sea; the rest made Midway with the last drops in their tanks, two falling short of the runway by exactly the 300 feet which brought them down in the lagoon, whence their pilots waded ashore. The Yorktown's planes came back in twos and threes, many of them hurt, but Bombing 3 had suffered little, and Bombine 3 had suffered little 4 had suffered 1 had suffered little 4 h

12, 1942

ing 6 was there, all in formation as though returning from a training flight.

They and all the other planes in the fleet still fit for Planes work were refueled and remunitioned, while the pilots refueled. grabbed sandwiches and coffee, and then took off again to get that last Jap carrier, the Hiryu, and break up her flight deck. She and her escort, which now seems to have included most of the support force (since it had two hattleships and a heavy cruiser besides destroyers), had steamed right away from the rest of the dolorous Japanese armada, northeastward. A good trick if it worked, but we had practical command of the air now, and our smuts found her. Whoever it was that first saw her, a Yorktown man, Lieutenant Sam Adams, scuttling along the edge of the clouds with his radio key open, described the course, speed, and composition of the Hiryu and her escorting group of ships so accurately that the tactical officers back on our carriers could assign precise targets to every man. Thus it happened that this was the most carefully worked-out attack of them all.

It must have been 2:30 in the afternoon, or later, be- worked-out fore our attacking group of planes got away; and since the two fleets were now farther apart and steaming away from each other, it must have been after 4:00 before they reached the Hiryu group. Now the day-long losing battle that Japanese airmen had fought began to have its effect. Their fighter opposition was weak. Their anti-aircraft fired furiously enough, but the men who fired must weak.

Carefully attack.

Japanese fighter opposition

have reached the point of black despair over the endless procession of star-marked planes that came out of the clouds to pound their dying ships. Hardly a blow from all that group of American planes missed its target; the Hiryu was hit and hit again with bombs timed to pierce her deck till she burned from end to end. Both battleships were hit, the cruiser and the destroyer were hit, while our loss was next to nothing.

By now it was after four o'clock. At about this time a flight of Army Flying Fortresses from Oahu, which had used their immense range to run 1000 miles or more in the battle area, were getting low on gas and had seen neither friend nor enemy through the broken clouds "Prepare to drop bombs," said the squadron leader. They all thought they were going to jettison and make the best of their way back to base, but the lead plane dipped and as they followed it down, "in the distance we saw hundreds of fighter planes hovering above a line of burning ships," says one of them. "Someone said on the interphone, 'Everybody at battle stations, here come the Zeros." But the Zeros did not come, and a moment later the Army men realized delightedly that what had looked like Zeros were only the anti-aircraft bursts from ships whose fighter protection was now 500 fathoms down at the bottom of the Pacific, all of them blazing away in wild nervousness 20 miles in advance of the attackers.

LD. 1942

"No undamaged carriers were visible," and the two No battleships in sight were both burning. The fliers chose undamaged targets of opportunity. Three big bombs completed the carriers. nin of the Akagi; a heavy cruiser was hit and a light cruiser. One bomb struck square on the fantail of a destroyer, which was halfway under and covered by a cloud of smoke as the planes soared away to make emergency landings on Midway.

But in their last gasp of the day the Japs got the Japs get Yorktown. A flight of 15 torpedo planes from the Hiryu the crossed our attack force somewhere in the skies (why Yorktown. they did not come simultaneously with their bombers is another of the minor mysteries of Midway) and came in on the damaged carrier with fighter escort while their own ships were getting the works.

Seven Jap torpedo planes and some of the fighters went down in a savage dogfight; three more fell to the carrier's AA fire before they could launch their torpedoes, and all the rest were lost in the pull-out, lost to American fighters who bravely entered their own barrage to get at the enemy. (At least one of them, Ensign Tootle, came down in the water with an engine knocked dead by that barrage.) Five torpedoes streaked toward the Yorktown. If she had had her full speed she might have avoided them; if Engineer Delaney had not given her 21 knots, instead of the 15 he promised, they would all have hit her. As it was, two struck, one forward, one Engines amidships on the port side. The engines stopped, the stop.

ship took a heavy list. "My God, she's going to capsize." said a lieutenant on one of the escorting destroyers.

Order to abandon ship. She was not going to capsize; but she rolled out black smoke and Captain Buckmaster sadly gave the order to abandon ship as men fought their way up through dark compartments to slide down ropes and nets for the waiting destroyers to pick them up. She was not going to capsize, though her deck lay at so sharp an angle that her planes could not land, and one of them, coming in on the Hornet, caused that ship her only casualties of the battle. (He was a fighter pilot, badly wounded, and he lurched against the firing button of his .50, unconscious as his injured plane crumpled at contact with the deck, and sent off slugs that cut down eight men.)

Day of battle over. The day of battle was over. On the Yorktown, black and monstrous in the twilight, damage-control parties were pumping and shoring to bring the ship to an even keel. A few officers were drinking coffee in the ward-room of the Hornet, their faces drawn, their conversation the disjointed sentences of men half dead with fatigue as they discussed the Headquarters announcement that had come through the loudspeaker to quiet rumor: "Four enemy aircraft carriers attacked and severely damaged . . . our losses in planes were heavy . . . one of our carriers out of action." The depression of weariness had followed the fury. "We sent off fifty-three dive bombers and only got five back. If their admiral has any sense

he'll send those battleships in on us tonight. Has anybody heard? What's left at the Island?"

Back at Honolulu the Army was preparing the broad- Troublecast that was to cause so much trouble through the im- some pression of the uninformed that it was claiming all the broadcast. credit for victory.

At Honolulu Admiral Nimitz, and out at Midway Captain Simard were trying to reconcile the reports of men who had seen the enemy only during the few seconds while they were flashing past at 300 miles an hour under intense attack. More reports kept coming in; PRY's were out all over the ocean that night and more were going out, some getting hit and coming down on the water, some coming down without being hit, to conserve their last precious fuel by taxiing in. At Midway the oil fire still burned—the Flying Fortresses had used Oil fire it as a beacon—and everyone was working like mad at still the task of repair, pausing now and then to snatch some- at Midway. thing to eat from the kettles that boiled in the open. "Before that attack the contractors were just contractors, but after it they just couldn't do enough," said one of the Marines who saw them. What was left of Marine Bomb- Marine ing 241 had had its planes fixed up and would go out Bombing presently under Major Norris for a night attack in that worldless black, each plane steering on the faint blue exhaust flare of the one ahead, and Major Norris would not come back

241 goes out again. Completeness of Jap defeat.

It was a twilight of tension and doubt, through which no one at Midway or Honolulu or in the fleet realized what a state of material and moral disintegration the Japanese were in after having suffered a defeat beyond palliation. Our fleet steamed steadily east and away from an enemy who might be coming back for a surface attack by night, when our aerial mastery would be void No one knew—no one could know then—that under this same twilight Lieutenant Commander William H Brockman's submarine, which had all day been driven down by repeated depth-charge attacks, had at last found the Japs disorganized enough to permit her to close in on one of the smoke clouds that lay close to the water. Under it was the badly damaged Soryu, "the Blue Dragon," still burning but moving slowly, shepherded by two big flotilla leaders. The submarine fired two torpedoes; the Blue Dragon vomited flame and capsized into it.

Ensign Gay could not communicate with the high command to tell how, as he clung to his cushion, Japanese planes droned through the evening sky, far and near, seeking hopelessly for a place to land. Off at the limit of his vision a cruiser pulled alongside the burning Kaga and fired salvos into her till the derelict sank; farther on the horizon he saw the Akagi tip up her bows and dive. It was growing dark; patches of glare appeared on the clouds where the Japs were using searchlights.

The Kaga and Akagi sink. 41.1942

One of them was red and unsteady, perhaps the glow of a burning ship.

Ensign Gay inflated his life raft, climbed in, and in a matter-of-fact manner began to patch the holes.

Toward morning—the morning of June 5th—a Japa- Japanese nese submarine, which apparently had not received the submarine. bad news, surfaced near Midway and played sand castles on the island with a few shells. Shore batteries fired at the flash and chivvied her away just before the dawn natrols went out. The weather front was now edging southward and close to the water, with squalls and rough sea under it, the worst of flying conditions, but the reports that came in were more encouraging than anyone had dared hope. Nowhere near Midway was No sign of there any sign of Japanese ships affoat, only a great enemy amount of debris, oil slicks and black Japanese life rafts, always empty. A few American life rafts, tenanted, to which destroyers and PBY's were directed. No sign of any Jap carriers or aircraft of whatever species; and when contact was finally made with their striking force off to the northwest it was seen to be hurrying home at the Crippled best speed of which its cripples were capable, already far force distant.

ships near Midway.

hurries home.

The Japanese occupation force, presumably held back by the slower transports, was still clear of the weather front and now nearest of all the enemy. Some fliers thought they recognized, among its escort, vessels that had been with the Hirvu the night before, which could

be true if they had been drawn in as rear guard after leaving the place where that last carrier sank during the night. Admiral Spruance turned his carrier group round and swung full speed into the pursuit despite his loss in planes, the *Hornet's* bombers from Midway joining at sea. But they had a chase ahead of them before they could reach striking range again.

The Army Flying Fortresses, however, had range enough; and Lieutenant Colonel Brook Allen, who had been a member of the Pearl Harbor investigating committee, took them out again, while the indefatigable Marines of Midway boiled out also, two formations of six dive bombers each. The target of the latter was a cruiser and battleship, somewhat separated from the other Japanese about 140 miles west of Midway. This would be some more of the *Hiryu's* escort; slanting down southwestward across the front of action they would just about reach that spot by 8 o'clock on the morning of the 5th, the hour when the Marines hit them.

The Japs put up no fighter defense but there was "heavy and accurate anti-aircraft fire" and 12 planes were not enough to saturate it to ineffectiveness. Captain Richard Fleming's plane was hit—the squadron leader; the others saw it begin to burn, not too late for Fleming to jump, but he chose rather to hold to his dive and plane a beautiful direct hit on the cruiser before he plunged into the sea. The others all missed the dodging ship, bu

some by so narrow a margin that she counts as at least abadly damaged ship, her seams opened.

An hour or two later Allen's Flying Fortresses came in on the same group, now augmented by having fallen in with another contingent. "It was duck soup that day," "Duck said the Army pilots with relish. "They didn't have any soup." more fighters." The cruiser that Fleming had hit was recognizably in trouble. Of course the Army men picked on that cripple, giving her a direct hit amidships and another right under the stern that left her with a heavy list spinning circles like a teetotum. That was the last anybody saw of that ship, and maybe she went down; but no claims are made, nor are there any claims about the other cruiser that was damaged in the same attack.

That was the end of action for the day. The Japanese were moving away so fast that not even Fortresses could get back to Midway and load up again in time to catch them. The rest of the pursuit was up to Spruance, Spruance steaming hard all through that afternoon and night, in hot though his destroyers were getting low on fuel and in pursunt. the abstract there was no reason why the big Japanese gunnery ships should not assemble and turn back to hammer at our carriers, lose or retrieve all they had lost.

In the concrete, as the human calculating mechanism on the American flagship's bridge well knew, Japanese boldness exists only as it involves some element of trick- Japanese ery. The commander of one of their submarines was trickery. bold; he had traced the Yorktown, making her way

toward Pearl Harbor in tow, with the destroyer Hammann alongside. By morning of the 6th they had got the Yorktown on an even keel; they were going to save her up to the moment when that submarine fired four torpedoes in a burst.

Two hit the *Hammann*. She went down in 90 seconds and lost many of her crew when the depth charges blew while they were in the water. The other two torpedoes hit the *Yorktown* and made salvage futile, though she floated till another dawn before taking down her torn battle flags. Three men trapped in a compartment, in answer to the telephoned news of their plight just before they went down with the ship, said "We've got a hell of a good acey-deucey game going down here," which will doubtless be accepted among the best naval remarks of history.

Three men trapped.

But it was not the final remark of the battle; it was not even the final remark of that phase of the battle. The destroyers of the Yorktown's escort were finishing that phase by blowing up the bold submarine that had torpedoed her; and about the same time, several hundred miles to the west, the dive bombers of Admiral Spruance were having another phase to themselves.

Destroyers blow up Jap submarine.

> On the evening of June 5th a reconnaissance report spoke of an undamaged enemy carrier off to the north, under the weather edge, and the planes flew off to seek it. But it was a disappointment; no carrier, no sign of one, and no Jap planes. They had to console themselves

by attacking a light cruiser, but she was so well handled in the bad weather and bad light as to escape with minor damage. But the next morning (as the Yorktown was going down) they were not disappointed; they picked up the Japanese rear guard in fairly clear weather, and went Japanese for it with 1000-pounders, each carrier vying as to which rear guard could put on the most perfect textbook attack under text- attacked. book conditions with no enemy planes to interfere.

What made the occasion perfect from our officers' point of view was that this rear guard contained the cheat-cruisers, Mikuma and Mogami, the ships the Japs Mikuma built just after they got home from the London naval and conference. Remember? They had been singing about Mogami. possible aggression then, and had persuaded our statesmen not to build anything beyond light cruisers. On paper these two ships were 8,500-tonners of that class; on the ocean beneath our dive bombers they were 13,000-ton heavies.

"At least two bomb hits were scored on each cruiser," says the communiqué in a masterpiece of understatement, for there were 20 planes in the Mikuma attack alone, and she is the ship that shows up in the last photo- Undergraphs of the action leaning over on one side, half her statement. double funnel blown away, smoking decks all twisted and bent, guns acockbill, holes in her side with the torpedo tubes dangling from them, and what is left of her crew gathered aft to wait for the finish. The Mikuma went down sometime that afternoon; and the Mogami

was left in such evil case that the communiqué claimed her as sunk too (though later evidence makes it possible that she may have got away).

Now our carriers were working into the region where land-based Japanese planes could get at them, so they turned away home and the battle was over, all but the business of picking up survivors. "The pleasantest thing of all," said one of the *Hornet's* men, "was to hear for days afterward that one after another of our fliers was found, till our losses were really very small."

Survivors picked up.

Japanese navy's first crushing defeat. The high command doubtless had a due regard for that feature; but its pleasure was chiefly derived from the fact that the Japanese navy had taken its first indubitable, irrefutable, crushing defeat since the day when Hideoshi tried to make the Korean nightingale sing, back in the Middle Ages. They had attempted to use command of the sea without first attaining it, a job for which no boldness and no trickery is adequate, as a little reading of Admiral Mahan would have told them. But Admiral Mahan was an American, and it is probably beneath the dignity of the sons of heaven to accept advice from inferior races.

Marines land at Guadalcanal. [July 1, 1942. Sevastopol falls to Germans after 25-day siege. Rommel's drive forces British troops to retreat to El Alamein, Egypt. July 31. Mildred H. McAfee is named commanding officer of the United States Navy's women's reserve. August 7. Marines land at Guadalcanal.

J.D. 1942

August 9. Civil disobedience riots flare in India. British Government arrests Gandhi. August 15. Nazis launch offensive against Stalingrad. August 19. Canadian and British commandos stage historic raid on Dieppe. Octo-Raid her o. Ethiopia joins the United Nations. October 11-12. on Sea battle off Cape Esperance in the Solomons results Dieppe. from Japanese attempt to land reinforcements on Guadalcanal. October 23. British Eighth Army launches huge offensive against German forces in Egypt. October 26. United States carrier Hornet is lost in Battle of the Santa Cruz Islands. November 7. United States armies land in North Africa.]

THE FIRST "SECOND FRONT"

(A.D. 1942)

SIDNEY B. FAY

N THE night of November 7, just eleven months after Pearl Harbor, the world was electrified by President Roosevelt's announce- Americans ment that a "powerful American force," under the com- land in mand of Lieutenant General Dwight D. Eisenhower, North was landing on the Mediterranean and Atlantic coasts Africa. of French North Africa.

c.

The expedition was the largest single amphibious armada in history. It comprised more than 500 troop and supply ships and a vast Anglo-American protecting force of more than 350 warships of all kinds, including aircraft carriers, battleships, cruisers, destroyers and submarines. Divided into two convoys, it then established beach-head landings at a dozen points in French Morocco and Al- convoys. geria, and quickly secured possession of five airfields and all the important ports and naval bases.

By 7 A.M. on November II (Armistice Day), only 76 hours after the first landings, the Commander-in-

Reprinted by permission of Current History.

French
opposition
ceases.

Chief of all the Vichy-French forces, Admiral Darlan, was being "entertained by American officers in Algiers" and ordered all French opposition in Africa to cease. General Eisenhower could announce that the fighting in Morocco and Algeria was at an end. The French North African Empire, safe in American hands, would be preserved for return to France and would not fall under the Axis heel. The vast undertaking had resulted in an amazingly quick success. Roosevelt and Churchill had beaten Hitler and Mussolini to it.

Rommel driven from Egypt. This Anglo-American occupation of French North Africa was beautifully timed to coincide with the British Eighth Army's precipitous expulsion of Marshal Erwin Rommel's Afrika Corps from Egypt, a thousand miles to the East. His routed army was in danger of being gripped by powerful Anglo-American pincers—if he did not get timely reinforcements and if the Americans could push by the Axis troops in French Tunisia and Italian Tripoli.

The establishment of this new United Nations Mediterranean front was not exactly the kind of second front for which the hard-pressed Russians and so many others had been hoping, because it did not mean the instant invasion of German-held soil and the instant recall of German troops from the Russian front for defense against attacks nearer home. But the new American Front was nevertheless a real second front, because it laid the foundation for a later but not far distant invasion of the Axis

Real second front. territories, which would eventually cause the Germans to recall a good part of their forces from Stalingrad and the Caucasus.

Why the decision was made for a Mediterranean front, and how the details were secretly and successfully worked out was promptly revealed by its two chief authors.

"The President of the United States is the author of President this mighty undertaking, and in all of it I have been his Roosevelt active and ardent lieutenant," Prime Minister Churchill generously declared at a jubilant Mansion House dinner in London on November 10. Next day he stirred the House of Commons with a thrilling review in greater detail. Simultaneously in Washington at a press conference. President Roosevelt more fully told the "now it can be told" story.

A couple of weeks after Pearl Harbor the President invited Churchill and his staff to visit Washington for a Christmas conference. The time had come for joint planning by the two countries that had the greatest Allied combination of military and naval forces. The leaders of conference. the two nations then discussed the desirability of offensive action. They considered various possibilities, especially a large offensive action across the English channel. It was considered in the light of the problems involved -sufficiency of munitions and supplies, particularly airplanes, to make the operation reasonably sure of success

responsible.

and the shipping of war supplies to Europe in time.

The military opinion was that the proposal was feasible, and a good deal of work toward this end was done. But the more it was studied, the more apparent it became that, because of physical limitations (production of munitions, the training of enough men, and adequate shipping transportation across the Atlantic) an attack across the Channel could not be carried out in 1942.

Transportation problem serious.

Shipping losses.

The transportation problem was particularly serious During the spring months the German submarines were carrying out increasingly destructive attacks on unprotected shipping routes along the Atlantic seaboard of the United States and in the Caribbean. This caused a very dangerous rise in merchant shipping losses, notably of oil tankers, which reached a peak figure in this area alone of nearly 600,000 gross tons in June. Total United Nations shipping losses all over the seven seas amounted to nearly 900,000 gross tons in June. Ships were being sunk much faster than they could be replaced by new construction. But by August new construction of Liberty ships and other merchant vessels had rapidly increased, and more effective measures were successfully taken to check the submarine menace. For the month of September the sharply rising curve of total United Nations new construction of merchant shipping—nearly 1,000,000 gross tons—was safely above the then descending curve of total losses—about 300,000 gross tons.

In view of the physical limitations, the President asked Churchill to return to Washington at the end of May or

the beginning of June to consider whether there should be a large-scale offensive, which would be necessary if an attack were to be made across the Channel some time about the middle of 1943, or whether it would be wiser to start in 1942 an offensive on a smaller scale, in which the problems of production, training and transportation would not be so great.

The President and Churchill, aided by the combined Chiefs of Staff, surveyed the possibility of an offensive more limited in scope. By the end of June agreement was reached in favor of an African offensive. By the end African of July, certain fundamentals, such as the points of at- offensive tack, the numbers of men required, and shipping facili- agreed upon. ties, had been determined upon. The preparations were secretly and rapidly pushed forward.

While plans for the great armada were being laid behind closed doors in London and Washington, an invaluable American agent, Robert D. Murphy, formerly Preparations consul at the Embassy in Paris, was working with some made. two score under-cover men in Algeria and Morocco, distributing food and other supplies, making friends, and obtaining exact information about local conditions. Similarly Major General Mark Clark, with a few officers in civilian clothes, established friendly contact with many French colonial army officers. These Americans were beating the Germans at the "tourist" game, and making pretty sure that an American Expeditionary Force on

behalf of French freedom would probably not meet with any serious local opposition.

Meanwhile in June, in addition to the shipping losses noted above, two ominous pieces of news arrived in

Washington. The Germans had begun their second great drive against Russia. It aimed to encircle Moscow, capture the Soviet capital from the rear, and cut it off from sending reinforcements for the defense of the Caucasus and the Baku oil fields. It appeared to be one arm of a gigantic German pincers movement to crush the whole United Nations position in the Middle East, the other

surrender of 30,000 British at Tobruk.

German drive against Russia.

In June no one could foresee that Hitler's aim in Russia was doomed to failure—that he could not encircle Moscow, and that his Germans, Italians, Hungarians, Rumanians and Slovaks would be eventually stalled at Stalingrad and in the Caucasus foothills 300 miles short of Baku. But in view of the great strength of the German attack, Stalin naturally wanted a second front on the English Channel that would reduce the pressure on his own forces.

arm being Rommel's simultaneous drive against Egypt This drive brought the Afrika Corps to within 75 miles of Alexandria at El Alamein and resulted in the costly

Stalin's desire for Channel second front.

Since this second front was deemed impracticable for 1942, Churchill did the next three best things that he could for Stalin. British forces in Egypt had already been diverted in part to the Middle East in case the Ger-

mans should strike at the Caucasus. The Churchill-Roosevelt June communiqué on the "agreement of the urgency of a second front" served to worry the Germans and force them to leave 33 divisions and a third of their hombs in the West. And Churchill himself decided to go Churchill to Moscow and explain fully and frankly to Stalin the wasts whole secret Anglo-American strategy.

Moscow.

This visit in August did a great deal to prevent possible friction between the Anglo-Saxon powers and their Russian allies, as is evident from Stalin's masterly and understanding speech of November 6. Churchill also assured Allied the House of Commons when he said: "I have a solid underbelief in the wisdom and good faith of this outstanding standing. man [Stalin], and although the news that I brought was not welcome and not considered adequate, nevertheless the fact remains that we parted good friends. The Russians bore their disappointment like men. They faced the enemy, and now they have reached winter successfully, although we were unable to give them the help they so earnestly demanded, and, had it been physically practicable, we would have so gladly afforded."

Incidentally, it may be noted that, although Roosevelt and Churchill had been unable to open a Channel second front in the summer of 1942, they did send Russia large Supplies supplies. In the twelve months ending in October, 1942, sent to they had sent to Russia vast quantities of supplies, in-Russia. cluding 3,052 planes, 4,048 tanks, 30,031 vehicles and 831,000 tons of miscellaneous shipments of shells, ma-

chines, machine tools, foodstuffs, medicines and metals. All this did not reach Russia, because some of it was sent to the bottom by German planes and submarines which attacked convoys on the way to Murmansk.

Situation serious in Egypt. As part of his trip to Moscow in late August Churchill visited Egypt. Here the situation had been serious. In the spring of 1942 Rommel had received large reinforcements and new equipment for the pincers drive that he hoped would carry him through Egypt to the Middle East when the Germans had taken Moscow and would be advancing to the Baku oil fields. This was the moment when British troops had been sent from Egypt to reinforce the Middle East.

Genius for desert warfare. With a genius for desert warfare, where tanks can sail over great areas of sand like ships over the sea, Rommel swept 400 miles eastward over Libya into Egypt. On June 21 he captured the important port of Tobruk and took 30,000 British prisoners there. His new 88-millimeter guns, far superior to the British 25-pounders, knocked out the British and American tanks.

Firm stand at El Alamein General Auchinleck then prudently withdrew the battered British Eighth Army further eastward to El Alamein. Here he was able to make a firm stand because the desert narrows to a passage only 30 miles wide. It was a short front which he had enough troops to defend. Rommel could no longer make his wide sweeping tank attacks, because the British right on the El Alamein line was protected by the Mediterranean, and the left flank

by the swampy and impassable Qatarra Depression. Here the British were standing firm, but only 75 miles from Alexandria and liable to a new attack by Rommel, when Churchill arrived.

How this British Eighth Army received new and New and better tanks to be used in a counteroffensive against better Rommel was revealed by Churchill on November 11: "On the dark day when the news of the fall of Tobruk came in, I was with President Roosevelt in his room at the White House. The House of Commons knows how bitter a blow this was, but nothing could have exceeded the delicacy and kindness of our American friends. They had no thought but to help. Their very best tanks [the 22-ton General Shermans with 75-millimeter turret guns which could shoot in any direction were just coming out of the factories. The first batch of them had been newly placed in the hands of their divisions who had been waiting for them. The President took a large number of these tanks back from the troops to whom they had just been given. They were placed on board ship in the early days of July and they sailed direct to Suez under American escort. The President also sent us a large number of self-propelled 105-millimeter guns which are 105-millimost useful weapons for contending with the 88-milli- meter meter high velocity guns of which the Germans have guns. made so much use. One ship of this precious convoy was sunk by a U-boat. Immediately, without being asked,

the United States replaced it with another ship carrying an equal number of both weapons."

Churchill believed that the morale of the British Eighth Army would be improved by a change of commanders. In place of General Claude Auchinleck he appointed General Harold R. L. G. Alexander as Commander in Chief of the British forces in the entire Middle East, and Lieutenant General Bernard L. Montgomery as field commander of the Eighth Army. Alexander had distinguished himself at Dunkirk, in Burma and elsewhere. Montgomery, affectionately known to his men as "Monty," was 54 years old, an Ulsterman and the son of the Bishop of Tasmania, a teetotaler and a non-smoker. He had iron nerves, absolute calmness and self-control, and had the reputation of riding in front line tanks to see for himself exactly what the situation was at critical points.

Before leaving Egypt, Churchill spent a night with the troops in the desert. He left them with the directive that their prime duty was to take or destroy Rommel's army, together with all his supplies and establishments in Egypt and Libya.

On the night of October 23, with bagpipes playing, General Montgomery started his carefully planned offensive. His men first had to creep forward pushing little machines along the ground, as one would push a lawn-mower; a magnet sounded a buzz in the earphone when it passed over the mines that Rommel had buried all

along his front to blow up enemy tanks. When mines Passages were found, they were dug out of the sand, the fuses were removed, and they were carried to the rear, three or four by a single soldier. Lighted torches or red tape then marked for the British tanks the safe passages cleared of mines.

cleared of mines.

Then the British infantry attacked, cutting barbed wire and seizing the enemy's front-line positions by hand-to-hand fighting. At the same time they were protected by a heavy barrage fire from the British guns in the rear. The infantry thus opened the way for the tanks, Infantry instead of tanks opening the way for the infantry as in opens most battles of the Second World War up to this time. After several days of this slow progress, the British tanks finally crashed through the middle of the El Alamein line. A couple of thousand Germans were cut off near the Mediterranean. Three Italian divisions were cut off near the Qatarra Depression. They were left deserted by the Germans and were rounded up later by the British.

way for tanks.

Rommel was forced to a rapid retreat which gradually Rommel became a rout. His fleeing trucks and guns were merci- in retreat. lessly pounded by British and American planes which enjoyed a decided air superiority. It was like the situation before Dunkirk, except that now it was the Germans who were in retreat and were being bombed from the air. Bombers also destroyed the supplies at his rear.

By November 13 Rommel's battered army, or what was left of it, had been driven out of Egypt through the

half-blocked "Hellfire Pass" between Egypt and Libya. It was apparently trying to escape across the Libyan Desert, either to make a stand at El Agheila, south of Bengazi, where there is a narrow passage favorable for defense, or to escape to Italian bases in Tripoli. Meanwhile, American troops were advancing toward Tunis in a pincers movement aimed at closing in on the Tunisian capital from the west.

Rominel had already lost Tobruk and was destroying stores in other ports to prevent them from falling into British hands. Of his army, which had consisted of 4 German and 7 Italian divisions, he had lost 59,000 men killed or taken prisoner by the British, 500 tanks and 1,000 guns. The British losses were only 13,600 men. President Roosevelt's wisdom in sending the needed tanks and guns to the Eighth Army was now clear.

Egypt was henceforth free from danger. Though Rommel's force was routed, it was not yet annihilated. It might have considerable reserves, and Hitler might try to send it reinforcements. Whether Rommel's and the other Axis forces would be totally eliminated from North Africa would depend on whether the Armies of the United Nations could occupy Tunisia. If they succeeded in doing so, they would acquire thirteen valuable airfields and the strong naval base of Bizerta. With thes in their hands their land-based planes could protec United Nations shipping in the Mediterranean. The transportation difficulty would be greatly eased, becaus

the route from New York to Egypt via the Mediterranean is less than half as long as the route around South Africa. Bombers based on the North African coast could also easily strike at Axis troops in southern France, Italy and the Balkans, and "soften up" these regions preparatory to establishing a real second front in Europe itself.

The meticulous care with which the great Anglo-American armada was prepared was rewarded by the American success with which landings were made and the small troops extent of the opposition encountered. It was wise that the first occupation troops were Americans instead of British. Some French army officers and most French naval officers disliked the British because of the long rivalry between the two empires, because of French suspicions of British imperialism, and because of the British attacks on Dakar and Oran in 1940. The Americans, on the other hand, ever since the days of Lafayette had been the friends of the French. We had aided them in the First World War. We were not suspected of having any imperialist aims in Europe.

On the Atlantic coast of Morocco American troops under the immediate command of Major General George S. Patton made landings at Agadir south of the High Patton's Atlas, at Safi, which is connected through Marrakesh forces land with the whole North African railway system, and further north on the beaches on both sides of Casablanca and likewise at Rabat. Both these important ports are on the railway that runs 1,300 miles north to Tangier and

land first.

at Agadir.

east through Algeria to Tunisia. West of Fez the line is electrified because of lack of suitable water and coal for the locomotives, but east of Fez coal is the fuel, and it is a sign of the carefulness of the invasion plans that British coaling vessels were at once on hand with the necessary fuel for the locomotives.

Coaling vessels ready.

At Casablanca a number of French naval units put up a stiff fight, but the chief vessel, the battleship Jean Bart, was soon seen to be burning. American tanks and infantry were quickly able to force their way into the city from the already established beach-heads.

On the Mediterranean shore of Algeria American

troops under the immediate command of Major General Lloyd R. Fredenhall landed to the east and west of Oran and then closed in on the city from the land side and forced it to surrender. They also occupied three valuable airfields nearby and the naval base at Mres-el-Kebir. Much the same procedure was followed at Algiers further east. Here, by luck or by design, Admiral Darlan was taken prisoner. Within 76 hours after the first landings he signed an armistice with General Eisenhower and this virtually put an end to all further active resistance. Then began the advance of the Americans from the west and of the British Eighth Army from the east to occupy Tunisia and drive the last Axis forces out of

Americans force surrender of Oran.

Drive toward Tunisia.

North Africa.

[November 10, 1942. Oran falls to American forces. November 11. Hitler declares French-German armistice

THE FIRST "SECOND FRONT"

of 1940 at an end. Casablanca surrenders to United States troops. November 13-15. United States Pacific Fleet scores major naval victory over Japanese in Battle d Guadalcanal. November 21. 1,600 mile Alaska highway connecting Alaska, Canada, and the United States is opened. November 27. The French scuttle their fleet at Toulon to prevent capture by the Nazis. December 5. Real facts of Pearl Harbor attack are disclosed by Navy. December 24. Admiral Darlan is assassinated in Algiers. Admiral January 14, 1943. President Roosevelt and Prime Minis- Darlan is ter Churchill confer on war strategy at Casablanca. Janu- assassinated. ary 31. German army in Stalingrad trap is completely destroyed.]

.p 1942

A CLOSE-UP AT STALINGRAD

(A.D. 1942-1943)

ERICH WEINERT

ECEMBER 26, 1942.—In front of Stalingrad German Hitler has concentrated his crack troops. It troops conis interesting to determine from which strata front of of the population and from what parts of the "father- Stalingrad. land" this elite has been recruited. I have read more than a thousand letters which the soldiers of the doomed army have written home. Among the home addresses, the names of big cities hardly occur. Among a thousand letters the name Berlin appears fifteen times, Bremen four times, Leipzig five times, Chemnitz twice, Breslau eleven times, and Hamburg not once. That means that Hitler's Hitler has gathered here his most devoted and reliable rehable units from small cities and villages, from among peas- units. ants, white-collar workers, small tradesmen, craftsmen, and so forth.

From "Russian against German," The Atlantic Monthly, reprinted by permission of the author and publisher.

December 30, 1942.—Toward evening a German staff sergeant who was captured yesterday was brought before us. He is in his twelfth year of active military service. He is completely in agreement with Hitler's war.

"Aren't you glad that the war is over for you?" we asked him.

"No!"

German prisoner offered his freedom. "Would you like to get back to your outfit?" the Russian colonel asked.

"Yes, sir!"

"Have you been maltreated here in any way?"
"No!"

"If by chance you could get back to your outfit, would you tell your comrades that?"

"I would tell them the truth."

"Then you shall go back. We will give you permission. Tonight we will take you over at a safe spot.... Well, aren't you glad?"

The Hitler hero looks at us helplessly for a while. His "Yes, sir" sounds somewhat miserable.

Unwilling to die for the Führer.

"Are you ready to go?" asks the colonel.

Then the man completely loses his arrogant bearing and says with an almost imploring voice: "I should like to ask you, sir, if I may remain here. After all, I should like to return to my family when the war is over."

"You mean that you feel safer here?"

"Yes, sir!"

AD. 1943

There it is-the "readiness to die for the Führer." January 2, 1943.—Reports are coming in of men giving themselves up singly and in groups-at one place even a whole company with their lieutenant; but these are only sporadic occurrences. Why don't the others believe our broadcast assurances?

We question new prisoners: "Why aren't more men giving themselves up?"

"They still think they will be rescued, in spite of every- Nazis hope thing. The officers say the encirclement is weak. They for rescue. point out that other traps have been broken. They assure us all that we shall then be relieved and get a furlough home."

"But if the Red Army strikes now, what then?"

"The officers say the Red Army is much too weak for that—or they would have attacked long ago."

The picture is one of starvation—200 grams of bread, German in some cases only 150 grams a day. In the morning a liter of thin coffee; in the evening, half a liter of watery soup with a few peas and beans in it. Sometimes a bit of horse meat. "The horses will all be eaten before long. Whenever one drops, everybody goes for it like a bunch of ravens. In five minutes only the bones and the guts are left."

"How about your winter clothing?"

"Very few have it. Most of them have only summer coats and leather boots, thin cotton gloves, and a muffler.

troops starue. There is hardly a man who hasn't frozen something or other."

Afraid to surrender.

"How much longer are you going to hold out?"

"Many more want to come over. But they're frightened."

"Of what?"

"That they'll be shot here, or at least starved to death." Our officers constantly tell us that the Russians are half starving because we have already occupied all their graingrowing regions. Or the men think that they'll be deported to Siberia, where they'll be left to die. Or that they'll have to do forced labor here for years after the war, in order to rebuild everything again."

"We've talked to you often enough across the lines You shouldn't believe all those lies."

Enemy propaganda.

"They say that's all enemy propaganda. The officers told us, 'Those fellows who speak over there are no Germans; that's all a bluff. Those are recordings.'

"Aren't the men discussing whether or not one should take a chance and allow oneself to be captured?"

"Yes. Many do. They say, 'We've had tough luck here. In winter the Russians are always at an advantage, but in spring we are going ahead again."

Hope for spring.

It seems they will never realize how things stand until cannon speak, instead of arguments.

January 4, 1943.—Today we tried to stir the consciences of the responsible officers over there. Here is the text of the leaflet:—



DESTRUCTION IN STALINGRAD SOLDIERS AND ARMED CIVILIANS IN ONE OF THE BLOODIEST BATTLES IN RUSSIAN HISTORY TURNED BACK THE GERMAN INVADERS WHO HAD PENETRATLD THE CENTRAL PART OF THE CITY LOSSES IN MEN AND EQUIPMENT ON BOTH SIDES WERE ENORMOUS (Pages 151-171)

TO THE OFFICERS OF THE GERMAN WEHRMACHT'I

The hour is approaching which will decide the life and death of the Hopelessmen entrusted to you, The German High Command has left you in no ness of doubt that the situation in the Stalingrad trap is hopeless. Your men are surving and half frozen.

German position.

You have ignored all proposals for an honorable capitulation made to you by the commanding officer of the Red Army. If your conscience does not demand that you lay down your arms before the Red Army lauidates the trap by force, tens of thousands of young Germans will de a senseless and inglorious death.

We speak to you as Germans. We are at the front opposite you. We do not feel the need of making "propaganda." Your political opinions do not interest us. We are guided solely by our duty towards the German people, but above all by our duty to do everything for the tens of thousands of German mothers, wives, and children to save their sons, hushands, and fathers from useless destruction.

If an officer in such a situation considers it honorable to die rather than surrender, he is free to do so. But no one gives him the right to force upon his soldiers an attitude contrary to the people's healthier conception cf honor.

Do not abuse the trust of your men by keeping from them a realization of the danger by which they are engulfed.

We expect you, as German officers, to be conscious of your responsi- Responsibility to our people. Remember that you will return from your captivity bility of after the war to a new Germany in which the people are going to ask the officers. you if you have safeguarded as much as possible the lives of the men entrusted to you.

January 8, 1943.—Our propaganda seems gradually to be getting on their nerves. We have a German regimental order for Christmas which contains the following passage: "But the Russians will destroy us neither by their propaganda nor by force of arms." And today we even got hold of an order of the commanding general, Paulus himself, with a warning against Russian propaganda.

Ultimatum refused. January 9, 1943.—The ultimatum has been delivered to Paulus. And refused.

Sat all last night in the radio station and sent the text of the ultimatum into the trap. From 4.00 to 7.00 A.M. left sending out an invitation to Paulus to send his officers out with a white flag, on the road from Marinowka to Platonow at 9.00 A.M.; officers of the Red Army would meet them there.

Their radio operators picked up our message and sent the radiogram to the commanding general. Sharp at 9.00, officers from both sides met at the designated spot, but the Germans merely declared they had orders not to accept anything.

Now we have to acquaint the soldiers themselves with the text of the ultimatum.

January 11, 1943.—The reconnaissance battalion of the division found a favorable spot yesterday where strong forces of the enemy must be concentrated, south of the village of Marinowka, which lies in the southwestern tip of the trap in a protruding salient. The shape of the front lines there is such that a loud-speaker can cover a wide sector.

Strong enemy forces near Marinowka.

After dark, the car with our loud-speaker moved along under cover of the embankment of the Kalatsch-Karpowka railroad. The road to the dugout from which we were to send went through country swept by enemy fire. We therefore still had a few kilometers of exhausting

slogging through the deep snow of the steppes. Under our heavy fur coats our bodies were covered with perspiration in spite of the freezing night. The enemy over there shot tracers across, but they were too high.

The technicians had already dashed ahead across the railroad embankment in an area without cover and had carried their apparatus to within 500 meters of the German lines. The night was clear and there was almost no Clear, wind.

windless night.

Several times I read the ultimatum and its honorable conditions of capitulation. Then the last appeal of the commanding general of the Red Army, which told the soldiers that Paulus had refused the ultimatum. "Your fate is now in your own hands. Send your representatives with a white flag! Leave your trenches and dugouts soldiers. with hands raised! Anybody who tries to resist will be killed. Your life now depends on your own judgment. The decision is yours!"

Ultimatum read to German

Once more we shouted to them not to believe their officers. Real Germans were standing here who had no intention of misleading them with propaganda, who had no other wish than to tell them the truth once more. If they would now listen to reason, not one more German need die in the trap . . . But tomorrow would be too late.

There was no shooting. They had heard.

January 12, 1943.—Too late. The offensive has begun. begun. Marinowka, the village into which we directed our ap-

Offensive

peal only yesterday, has already been taken. From other sectors of the front we received news that everywhere larger or smaller wedges have been driven into the trap.

Snow impedes progr**e**ss. When dark fell we started out through a light snowstorm. In newly conquered territory travel is somewhat more dangerous. To be sure, the roads had been cleared of mines, but in the whirling snow it is easy to lose one's way and get into the mine field. We moved ahead very slowly. It was a vast field of wreckage. Most of the houses in Marinowka are shot to pieces. In the darkness we stumbled through rubble half covered with snow, in order to get to a suitable dugout. They have left their dugouts in fairly good condition for us. We visited a regimental staff in a near-by dugout.

The regimental commander and his deputy commander never left the telephone. Orders and reports poured in incessantly.

"What's the enemy doing? Is he digging in? When did he leave these positions? Any movement noticeable at point X? Watch them carefully!"

Confidence of Russian forces.

Everybody in the dugout was tense and alert. There was an expression of serene confidence on all faces. We are moving forward. Hitler's Sixth Army is being liquidated.

We began sending, again and again, the same urgent appeals: whoever does not surrender now will not get away alive. The first blow has been struck. The liquidation of the trap is a matter of days.

We didn't know for sure if those startled soldiers over there heard us. There were rumors that in the neighbor- Reports of ing sector several units had surrendered. U. talked to surrender. them. There was a group of fifteen men and another of sixty, who organized and surrendered with their lieutenant. When they were asked if they knew anything about the ultimatum, they said no. They reported that if the blows of the Red Army continued unabated, not one soldier would fight to the last cartridge—they would all surrender.

A captain, they said, had told them that the thunder of the German guns was already audible before Karpowka.

There was the thunder of cannon—anybody could Thunder hear that-only they weren't German cannon.

of cannon.

lanuary 14, 1943.—Karpowka. The offensive is rolling on. We have heard that a gigantic wedge has been driven in along the northern side of the valley of the little Rossoschka River to Karpowka, and has split off the western part of the trap. Dimitriewka, Atamanskij, and Karpowka have been taken by storm. Only recently the commanding officer of a reconnaissance detachment on the southern side of the trap showed us on a map the German positions near Karpowka, and the concrete fortifications which the Germans had constructed along the railway line leading to Shirnoklejewka. The Nazis never imagined that the Red Army might take Karpowka by surprise, attacking from the back.

Nazis unprepared for attack from rear.

Signs of panie.

Everywhere there are signs of panic. The Nazis simply leave everything behind, and don't even bother about their wounded and sick.

The big, wide village of Karpowka looks like a gigantic junk yard. Wherever you look, nothing but overturned guns, immovable tanks, heavy trucks left standing broadside across the street. In their flight the Germans tried to throw a lot of stolen goods onto their cars, which were still usable, and then they lost half the loot again. They even left their motorized batteries behind. Heaps of cartridges, shells, and bombs are lying around. Their dugouts, which they built with solid supports of pieces of rail and massive timber, stand as if built for eternity. Here they intended to spend the winter unmolested.

Abandoned dugouts.

They had no time to burn things down. They were flushed too suddenly from their warm holes in the ground. Now they have to walk through the snow to Stalingrad. Their chests and little grips must soon become too heavy for them; they are already throwing them away on the highway. Who knows where they stole all that stuff? There are bales of cloth, linen, silk goods, preserves, soap, caviar, and other things. They must have parted from these things with heavy hearts. All this had been packed ready for their Christmas furlough.

Prisoners
with
frozen
feet.

A troop of prisoners comes shuffling along on the main street. They were cut off at Marinowka and Atamanskij. Half of them just hobble along on frozen feet. 2 1943

"How about it?" I asked them. "Is the Red Army too neak to finish you off?"

They look at me with troubled eyes in grimy faces. "It was dreadful, sir," a tall fellow with a wild, black beard said to me. "This barrage—I shall never forget it as long Unfora I live. I don't know how I ever got out of it."

octtable barrage.

Some pressed around us and began a plaintive lament. "If we had only known how we were being cheated by the officers. Every day they told us that the Russians would kill us all. Otherwise we should have stopped firing long ago."

January 15, 1943.—The offensive is making great progress. The trap has already been cut into different sections. In some sectors they are still said to be defending themselves desperately; in others they leave everything and disappear as soon as the artillery opens up. We have followed our forward troops into Sineokowskij. Our army is pushing forward in a long wedge in the direction of the circular Stalingrad railway.

The chaos is becoming ever greater. On all streets, in Chaos all yards, lonely trucks are standing around partly loaded increases with material from the various staffs. Red soldiers are busy at the moment unloading the stuff in order to use the trucks. And now leaves of documents, notebooks, and staff correspondence are whirling through the whole village, driven by the icy wind. German newspapers and illustrated magazines flutter across the steppes. The street is strewn with unsent letters which had still been at the

offensive progresses. post office, with paymasters' records and other military records, with cheap novels, picture postcards, field service regulations, decrees, orders of the High Command of the Wehrmacht, and German paper money. The tanks rumble right over the paper.

Nazi "Kultur." Red Army men poke around, laughing, in this rubble of "Kultur." Many know a little German.

"What is The Vision of the Intensification of the Germanic Man?" one man asks me, leafing through a gaudily printed, cheap publication.

"Dear comrade," I say, "that's a new sort of language; I can't even translate it into German, let alone Russian. That is Nazi abracadabra."

The dead lie among the trash. And among all this trash lie the dead, grotesquely distorted, their mouths and their horror-filled eyes still wide open, frozen stiff, with their skulls torn away and their bowels torn out, most of them with bandages on their hands and feet still saturated with the ointment for chillblains. Human wrecks, with whom death has not yet quite finished, lie on their straw bags in the field hospital. Those were the patients suffering from frozen limbs, invalids and half-dead men for whom nobody had cared during the flight. There they lie, those wretched knights of the hooked cross, driven into all the blessed lands by their beer-bloated prophets.

Abandoned cripples.

When their troops retired, these abandoned cripples wanted to hobble after them and thus got into the line of fire of the rapidly advancing Red Army.

On the parapet of a trench in which the dead are piled one on top of the other, someone had stuck one of those staff pennons lying around by the hundreds-one of those pennons with a white skull and crossbones on a black field. In hoc signo!

lanuary 16, 1943.—I am squatting with a captain in a very small, dark dugout of the Jablonowa ravine. The little glass pane above the door is covered by driving snow every moment. The little stove, which has been patched up from old gasoline cans and shell cases, smokes so hadly one is almost suffocated. The best thing to do is hang about outside during the day, in spite of the 48 48 degrees degrees below zero.

below zero.

We came here from Sineokowskij, among steppe valleys which grow increasingly wilder. All the roads are covered with tanks, cars, and guns, some unharmed and some bombed into unrecognizable junk. Pulverized motorcycles, field kitchens, ammunition boxes, and among all these, frozen corpses of men and beasts in their last Last agony agony of death.

of death.

The crows have already settled on a corpse lying farther up on the height, and are now fighting for the eyes.

"Once you are back, my dearest," I read in a letter from Frankfurt which I picked up somewhere recently, "I shall do nothing but look into your dear eyes again and again. In them I want to forget the dreadful sorrows of these years."

In another ravine we did find, after all, one surviving Hitlerite. He looked at us deliriously. Our medical or. derly had just put a new bandage around his feet.

"What's the matter with you?" I asked him.

No care for the sick. "My feet are half frozen. There were three of us here when our fellows left. None of them cared about us. No water, no wood, not a piece of bread. One very sick fellow died yesterday. My other comrade said, 'Our men have left already; we must see if we can get a truck. If the Russians come we are done for.' So we crawled out of the dugout. Then a shell struck a few feet away from us. The other couldn't get up any more. I dove back into the dugout. Then in the evening the Russians came."

January 19, 1943.—Last night we got to the former flying field of Pitomnik, which is in the center of the area where the Nazis have been trapped. When we arrived there in the dim light of the moon, we thought we were in the midst of an inhabited place. But then we saw that what we had taken for small houses were really tanks and trucks the Germans had left standing there. Thousands and thousands of them.

Thousands
of tanks
and trucks.

Litter of

Early in the morning we climbed up on an embankment. And what an unimaginable sight we had from there. As far as the eye could reach, nothing but tanks, carts, cars, guns, machine guns, dump trucks, remnants of planes, supply sheds, and ammunition dumps. Tanks knocked in as though they were tin cans, eight-ton trucks burned down to their iron frames, guns with their barrels

burst, and amid all this, corpses of men and beasts, the whole litter of war, from a shell case to a shaving brush.

January 20, 1943.—The enemy is still holding out The enemy along the circular railroad 15 kilometers west of Stalin- still holds grad. From that direction the air reverberates.

out.

The general invited us for breakfast this morning. While we were sitting at breakfast, we heard a terrific shouting outside. We ran out. All the Red soldiers were pointing up and shouting, "It's on fire." Not too high above the field a Ju-52 that had been hit came roaring down, emitting smoke. He had intended to land on the old flying field, but hadn't found anything that resembled it. After a few seconds it was completely enveloped in smoke, went into a spin, and burst into flames. Not one of the crew had a chance to jump.

An hour later we heard the same lively shouting again German -another bird looking for his old nest. A Junkers ap- planes peared from the cloud cover at about 700 or 800 meters and began to circle. The flak thundered from all sides. The guards tore the tommy guns from their shoulders and fired away.

He had hardly made a semicircle when a long white glowing flame shot out of his left motor. He was burning. The pilot attempted a quick landing. But in the next instant the plane tilted over and dashed to the ground. There it exploded with a mighty roar. Ammunition transport. Atomized!

At noon there came a third one, but he smelled a rat in time and turned tail. When he had almost disappeared in the haze, he suddenly trailed a thick plume of smoke. He won't get back to Rostov either.

The trap disintegrates. January 22, 1943.—The staffs are moving up. The trap disintegrates into its last component parts. Hitler's Sixth Army was concentrated on the edge of the city of Stalingrad and on Gorodischtsche. There were unceasing lightning and thunder across the steppe. One was almost deafened by the firing of hundreds of guns.

The nearer we came to Stalingrad, the more gruesome the picture became. Wherever one looks the relics of the former elite army are lying about. Everywhere, frozen stiff, lie and squat all those who could not tag along in the retreat, and broke down here, left to their fate by their own comrades. One man lies toppled over, still embracing the post of a road sign—"To Stalingrad!"

"To Stalingrad."

In the ravine which leads to the outer fortifications of Gontschara, hell itself must have broken loose yesterday. The whole ravine is full of tanks and trucks all shot to pieces. Some lie overturned. Tank turrets that have been blown off and guns that have burst clog the road. Corpses were mashed to pulp by the caterpillar tracks. Artillery and guns pressed forward through the defile. It is difficult to make headway on foot through all this wreckage.

Procession of prisoners.

On the height there comes a procession of prisoners, Germans and Rumanians,

Behind them hobble the cripples with frozen limbs. their feet wrapped in handkerchiefs. They implore the others with beseeching eyes not to walk so fast; they are afraid of being left behind on the steppes to freeze to death.

Prisoners afraid of being left behind.

"If you had surrendered on January 9," I said, "you would have driven to the prisoners' camps in your own tens of thousands of trucks."

Moaning they hobbled on.

Behind us in the ravine our own guns thundered away at the last fortifications of Stalingrad.

lanuary 24, 1943.—A terrific blizzard started yesterday. The steppes become ever more treacherous. The trucks have sunk into snowdrifts. Toward evening we moved on to Gumrak. The Nazi garrison in Stalingrad is already split in two.

We arrived in Gumrak in deep snow after dark. On the way we saw some of the huge military graveyards, Military thousands of wooden crosses set in neat rows. "Lebens- graveyards. raum!" Behind the village lay the deserted German staff dugouts, dispersed over the deeply snow-covered steppes.

The dugout which we entered must have been left just recently in a great hurry. The little stove, which was heated with coal, was still lukewarm. The walls were covered with a sort of Linkrusta wallpaper. The occupants had obviously settled down very comfortably for the long winter. They had probably stolen the armchairs from houses in Stalingrad. There were still some cups of tea on

the table. They left their brushes, mirrors, shaving kits, Eau de Cologne bottles, and other junk on the shelves along the wall.

January 25, 1943.—We have been walking around Gumrak this morning. A few houses hit by German bombs yesterday are still burning. The whole landscape is strewn with ruins and corpses. The snowfall at night half covered these horrible pictures. Here and there skulls, feet, or hands stick out from the snow.

Ruins and corpses.

In a ravine we found the corpses of Russian prisoners of war, almost naked, as thin as skeletons, with the skin already a blackish-brown, all thrown together in a heap. They must have been lying here for some time. Starved or tortured to death.

Everywhere troops of prisoners are moving along.

German medical officers. In the village we found three German medical corps officers, who did not know where to go and so waved to the first Russian tank that came their way.

"Don't you think," our instructor asked them, "that the last ten thousand would certainly lay down their arms if they knew that just as little would happen to them as happened to you?"

"I am absolutely convinced of that," said one of the medical officers. "Everything should be done to save them."

"Will you help us save your compatriots?" asked the instructor.

A.D. 1943

"Certainly! But how?"

"Tonight, after dark, we are driving up to the front lines. There we can shout across to them through our loud-speakers. You are medical men and officers. You have great authority with your soldiers. Won't you call over to them and tell them how you were received here as prisoners of war?"

Then suddenly these three heroes couldn't take it. The Sudden one pretended to have a sprained ankle; the second felt disabilities. sick: the third began to cough and said he had such a catarrh that he could hardly make his voice audible at all.

lanuary 27, 1943.—From all sides streams of prisoners are gathering together—hobbling, shuffling wretches, Streams of wrapped in rags. Napoleon's grenadiers must have prisoners. looked the same way after crossing the Berezina. The most difficult problem now is to find accommodation and food for these wretches, until they can be shipped away. The stronger ones are immediately sent off to march to the gathering point at Karpowka, with loaves of bread under their arms. It is 25 kilometers. The weaker ones and those with chillblains have to be stowed away for the time being in all the available dugouts and sheds. The greatest difficulty arises in bringing up supplies for Difficulty the thousands, especially since the supply columns can of bringing only move slowly in the deep snow.

up supplies

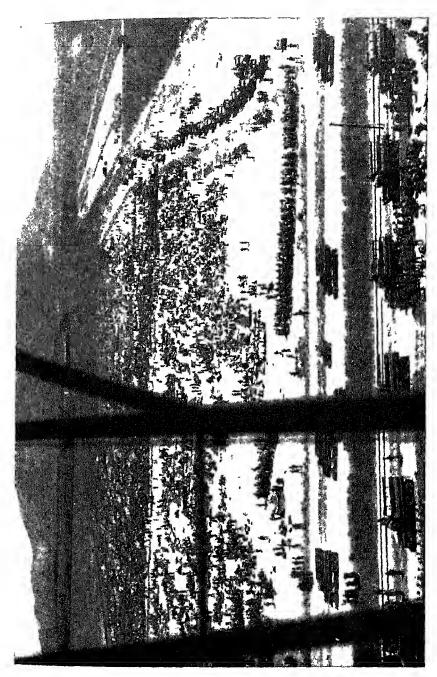
Three of these bedraggled specters shuffled past our dugout. The commanding officer fetched them in. "Here, have something hot to drink!" Meantime they just stared at the two loaves of bread which lay on the shelf. The commanding officer noticed it. "Take the bread along," he said, and handed it to them. "We have plenty of bread. You came here to steal our daily bread. But we can still give you poor devils something."

The three immediately tore hunks out of the bread and ate so greedily they nearly choked on it.

Karpowka already changed. January 30, 1943.—On my trip today I passed again through Karpowka. It is now 40 kilometers behind the front lines. And life has already returned again. A fortnight ago it was dead and empty; now it is swarming with life. The peasant women are back and have already started repairs on the houses. The wintry sun shines brightly. Children are skating on the lake where a dead German still lies. They have taken the seats out of the destroyed cars and are coasting down the slope, shrieking with mirth.

A Heinkel strafes the town. In the evening twilight, while the village street was still full of life, a Heinkel came suddenly shooting out of the sky, flew over the village at treetop level, and strafed it with all guns blazing. This is the third day, they say, that he has raced along over the villages in an impotent fury, like a hornet whose nest has been destroyed.

I sat in my billet and heard the bullets strike the house. As I ran out to see what harm that mad dog had done, I saw our guard lying in front of our door. A ricocheting bullet had struck his chest. Only ten minutes ago he had



AERIAL VIEW OF THE PRISONER OF WAR CAMP AT MATEUR, NORTH AFRICA, FILLED WITH GERMAN TROOPS CAPTURED IN THE LAST DAYS OF THE TUNISIAN CAMPAIGN AXIS RESISTANCE ENDED MAY 12, 1943 (Page 171) FROM A L S ARM'S SIGNAL CORPS PHOTOGRAPH

been sitting with us, warming himself by the stove and telling me about his home in the Donets region.

As the woman doctor approached, he opened his eyes once more. Then his head pitched backward.

An old bearded peasant stood near-by. Suddenly he opened his mouth wide, as though he wanted to shout something, struck his chest wildly with his fist, then raised it up and shook it in a raging fury.

But he uttered only one hoarse word: "Mesti! Re- "Mesti! venge!"

Revenge!

[February 6, 1943. North African Theatre of Operations is placed under supreme command of Lieut. General Dwight D. Eisenhower. February 9. United States troops gain complete control of Guadalcanal. February Guadal-12. United States Marine Corps announces creation of canal falls women's reserve to be directed by Mrs. Ruth Cheney Streeter. February 21. Navy Department announces loss of the Argonaut, largest American submarine. April 21. President Roosevelt announces Japanese execution of captured American fliers who participated in raid on Tokyo. May 12. Axis capitulates in Tunisia. May 22. Comintern (Communist International) is dissolved. June 10. Payas-you-go tax measure is signed by President Roosevelt. June 11. Pantelleria falls to Allies. July 10. Americans. British, and Canadians invade Sicily. July 25. Benito Mussolini resigns as dictator of Italy. August 15. American and Canadian forces occupy Kiska. August 16. Con-

to United States troops

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

A.D. 1943

Quebec conference. quest of Sicily is completed. August 11-24. President Roosevelt and Prime Minister Churchill confer at Quebec. September 3. Italy is invaded by British and Canadian troops. September 8. Italy surrenders unconditionally to the United Nations. September 9. Allied Fifth Army troops establish bridgeheads at Salerno.

SALERNO

 $(\Lambda.D. 1943)$

AL NEWMAN

₹HE ship is fully loaded for combat. Her decks Loaded are jammed with assault boats and amphibious for jeeps. Tanks, half tracks, trucks, bulldozers, combat. guns, good water, ammunition, and gasoline are below decks.

Soon we are under way and joining a large troop convov surrounded by cruisers and destroyers. As each hour passes the tension slowly heightens. It is as though someone were tightening the tuning peg of a violin and testing the tone. You can almost hear the men on every ship of the convoy thinking to themselves over and over again: "D-day—H-hour. D-day—H-hour." D-day is "D-day— Sept. 9 and H-hour is 3:30 a.m. Fifteen hours before H-hour." H-hour the Swiss radio reports an Allied amphibious operation headed for Sardinia or Naples. So we are observed and expected.

Late in the afternoon of D-day minus one we receive word that an important announcement will be made at

From "D-Day, H-Hour," Newsweek, 1943, reprinted by permission of the author and publisher.

6:30 over the Rome and Algiers radios. At 6:30 we tune in on Algiers for what is to me the most dramatic moment of the war. Static drowns out the beginning of the announcement. "Sounds like Donald Duck," says the commodore. Then the static clears and we hear the voice of General Eisenhower. "Italy has surrendered," he says.

Italy surrenders.

This occasion marks the first time I have ever seen members of the armed forces leave sizzling fried chicken cooling on a plate. All over the ship you can hear soldiers and sailors yelling with glee. They are thrown completely off fighting pitch. Someone has suddenly loosened the tuning peg on that violin.

Approaching Gulf of Salerno. But it was tightened up immediately. We were approaching the Gulf of Salerno and the invasion of Italy was only a matter of hours away. Here is the story of the events immediately preceding that invasion and of the landing itself as I scribbled them down in timetable form between bomb bursts:

Sept. 8, 9:25 p. m.—Flares to the north—then heavy gunfire and flak. Red-hot tracer bullets crisscross in the night sky and bombs burst on the water with yellow flashes and bellowing reports. Reports of approaching enemy planes pour into the bridge.

Assembly in the wardroom.

10 p. m.—We dash to assembly which is held in the wardroom. The general tells his officers: "Instead of wishy-washy Italian coastal defenses, we have to face the Germans. The situation is tougher than ever, but it

is fundamentally unchanged. Go in with the idea of killing anyone who fires on you. Pull no punches. Don't go in there with your hands down." The colonel's tone is quieter: "Be prepared to meet the worst and we'll never come out on the worst end. Good luck to you, gentlemen." Whereupon we all rise and salute.

"Be prepared to meet the worst. . . "

10:40 p. m.—We slacken speed. There is land in sight -mountains on the tip of land marking the southern end of the Gulf of Salerno. Fortunately the weather is clear and the water millpond smooth—completely unlike the landings in Sicily.

11:10 p. m.—Units of the British fleet open a terrific hombardment of the beaches in preparation for the landing of Tommies timed at 3 a.m. Unaccountably, no such artillery preparation is planned for our landing.

11:45 p. m.—The whir of winches announces that our first boats are over the side. Then their powerful engines growl and grumble in the dark. Grim-faced, silent troops go down the rope nets.

Sept. 9, Midnight—The beginning of D-day. A num- Beginning ber of boats circle counter-clockwise off our starboard of D-Day. bow, their wakes making white circles in the dying moonlight. Finally they take off in line for rendezvous points from which they will make the long run for shore. The British beach bombardment continues fiercely, underlining the fact that we will have none.

3 a. m.—It's now pitch dark. The British bombardment lifts to inland, as the hour is reached for their land-

ing. Our scout boats are in close to our beaches. They are not fired upon, they report.

3:30 a. m.—It is H-hour. All remains quiet until the first wave hits the beach. Then every weapon known to the German Army opens up—mortars, machine guns, grenades, rifles, 88s, and even howitzers—in the high mountains behind the narrow coastal plain. The wave staggers, then attacks. It is evident right now that the landing is to be far, far tougher than the Sicilian affair.

Tougher than Sicily.

- 4:35 a. m.—There is fierce opposition all along the beaches. Most of the troops are pinned down by enemy fire. "Hell of an armistice, ain't it?" comments a naval officer. Mines floating in are swept from the channel to the beach and hold up further waves of infantry. Busy mine sweepers bustle to the scene of trouble.
- 5:30 a. m.—No boats have returned from shore as yet. The captain and the commodore are gloomy. Not only will beach opposition delay troops trying to gain their daylight objectives and leave them open to panzer counterattack, but the unloading must slow down owing to the lack of boats.

Lack of boats.

- 6:30 a. m.—There is the first request for naval gunfire support to silence a heavy battery in the hills to the south, which is giving the beaches hell.
- 7 a. m.—Mine sweepers are detonating mines with a roar and geysers of water. A carrier-based Spitfire umbrella is in the air.

7:20 a. m.—An air-raid alarm sounds. There is a re- Air-raid port to the ships that an enemy bombing raid in the alarm. northern area has been turned back by friendly fighters. A big formation of Spits is dead astern. The first Navy casualties from the beach battalion pull alongside and are hoisted into sickbay.

7:49 a. m.—The all-clear sounds. I identify a kid with a face wound as a young ensign who had wanted me to go in with him. "Aw, come along," he said, "we'll have a hell of a lot of fun."

8:15 a. m.—There is news on the radio. Far away in America the President has said: "At this moment barges Barges are moving through the dawn to the enemy coast." It's to enemy strange to stand here and watch his words come true.

coast.

0:02 a, m.—There are frantic pleas from shore to shell an old mill just back of one of our beaches. Heedless of a mine field, a destroyer cuts through and blasts a German strong point. The radio is now crammed with requests for supporting fire from cruisers and destroyers. That expected panzer attack is developing, and the boys have little with which to oppose it.

10 a. m.—A little British monitor is in close, shelling Reitish requested targets with her outsize guns. The situation monitor ashore is improving although panzers are reported pouring down a mountain road to the south—in the opposite direction from the expected counterattack. Fires and smoke cover the hill down which they are advancing.

shells targets. LCT hit twice. dead and wounded. She has been hit twice by 88-millimeter shells. The second shell exploded inside a tank she was carrying, killed two men and wounded two, and set the tank on fire. They pulled out the wounded and pushed the blazing tank overboard with her dead into the deep water, before her ammunition went up. An ensign from North Carolina reports to the bridge for replacements. Still quivering, but under admirable control, he asks me: "Sir, is it true the Italians have surrendered?"

Noon—The channel is swept and a line of destroyers cruise up and down the beach, shelling requested targets. They keep this up all afternoon.

Tanks move ashore.

- 1:20 p. m.—Our tanks are now going ashore—one is named the Blazing Comet and another the Boogerman.
- 2 p. m.—A large Italian fleet is reported west of Sardinia heading southwest. Some elements of the British Fleet leave to intercept it. Later reports show that the Italians are heading for Malta to surrender.

Italian submarine surrenders.

- 3:55 p. m.—An Italian submarine, flying her colors, sails calmly into the gulf and surrenders to our flagship.
- 4 p. m.—All but intermittent firing ceases on the beaches. The situation ashore is still obscure. Several outfits report they have taken objectives but many have not. A naval lieutenant says: "That shrapnel was mighty thick. I had a place all picked out on my chest for the Purple Heart."

8:15 p. m.—We slip through mine fields to a new berth much nearer the shore. This hastens the unloading since the boats have a shorter distance to travel.

8:30 p. m.—A big air raid is reported on the way. We remain on the alert until 9:07 but we don't stop unloading. A miraculous stevedore who is unloading the after hatches has been swearing for twenty hours without repeating himself.

10:20 p. m.—After another alert and an all clear, the real thing arrives. Flares are dropped over nearby cruisers. Big They throw up flak with anti-aircraft guns, but they do air raid. not stop shelling the shore. At the height of the raid a small boat pulls alongside and a polite English voice asks the bridge: "Do you know which way she is lying?" "Tell him on her belly," suggests one of the officers.

Sept. 10, 12:35 a.m.—A general ashore radios: "Thank "Thank God for the Navy." The cruisers are to continue shelling God for all night. You can see their salvos as they travel in arcs the Navy." across the sky seemingly at a leisure pace.

1 a. m.—A young ensign stops aboard for food after seven round trips to the beach. He reports that fortunately for the Army the German 88-millimeter guns were overshooting the beaches, in many instances by as much as 30 yards. Tank-laden craft received absolute priority on the beach at 7 o'clock, so evidently there was still plenty of panzer trouble.

9:45 a. m.—Numerous tanks have landed during the night and have rushed inland to engage the enemy. Two

wounded *Panzertruppen* men are brought over side. One is asked if he thinks the war is nearly over and says: "No, of course not."

10:30 a. m.—Ten enemy bombers are coming from the southwest at low altitude. Our cover intercepts them in time. Thank God for those Spits.

LCTs
on the
beach.

Noon—The row of LCTs on the beach belching vehicles looks like a long line of stranded, gasping whales. The beach itself is loose, fine sand. Steel netting has been laid over it to make it firm. Behind the beach amphibious engineers and ack-ack gunners have made forholes in scrub-covered dunes. Less than a quarter of a mile inland is the white, weathered stone wall of the ancient town. A few doughboys are digging foxholes into its earth-filled top. Along the south wall runs a dusty road and an irrigation ditch into which the soldiers are dunking their sizzling feet.

2 p. m.—I am proceeding south along the road when three Focke-Wulf 190s strafe it. I flop in my usual bramble patch. The planes make one pass, and then flak and those blessed fighters drive them away. I get up and turn north again, noting after I pass the intersection that G. I.'s are washing themselves on the steps of an ancient temple.

G.I.'s wash at ancient temple.

There are signs around announcing that the area is an Italian national park and advertising the ristorante which once was obviously a mighty ritzy joint. This modern town is just a wide place in the road with two wine shops.

Anative slips me the Fascist salute and a "buon giorno" and then tries to sell me some postcards at three or four tmes their normal price.

At night when we finally finish unloading and form a close lines for the run through the mine fields back to 12, we get the worst air raid I have ever seen. It is bright Another moonlight, and a German reconnaissance plane marks au raud. our position with colored flares. At 10:45 without warning all hell breaks loose and stays loose for three-quarters of an hour.

It is a low-level attack and the tracers from other ships buzz over so low they seem to part your hair. Bombs goof on the water and raise brightly lighted fountains. This time our nearest miss is under 200 yards away. Incredible as it may seem, there have been no hits on the No hits. tightly packed, motionless formation sitting on the water lke helpless, fat ducks. Five minutes after we get under way an engineer comes into the wardroom shaking his head like a punch-drunk prizefighter. "Jesus," he says, "the sides of this ship were ringing like the bells of St. Mary's."

As I write this last paragraph we are in sight of the North African coast, steaming along in comparative Comparative safety. But slam a door or drop a plate and the boys of the safety. beach battalion who stayed there through the hours of shelling and the kids who steered the assault boats into the machine-gun tracers will jump a mile. Your correspondent? He can outjump any of them any day.

[October 1, 1943. General Clark's forces occupy Naples. October 13. Badoglio government in Italy declares war on Germany. October 19-30. Cordell Hull, Anthony Eden, and V. M. Molotov confer at Moscow. October 31. United States Marines invade Bougainville island. November 20. Marines land on Tarawa and Makin atolls in the Gilbert Islands. November 23. Gilbert Islands are occupied by United States Marines after 76-hour battle.]

Marines land on Tarawa.

REPORT FROM TARAWA

(A.D. 1943)

ROBERT SHERROD

BOARD one of the many troop transports plowing the long sea furrows to Tarawa, and later in the hell of Betio, was Time Correspondent Robert Sherrod. His story:

Ship life was dull. The men of the 2nd Marine Division fairly wilted in their crowded, hot quarters. They Dull ship life. spent an hour each day cleaning rifles, sharpening bayonets, then another hour studying aerial photographs and contour maps of Betio, the little bird-shaped island that was the main fortification of Tarawa atoll. There was nothing else to do except see movies, read dog-eared magazines, play cards and sleep, which Marines can do at any time in any position on almost any given surface.

The Marines seemed anything but excited. More than half of them were veterans of Guadalcanal. They had the calm confidence of a Corps which assumes that it is the best fighting force in the world. They knew that the most concentrated bombing and shelling in history would pre-

Calm confidence.

Courtesy Time Magazine, © Copyright, Time Inc., 1943, and the author, Robert Sherrod.

cede their landing: almost 1,000 tons of aerial bomb, plus 1,500 tons of shellfire, on Betio's crowded, scan square mile. But they could not be sure that even this tremendous pre-landing bombardment would wreck the defenses built by the Japs. On the night before battle sweat-drenched men packed the wardroom, spilled into the passageways to pray with their chaplains.

Long before dawn of D Day the first wave of Marines was in its boats, the second wave was climbing down the nets in half-moonlight. At 5 A.M. the sky lit up like the crack of doom: battleship guns were pounding Betio. Soon light and heavy cruisers joined the concert of inferno. Ashore, flames spurted hundreds of feet high Surely, the Marines thought, mortal men could not stand such pounding.

The Marines' confidence rose. They wondered if the Japs, who undoubtedly knew that the Americans were coming, might now have evacuated Tarawa as they had Kiska. Then, suddenly, a great splash kicked up the sea a few hundred feet from one transport, only 50 feet from another. The Japs were firing their coastal guns. Betio would not be another Kiska, after all.

The first wave had been ordered to hit the shore at 8:30. Correspondent Sherrod had been assigned to the fifth wave, commanded by Major Howard Rice, which would reach the beach 31 minutes later, presumably after the first four waves had established comfortable positions. But now it was obvious that H Hour would be delayed

4.D. 1943

because the Jap fire had forced the transports to shift to a safer area.

The fifth wave milled around in what had turned into broad daylight. Now the naval gunfire mounted to an unbelievable crescendo of thunder, smoke and fire. Then came the planes, dropping big bombs, little bombs, incendiary bombs. Wave after wave after wave of torpedo- Bomb hombers and dive-bombers from carriers crossed and after crisscrossed Betio. Offshore, the rough sea tossed the Higgins craft and drenched the Marines and their weapons.

A mile ahead something was happening. The early wayes were not hitting the beach as they should. A control boat sped up and its officer shouted: "You'll have to go in right away as soon as I can get a boat for you. The shell around the island is too shallow to take the Higgins boats." The news was chilling. It meant something dimly foreseen but hardly expected: the shallow coral reef Shallow around Betio would bar landing save by special small, coral reef steel-plated boats, of which there were all too few, or by landing by wading.

big boats.

A small boat came alongside Correspondent Sherrod's party. An officer said: "Half of you men get in here. They need help bad on the beach." Jap shells began peppering the water. Major Rice and 17 men scampered into the small craft, which headed for the beach through a barrage of mortar and automatic-weapon fire. The Higgins boat milled around for another ten minutes, getting its share of near-misses. One Marine picked a half-dozen pieces of shrapnel from his lap, stared at them. Another said: "Oh God, I'm scared. I've never been so scared in my life."

Two more small boats, disabled, passed. The officer of a third offered to take the remainder of the Higgins boatload as far as he could. As the men shifted, they saw another craft half a mile ahead puffing smoke, saw figures jumping over its side into the water. By now the Marines realized that this was going to be a landing, if any, in the face of enemy machine guns.

Enemy machine guns.

Said the wild-eyed small-boat boss: "It's hell in there. They've already knocked out a lot of boats and there are a lot of wounded men lying on the beach from the first wave. They need men bad. I can't take you all the way in because we've got to get back out here safely and get some more men in there quick. But I'll let you out where you can wade in." The men crouched low. The little vessel was loaded with silent prayers.

Silent prayers.

Then the boat boss said: "From here on you can walk in." The men in the boat, about 15 in all, slipped into neck-deep water.

Five or six machine guns were concentrating all their fire on the group. Any one of the 15 would have sold his chances for an additional \$25 on his life insurance policy. There were at least 700 yards to walk slowly, and as the waders rose on to higher ground, they loomed as larger and larger targets. Those who were not hit would always

Men wade ashore. remember how the bullets hissed into the water inches to the right, inches to the left.

After centuries of wading through shallowing water and deepening machine-gun fire, the men split into two Divide groups. One group headed straight for the beach. The into other struck toward a coconut log pier, then crawled two groups. along it past wrecked boats, a stalled bull-dozer, countless fish killed by concussion. Those who got ashore did not know just how many of the 15 had been lost-probably three or four.

Near the landing point, a boat in on the first wave had stalled. A 20-year-old crewman on the boat had been shot through the head, and had murmured: "I think I'm hit, will you look?" Now he lay on the beach. A Jap ran out of a coconut-log blockhouse into which Marines were tossing dynamite. As he emerged a Marine flame-thrower engulfed him. The Jap flared like a piece of celluloid. He died before the bullets in his cartridge belt finished exploding 60 seconds later.

The Marine beachhead at this point comprised only the 20 feet between the water line and the retaining wall 20-loot of coconut logs which ringed Betio. Beyond this strip, beachhead. Jap snipers and machine-gunners were firing. In a little revetment was the headquarters of Major Henry P. ("Jim") Crowe, a tough, red-mustached veteran who had risen from the Marine ranks to command of one of the assault battalions. Nearby passed a parade of wiremen, riflemen, mortarmen and stretcher bearers.

A handsome young Marine walked briskly toward Major Crowe's headquarters, grinning in greeting to a pal. There was a shot. The Marine spun around, fell to the beach dead. He had been shot through the temple A Jap sniper had waited since early morning for just such a shot at a range of less than ten yards.

lap sniper.

A bit later a voice called: "Major, send somebody to help me! The son-of-a-bitch got me." Two men crawled over the retaining wall, dragged back a Marine shot through the knee. Then a mortar man 75 yards down the beach rose to a kneeling position, tumbled with a sniper's bullet through his back. The wounded man's companion popped up to help, got a bullet through the heart.

Assault battulions. cut to

That was the way it went the first day. The assault battalions had been cut to ribbons. Anyone who ventured beyond the beachhead and the retaining wall—and by midafternoon several hundred Marines had so ventured—was likely to become a casualty. From treetop concealment and from pillbox slits Jap snipers and machinegunners raked the Americans.

But the Marines did not weaken. One remarked that a friend had lost a piece of his thumb. "He just looked down at it and laughed and kept on going. That damn fool has plenty of guts." The story of another "casualty" got around: "He got shot pretty bad in the shoulder but he won't even come in to let 'em dress it until he finds the mucker that shot him. He's still out there pokin' his

No weakening. rifle in all the holes and shootin' like hell and gettin' shot at a million times a minute."

At great risk from shore batteries, destroyers ran close to the beach, opened up on targets as small as one Jap sniper or one pillbox mound. It was precision firing, the shells often landing less than 50 yards from the Marines. If the high explosives did not wreck many of the fortifications, they did strip away most of the islands' palm fronds.

The first night passed perilously. The Marines held Perilous three beachheads, the longest less than 100 yards from night. end to end, the deepest 70 yards inland. The Japs commanded the rest of the island. For every Marine who slept in a foxhole, two kept watch through the darkness.

Next morning before dawn a lone Jap plane came over, shied away as U. S. ships put up a terrific ack-ack barrage. Soon after the first light the 2nd Division's reserves made for shore. From the beachhead it was a sickening sight.

Even before they climbed out of their Higgins boats, the reserves were under machine-gun fire. Many were cut Machinedown as they waded in, others drowned. Men screamed gun fire and moaned. Of 24 in one boat only three reached shore.

Low tide that morning bared the bodies of many Marines, some hunched grotesquely, others with arms outstretched, all arrested while charging forward. At regimental headquarters, located 30 yards inland against a Jap log-and-steel-laced blockhouse, staff officers worked grimly. Colonel David Shoup, huge, bull-necked com-

cuts down reserves.

mander of the men ashore, reported: "We're in a mighty tight spot. . . . We've got to have more men." It was a touch-and-go whether the Marines would all be killed, or, less likely, be pushed back into the sea.

Turning point.

The turning point came about I P.M. on the second day. Millions of bullets, hundreds of tons of explosive poured into the stubborn Japs. Strafing planes and divebombers raked the island. Light and medium tanks got ashore, rolled up to fire high explosive charges point-blank into the snipers' slots of enemy forts. Artillery got ashore, laid down a pattern over every yard of the Jap positions. Ceaseless naval gunfire became more accurate.

Marine fighting spirit. But the decisive factor was the fighting spirit of the U. S. Marines. Not every Corpsman was a natural hero: some quivered and hugged the beach, but most—those who feared and those who disdained death—went forward into the Jap fire.

Lieut. William D. Hawkins, a Texan, led his platoon into the coconut palms. Though twice wounded, he refused to retire. He personally cleaned out six machine gun nests, sometimes by standing on top of a half-track and firing at four or five Japs who fired back from blockhouses. One of Hawkins' men sobbed: "My buddy was shot in the throat. He was bleeding like hell and saying in a low voice, 'Help me, help me!' I had to turn my head. We kept on advancing."

The wounded remain at the front.

At least two wounded company commanders, and probably half a dozen others, stayed at the front directing

operations. The percentage of men who fought on despite injuries was very high.

That afternoon Colonel Shoup wiped his red forehead with a grimy sleeve, said: "Well, I think we're winning, but the bastards have got a lot of bullets left. I think we'll clean up tomorrow."

The Colonel was right. On the third day the Japs began to fall apart. The Marines advanced inland at a mounting pace, overran Betio's valuable airfield, bottled Marines the Japs in the island's tail. U. S. casualties fell off rapidly. overrun Refore noon it became evident that the Jap list of killed and wounded would be longer than the American. That was no consolation to the leathernecks who had seen their mates fall. But there was satisfaction in mopping up the snipers. One gang of 50 Marines fired rifles and carbines into one coconut tree at a trapped Jap. He returned the fire after he had been hit at least 50 times.

airfield.

The Japs were crack Imperial Marines. Some, when they realized that further opposition was useless, removed their split-toed rubber-soled jungle shoes, placed Some rifles against their foreheads, pulled triggers with their Japanese big toes. But most fought to the death.

suicides.

The enemy's stout pillboxes drew admiration from the Americans. Said a Marine officer: "You've got to hand it to them. They've got a mighty good engineer working for them." The fortifications had stood up under naval guns, land artillery, 1,000-lb. aerial bombs, point-blank tank fire. When U.S. half-tracks, mounting .75-mm. guns, got ashore, the Marines enjoyed following them. These machines stuck their gun barrels into pill-box openings, fired away. One Jap hit by a 75-mm. shell flew high into the air, then spiraled down, disintegrating as he fell.

Island grav<mark>eya</mark>rds The third afternoon and next day the waterlogged bodies on the coral flats were gathered up, the crude island graveyards were filled. The U. S. Marines, living and dead, had proved they could take it as superbly as any fighting men had ever taken it.

PENICILLIN

(A.D. 1943)

E. K. GURIN

NEW drug derived from a mold commonly found in bread or cheese is already saving the New drug lives of many of our soldiers and sailors. Peniallin is so powerful that even in great dilution it will stop the growth of dread staphylococcus aureus-yet it is so mild that one hundred thousand units injected into the veins of a patient are without toxic effect.

The list of infections successfully cured by penicillin is a roster of some of the most terrible diseases of man. Osteomyelitis—the crippling infection of the bone which strikes young and old alike; septicemia—the blood Diveases poisoning which results in speedy death; meningitis— by another crippler and killer; pneumonia; gas gangrene— penicillin the infection which results in numerous battlefield amputations and deaths; cellulitis—the rapid-spreading swelling which causes death in many cases; carbuncles those painful and incapacitating infections; burnswhere infections retard healing and result in death; gon-

Reprinted by permission of Hygera.

still in progress.

orrhea—the vicious invader that sometimes resists all other treatments, including the sulfa drugs; infected wounds—so prevalent in wartime. This is not a complete Investigation list, for investigations are still in progress. Scientists at famed Oxford in England and at the Mayo Clinic here and Army and Navy doctors both here and abroad are studying penicillin. Many a killer in today's list of bacteria may meet its match in this innocent appearing mold -Penicillium notatum—the producer of penicillin.

Discovered by accident.

Like a number of other important drugs, penicillin was first discovered entirely by accident. In 1929 an English scientist, Dr. A. Fleming, was working in his laboratory with some culture plates containing staphylococcus. He laid a plate aside, and later noticed a spot of mold growing on it. Curiously, on close inspection he found that the staphylococcus colonies surrounding the mold had become transparent, indicating they were being destroyed by something in the mold.

Scientist that he was, Dr. Fleming knew at once that exposing the plates to the air had resulted in contamination with certain micro-organisms. He recognized the mold as being a variety of that commonly found in bread or cheese—Penicillium notatum, and he embarked on a number of experiments.

Growth of mold.

He found that the mold would grow at room temperature in broth. He watched the mold appear on the surface of the broth—first as a white, fluffy spot which rapidly increased in size after a few days. Then it would change to a dark green, felted mass, the broth becoming bright yellow. He noticed that the more common patho- Pathogenic genic bacteria coming in contact with this yellow broth bacteria were inhibited or destroyed.

Lacking a name for this new drug and not wishing or destroyed. to call it "broth from Penicillium notatum," Dr. Fleming decided on the shorter name of "penicillin," and so characterized it when he wrote up his experiments for the austere British Journal of Experimental Pathology.

Fleming's find went unnoticed for about ten years. Then war broke over England and research on infection was intensified. At Oxford, Dr. Florey and his associates Dr. Florey resurrected the Fleming article and embarked on a series continues of experiments. The observations of Fleming were substantiated; articles were published in 1940 and 1941 in The Lancet. Dr. Florey himself paid a visit to the United States in 1941 to interest this country in solving the problem of producing penicillin in large quantities and experimenting further on its possible uses. He found ready ears in the National Research Council and in the Department of Agriculture. Studies were immediately instituted on the cultural characteristics of Penicillium notatum and on the methods of purifying penicillin therefrom.

The Committee on Medical Research and the National Research Council assisted Dr. Florey in interesting commercial establishments in producing the drug; today some sixteen companies are so engaged.

inhibited

Grown ın sugar solution.

The present method of securing usable quantities of the drug is to grow the mold cultures in bottles in incubators. A sugar solution is used instead of the broth used by Fleming, and about twelve days of incubation is necessary. The mold grows on the surface of the sugar solution. Eventually, shining golden droplets of natural penicillin are excreted by the mold. These droplets fall into the solution whence they are extracted by evaporation as a yellowish brown, crystalline powder.

Highpotency.

Normally, 160 quarts of mold culture will yield 10 grams of penicillin. Because of its high potency this is sufficient for 100 standard doses. It has been estimated that under present manufacturing conditions, 1,000 grams of penicillin would cost nearly \$50,000 to produce. However, private manufacturers and government agencies alike are working on methods to produce penicillin at a far more reasonable cost.

The usual method of treatment is by continuous injection of a solution of penicillin into the veins of the patient. English doctors favor intramuscular injections. Wounds may be treated directly by local application or injection of penicillin solution and burns by the local application of a penicillin ointment.

results.

The use of penicillin in some of our recent war casual-Phenomenal ties has given phenomenal results. A dozen of the toughest cases from the Pacific area were lodged in an Army hospital in Utah. They included compound fractures, bones splintered by high velocity bullets—wounds which had been under treatment by ordinary means for as long as fourteen months. Some of them were foul-smelling, pus-filled wounds; the men weak, delirious. They had been treated by the sulfonamides and other drugs without avail.

Almost from the beginning of the injection of peni- Improvecillin the soldiers began to improve. Within a week they ment is became so much better that operations could be risked which were necessary to remove bone fragments, bits of uniform, or in one case, a galosh buckle which had been driven into the wound.

almost ımmediate.

In the galosh buckle case the wound was healed within twenty-seven days. That was after fourteen months of ineffectual treatment by other known means! The other recoveries were just as rapid. So impressed were the Army doctors that twenty million units of penicillin Penicillin were immediately sent to our forces in England and a sent to like amount to North Africa.

England and North Africa.

Hundreds of cases are now in the records of the medical profession, showing the marvelous results obtained with this new drug. Take the case of the little, goldenhaired, 4 year old girl who was admitted to the Mayo Clinic after an illness of four days. Her father related that on several occasions shortly before the child's illness, she had bitten the inside of her left cheek.

On admission her temperature was 104 degrees. Her face was so badly swollen as to be out of shape, with both eyes swollen closed. She could not sleep nor eat, and she could barely breathe. Blood cultures showed the presence of deadly staphylococcus aureus; pneumonia appeared.

Sadly the doctors shook their heads. This infection was of a type almost universally fatal. Sulfa drugs proved of little effect. Then intravenous injections of penicillin, averaging 20,000 to 30,000 units a day, were tried; thirty-six hours after initiation of the treatment, blood cultures of the little girl were found sterile. Sixty-three hours later, the child was again able to swallow; she was having only a little difficulty in breathing and could take liquid diet. The swelling was obviously subsiding. The infection was being beaten. By the fifth day the little girl was able to eat semisolid and solid foods. By the ninth day, her temperature was normal. What a difference now in her appearance! Without the use of penicillin, doctors were convinced, she would never have recovered.

Nine-day cure.

Nasal and facial cellulitis. Another patient was a woman 28 years old with severe nasal and facial cellulitis. Her right nasal passage was obstructed by the swelling, and there was a continuous discharge of purulent material. Her face was badly swollen. She had received several doses of sulfanilamide, but the pain and swelling continued. Her fever rose to 104 degrees. Penicillin was given for six days, and at the end of that time the woman had completely recovered.

In a recent issue of the English medical publication, "Lancet," various English cases were summarized by Dr. Florey. A man aged 53 was brought to the hospital

comatose and believed to be dying from streptococcus Streptomeningitis. Previously, sulfapyridine had been given for coccus eight days, without definite improvement, sulfathiazole had also been given for thirteen days without change, though life was sustained. Immediately on his arrival at the hospital, penicillin treatment was commenced; five weeks after start of the treatment the patient was discharged from the hospital, fully recovered.

meningitis.

Dr. Florey also mentioned the external use of penicillin External in 172 infections of the eye, mastoid, chronic wound use of the sinuses and miscellaneous septic conditions. Forty-six eye infections with previous duration of from two months to thirty-two years were treated. Penicillin ointment and penicillin drops were used. A number of cases had had previous sulfa treatments, without permanent results. All of 18 cases of acute inflammation of the eye were found free of infection after penicillin treatments which lasted from one to five weeks. Included was a woman of 70 years who was cleared completely in a month. In 19 chronic cases of inflammation of the eye, all but one recovered in from one to five weeks.

drug.

Twenty-two mastoid infections were treated with penicillin. The patients' ages ranged from 10 months to 76 years. Primary healing took place in 14 of the acute and 5 of the chronic cases within seven days.

The Royal Infirmary at Glasgow reports excellent Burns recoveries of infected burns treated with penicillin cream. penicillin Fifty-four burn cases were treated with Penicillin cream cream.

treated with

at the Royal Infirmary, and in 41 of the wounds infective organisms had disappeared within five days. Healing was unusually rapid, and toxic effects were not observed

Especially remarkable have been the results with gonorrhea resistant to sulfa drugs. The usual treatment in this infection is by sulfathiazole. Penicillin cleared up the gonorrhea in 2 days, and there is a report on 68 cases without a failure.

Prepared in ampules.

Refrigera-

necessary.

tion

As used by the United States Navy, penicillin is prepared in ampules with the material ready for injection and with 100,000 units in each ampule. The material appears as a fine powder, varying in color from light yellow to dark brown and has been previously purified. dried and tested for sterility. This material will keep well at ordinary room temperature, but high temperature breaks it down and prolonged exposure at room temperature makes it deteriorate. Therefore the ampules are stored in a refrigerator until ready for use. When kept in the form of a liquid, penicillin is unstable and must be kept at all times in a refrigerator. When the material is to be used, the powder is dissolved in sterile distilled water, sterile normal salt solution, or 5 per cent glucose solution.

In the Navy the product is being used for infections caused by the staphylococcus, the hemolytic streptococcus, the germs of pneumonia and gonorrhea—particularly for those cases which have resisted treatment with the sulfa drugs. Since the amounts of the drug available

even for these limited purposes are small, the most serious cases-namely, infections of the blood or of the spinal Serious fluid—with these dangerous germs are given preference. cases given Indeed, for infections of the spinal fluid the material is preference. now injected directly into the spinal area. Not many people react unfavorably to the drug. In fact, there were in 264 cases only 11 instances with an eruption on the skin indicating some sensitivity.

Supplies of penicillin sufficient for civilian use may not he available until after the war. However, all the resources of American pharmaceutical science and many associated industries are being mobilized. Because of its life-saving significance the War Production Board and every other governmental agency that can be helpful is giving sympathetic consideration to the proposals for establishing manufacture of this important product. Conceivably, this type of encouragement may make it possible to have some penicillin for civilian use within Penicillin the next three or four months. When that time comes for medicine will have available a new weapon which will civilian use. revolutionize the treatment of some of our most dreaded diseases, and save innumerable lives which, without this new product, would quite certainly be lost.

THE MIRACLE OF AMERICAN PRODUCTION

(A.D. 1943)

By BURNHAM FINNEY

≺HE history of popular American awareness of wartime production may be boiled down to three stages. First there was consternation over the size of the task set before the country. Then came prideful joy in the realization that it was being brilliantly carried out. And now, in the third stage, there is a casual, almost bored acceptance of the industrial victory—the miracle Industrial has become so familiar that it no longer seems extraordi- victory. pary. Disturbances on the home front, slight and temprary recessions in output, are naturally highlighted in the press, and tend to blur the positive side of the story. As one who has watched the amazing industrial spectacle from a front-row seat, as it were, the writer wishes to bring the facts into clear focus again.

The one undisputed and overwhelming fact is that America since Pearl Harbor has witnessed an unprecedented production miracle. Twenty months after that

Reprinted by permission of the American Mercury.

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

tragic event, our factories are pouring out guns and plane; and ships and a thousand instruments of war for the United Nations at a rate far exceeding our entire national output in any year in the fabulous twenties. Every month we are now producing war goods, measured in dollars and cents, equivalent to constructing fifteen TVA's.

Peuk not reached. And the peak has not been reached. Not until the end of this year will American industry hit its full stride in war production, and then it will be in a position to maintain a dizzy pace as long as necessary. America's ability to produce has amazed not only Hitler, Mussolini and Tojo, but America itself. Industry's performance, in sober fact, has surprised industry itself. It had not fully appreciated its own untapped powers.

Synthetic rubber.

Perhaps the most spectacular case is that of synthetic rubber. Japan believed that to deprive us of natural rubber would be to cripple our transportation and block our building of a mammoth war machine. Her leaders, however, failed to reckon with American industrial resource-fulness. We started literally from zero to build a new industry vital to our successful prosecution of the war. Almost within a year's time the biggest chemical business in history, costing three-quarters of a billion dollars, was made available. Before the end of 1944 there will no longer be a rubber problem in the United States. We shall be able to turn out tires at a rate of one a second or better, and we shall have enough rubber for other purposes.

No longer a problem.

Detroit means automobiles to most Americans. It is the capital of the country's greatest mass-production industry. Capital But it no longer makes automobiles. Major General of the Levin H. Campbell, Jr., Chief of Ordnance of the United war States Army, has described it as "the backbone of our ord- industry. nance production." It is more than that. It is the powerhouse of our war production program. General Motors. for instance, has become the country's largest manufacnirer of war goods.

The automotive industry has gone "all-out" for war with a burst of activity that dwarfs any of its previous performances. In its best years it never built more than five and a half million passenger cars and trucks; it only got above the five-million mark three times. But it is today supplying the United Nations with armament at a rate equal to the production of twenty million automobiles a year. War goods produced by this industry in a single year are equivalent to two-thirds of all the motor cars and trucks owned in this country.

At the war's start our merchant shipbuilding industry Merchant was virtually flat on its back. The cargo ship was a puny affair. Since then old yards have been enlarged, abandoned yards have been rehabilitated, new facilities have been created, and the outpouring of ships to carry the necessities of war to the battlefronts and to our allies is of almost unbelievable magnitude. Imagine being able to build a Normandie, giant of the seas, every two and a half days! That is what we are doing, in effect. That is

shipbuilding industry.

what the merchant tonnage being put into service by our private shipyards adds up to.

Goal ten times that of 1918.

We thought that we did a pretty good job in World War I; in 1918 when the submarine menace was most critical, we constructed under two million tons of merchant ships. But our goal in 1943 is twenty million tonsmore than ten times the record in the previous war-and we are sure to reach it. On top of this total, the shipbuilding industry bears the chief burden of constructing warships to make our two-ocean navy a reality. Publication of figures on warship completions is no longer permissible, but it can be said that private yards are busy with battleships, cruisers, destroyers, aircraft carriers. escort vessels and smaller craft on a scale never before approached. Nor should the herculean ship-repair service be overlooked. Two yards alone have handled in one year over 12,000 ships needing repairs. Some of these ships had been broken squarely in two and had to be put back together again.

Ship-repair service.

Smokeless powder. In the spring of 1940 the shortage of powder-making capacity, particularly for smokeless powder, was so acute that it gave our top military men many sleepless nights. At one time our facilities reached such a low ebb that we could supply only a pitifully small army. Today, thanks to the far-reaching production program, we have available enough facilities to make all the powder required by all the armies of the world. And that is the story, endlessly reiterated, on every other bottleneck item.

Making possible this incomparable record of achievement are three factors: equipment, materials and manpower.

The first thing we had to do was to tool up for war, by converting machinery in existing plants and building new factories from the ground up. Fortunately we possessed a machine tool industry surpassing in size and Machine technical development that in any other country in the tool world. It went to work immediately. It stretched its out- industry. out beyond anything it ever had dreamed of, building machines on which war goods are made. It will have shipped by the end of this year, since January 1, 1941, over three billion dollars worth of machines. In an average peacetime year its shipments run around one hundred million dollars. The machine tool industry has not only girded our own factories for war but contributed extensively to the plants of England, Canada, Australia and Russia. In so doing it has deliberately stripped itself of its markets after the war, because most of the wartime tools it has turned out can be adapted to manufacture of civilian goods.

Raw materials productive capacity, totally inadequate for a global war, came in for its full share of expansion. Expansion In three years so much new steel-making was added to of the steel industry that the additional capacity was the productive equivalent of building a new steel industry about twothirds the size of Britain's. We now have within our borders well over half the steel-making facilities of the

capacity.

Steel.

entire world, and more is still under construction. Allo, steel capacity has been increased 140 per cent; this allor steel enables us to turn out weapons and vehicles that are stronger, lighter, tougher and have a greater margin of safety than those of our enemies.

Magnesium.

At the time of Pearl Harbor, Germany was far ahead of us in the production of magnesium, which is so desirable in airplane manufacture because of its lightness. We seemed hopelessly outclassed. But Hitler no longer has his boasted lead over us. Our facilities have heen enlarged so rapidly that today, as one war official expresses it, "we have magnesium sticking out of our ears." With some modifications we are in the same enviable situation in regard to aluminum. Our capacity is now seven-fold what it was a short time ago, and we have enough aluminum to build well over one hundred thousand planes a year.

Aluminum.

construction program.

Transformation of the country from a peace to a war economy meant not only tremendous additions of machines and materials facilities to those already in place, Tremendous but also a construction program never before approached in size. The Ordnance Department of the Army has a series of sprawling plants, mostly between the Alleghenies and the Rockies, to make shell, tanks, powder, ammunition and other ordnance items and to load shell. All of them have been built since war struck. The Navy owns hundreds of plants operating full tilt on war goods, all new in this war. Expenditures for plants and equipment were so huge, up until this year, that their total to almost 10 per cent of all munitions produced, figured on a dollar basis.

Manpower has not proved so troublesome as first Manpower anticipated until comparatively recently, though it has problems necessarily created many problems. For one thing, mass solved. production lends itself admirably to quick training of workers. Jobs formerly done by skilled men can be broken down into their component parts with a man assigned to do only one repetitive operation. In that way "green" help can be taught to run a machine in a few weeks. A constantly growing proportion of automatic or semi-automatic machinery and equipment also reduces the need for skill. The result is that our war shops today are filled with men who never before had seen a lathe or a drill press or had a speaking acquaintance with common shop tools.

Woman power should share the credit for boosting Woman production up to its present dizzy level. While we have power not been compelled to go to the lengths reported in Eng- deserves land and in Russia, some 35 per cent of our war workers are women. In some war plants, including a new one making aircraft engine superchargers, 75 to 80 per cent of all the factory employees are women.

some credit.

Putting its mind and energy onto war production to the exclusion of everything else, American industry has done many remarkable things along the road to higher output. It has subcontracted parts and subassemblies and

New and better weapons. complete assemblies, fanning out work so that it takes in the small as well as the large shops and so that every community is affected. It has developed new and better weapons, with the active cooperation of the Army and the Navy, and has improved the design and manufacture of older weapons. It has substituted less critical for the more critical materials. Many times it has lowered costs of production.

Over 8,000 planes a month. You may remember the incredulity with which President Roosevelt's statement was greeted when he said in the spring of 1940 that America must build 50,000 planes. The figure was so fantastically high that it sounded a bit like a pipedream. Today it is more than a reality, because we are making over 8,000 planes a month, at a rate, that is, of almost 100,000 a year. Imagine all the military planes made in the United States in 1943 in a row on the ground, wing to wing. Imagine that you are rushing past that line in the Twentieth Century Limited. It would take you sixteen hours to pass them all! And numbers alone don't indicate the full magnitude of the fact, since the average weight per plane has risen sharply, now that bombers make up a higher proportion.

Fluidity
of war
a complication.

The fluidity of war makes necessary emphasis first on one weapon and then on another. A single battle or a campaign reveals a weakness in a plane or a tank that must be remedied immediately if superiority is to be ours. Improved designs cannot wait for the next yearly model; they must be incorporated in the weapon right away.

This fluidity of war enormously complicates the manufacturing tasks. Production processes must be sufficiently frozen to permit large quantities of a product to be made, but not solidly frozen so that shifts become impossible.

To help solve this tough problem, modification centers Modificahave been established for aircraft. Certain special equip-tion centers. ment is essential if a bomber is to be stationed in the cold. fog-bound Aleutians; different equipment is needed if it is to be based in the tropical islands of the Southwest Pacific or in the sands of North Africa. Accordingly planes come off the assembly line in California, let us say. and are flown to an Arizona modification center where they are tailored to the specifications of the region to which they are to be assigned. Modification centers have been established for tanks too.

When America tackled the task of equipping its forces Task of and those of its Allies, its first job was that of filling up filling the "pipelines" extending from our factories to the vari- "pipelines." ous fronts around the world. Moreover, the millions in training in this country had to be provided with rifles instead of wood dummies and with tanks instead of trucks marked "tank." After the "pipelines" are full, we shall have to put in at the factory end only what flows out at the battle end. That will reduce production to a replacement basis. The "pipelines" will not be filled until sometime in 1944, though they won't be far from that satisfactory state at the end of this year. Because they started much earlier than we did, both Germany and

England have already reached that state. When the war with Germany ends victoriously, the "pipeline" of war goods extending from America to Europe and Africa will be bulging. All of the content, needless to say, then can be transferred to the Pacific theater where it can be put to use against the Japanese.

There undoubtedly has been some overbuilding of war plants and some piling up of certain weapons that may never be used; and in the months ahead we may make many more of some items than we ever shall employ in combat. But war officials and industry itself have in mind the indisputable fact that victory goes to the side that has too much rather than to the side that has too little.

Too much rather than too little.

As the end of our second year of direct participation in the war draws near, our production of war goods is of a magnitude that Hitler and Tojo didn't think possible, otherwise they would not have tempted fate by challenging us to make such an effort. Today "the arsenal of democracy" is more than a high-sounding phrase. It is an actuality. It is large enough and producing fast enough to supply all the anti-Axis world.

"The Arsenal of Democracy."

Though peak production is not yet attained, we are definitely over the hump. The United States alone is outstripping the rest of the world combined. In the brief space of three years, and mostly since Pearl Harbor, we have not only caught up with and passed Germany's rate of output, leaving her far behind, but also turned out more goods than she has been able to accumulate in the

last decade. As for Japan, her production of course is only a fraction of ours.

Wars are won by fighting men on the field of battle and at sea and in the air. But they cannot be won unless these fighting men can be provided with superior equip- Fighting ment in ample quantities. The workshops of America men need are now seeing to it that the fighting men of the United Nations get that equipment. Man for man, the production per manhour in the United States far surpasses that of any other nation. The reason for this is the high degree High degree of mechanization of our industries and our skill, acquired of mechaniin making automobiles and other products, in flowing zation. materials through the shop at the right time and at the right place.

equipment.

Such is the over-all picture. It is the magnificent and unchanging reality behind the shifting façade of the news, good and bad. Whether victories are scored in the Mediterranean or on the Russian fronts, on the high seas or in the scattered islands of the Pacific, American industry shares the glory. The products of America's genius for organization and mass production are everywhere, and everywhere they turn the tide of struggle in our favor.

[November 22-25, 1943. Generalissimo and Madame Chiang Kai-shek meet with Roosevelt and Churchill in Cairo to discuss Far Eastern affairs. November 28-De- Cairo cember 1. President Roosevelt, Premier Stalin, and Prime Conference. Minister Churchill confer at Teheran. December 1.

Anzio beachhead. Swedish liner Gripsholm arrives in New York with Americans and Canadians released from Japanese internment camps. January 22, 1944. British and United States troops establish beachhead at Anzio. January 31. United States forces invade the Marshall Islands, Februa ary 4. American warships shell Paramoshiri Island, part of Japanese home territory. February 5. Kwajalein atoll falls to United States troops. February 15. Benedictine monastery of Monte Cassino is blasted by Allied bombers. February 17. United States carrier-borne planes blast strongly fortified Japanese base of Truk. March 4. Berlin is bombed for first time by United States bombers. April 10. Russian armies recapture Black Sea port of Odessa. May 9. Sevastopol is recaptured by the Russians. May 18. German fortress at Cassino falls to United States troops. May 25. Beachhead at Anzio is linked with main Italian front. June 4. Allied Fifth Army liberates Rome. June 5. Victor Emmanuel III relinquishes control of Italy to Crown Prince Umberto. June 6. Allies launch invasion of western Europe by landings in Normandy.

Allies liberate Rome.

THE INVASION

(A.D. 1944)

ALLAN A. MICHIE—FREDERIC SONDERN, JR. —IRA WOLFERT

was taken off the beach at Dunkirk, Prime Minister Churchill assigned a small group of officers to the specific task of planning the return to the Continent. Then and for a long time afterward, it seemed a mere academic exercise. But by the time of the Casablanca conference in early 1943 the project no longer looked fantastic and the plans for D Day filled four huge volumes, each the size of a New York telephone book.

Plans for D Day.

The place where the invasion would strike was decided over a year ago. Roosevelt, Churchill and the Combined Chiefs of Staff approved the decision in August, 1943, at Quebec.

That it would start between the end of May and the middle of June, 1944, was decided at least eight months in advance. In November, 1943, at Teheran, President Roosevelt so informed Marshal Stalin. The exact day was

Reprinted by permission of Reader's Digest and the authors, Allan A. Michie, Frederic Sondern, Jr., and Ira Wolfert.

to be left to Eisenhower. Marshal Stalin expressed his complete satisfaction.

Selection
of
invasion
week.

When General Eisenhower arrived in London in January, he checked over the forecasts of the men and equipment he could expect, and on what dates. Satisfied, he set invasion week to be between June 3 and 10.

But the selection of the precise day was a last-minute drama.

Four or five weeks before D Day, SHAEF (Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Forces) departed from London and moved into battle headquarters conveniently near the loading ports and the "hards"—stretches of English beach paved with blocks onto which landing craft come at high tide.

Nerve center of invasion. In a big, stodgy old house that has seen better days, standing in a rolling, wooded private park was the nerve center of the entire invasion operation.

Vital pieces of information poured into this quiet woodland hideout—photographs taken by suicide pilots at zero feet above Normandy beaches showing five main types of mines and underwater obstacles to impede our landings, photographs of vital bridges and railway yards bombed to uselessness. The preparatory air attacks began eight weeks before D Day and by June 6, 82 strategic railway centers behind the Atlantic wall had been put out of action and most rail and road bridges leading to the Cherbourg Peninsula had been broken, forcing Germans to move up supplies and reinforcements by long

Preparations for D Day.

detours. The air policy was to drop two bombs elsewhere, as on Pas de Calais, to one on the real invasion ebjective, to divert German suspicion.

A few days before D Day, the Channel clearing plan Channel started working. Allied destroyers and planes, with in- clearing terlocking sweeps, covered almost every square yard of plan. the English Channel while other forces bottled it up at both ends. U-boats were unable to surface long enough in the area to charge batteries without being detected. German E-boats and R-boats were driven back to bases whose approaches were mined nightly by planes to make impossible any sudden sortie against the invasion fleet. Heavier ships of the Home Fleet cruised through the North Sea approaches ready to intercept any bigger German warships. Intelligence reports, corroborated by photographs, described hidden big gun emplacements on the coast which had not previously been detected.

Hidden gun emplacements.

At the last minute a German sergeant deserted his Führer and at pistol point forced French fishermen to take him to England. He brought with him valuable details of the Atlantic wall defenses along the Normandy coast. But by that time the Atlantic wall had few secrets from us.

The British had long ago issued an appeal for snap- Appeal shots taken in peacetime by trippers onto the Continent. for From the thousands sent in, valuable details were fer- snupshots. reted out—a narrow lane not shown on any maps that led up behind a cliff on which the Germans had installed

a heavy gun battery; a back alley that curves behind a tourist hotel which the Germans had made into a strong point.

Troops begin to move. As far back as March 29 troops began moving into staging areas, then closer to embarkation ports, then finally to their loading areas. Nearly 2000 special troop trains were run to coastal ports. In the great control room an illuminated map showed the progress of every convoy along the roads to the ports. Meanwhile, in large areas of Britain, evacuated by civilians, troops were training with live ammunition. Rommel's beach obstacles were duplicated and demolition squads practiced taking the sting out of them.

Special landing craft. As a result of the Dieppe experience, special landing craft fitted with rocket batteries were developed to mow down German beach obstructions. Tens of thousands of vehicles were waterproofed for beach landings and equipped with flexible tubing and steel chimneys that reared high above the engines to suck down air to the motors as they plunged through surf up to the drivers' necks. Some 280 British factories were set working day and night and the entire output of Britain's sheet steel rolling mills was taken over for this great job. The intricate task of loading the invasion ships took two years of expert planning.

Endless ammunition dumps. The endless ammunition dumps built up along quiet English lanes actually contained more ammunition than was used in all of World War I. Tanks were parked

tack to track; aircraft stood wing-top to wing-tip; milesong convoys of trucks, bulldozers, ducks and self-propelled guns were parked in fields and at roadsides until Britons wondered if their little island would sink under the weight.

Just 30 days before D Day, the last full-scale invasion Invasion exercise was completed. Tired GIs and Tommies who exercise. had participated in a half-dozen such exercises complained that next time they were called out they wanted to go straight into action. Landing-craft crews who had frequently been sent out on feints to deceive the enemy felt the same. They got their wish.

Seven days before D Day, which was originally set for Monday, June 5, final loading up began.

As the days ticked off, the tension at SHAEF mounted higher and higher, but at the personal headquarters of the commanders there was an atmosphere of calm. Monty left to subordinates the detail work, which he abhors, and read his favorite author, Anthony Trollope.

Eisenhower refused to move into the big house but set Eisenup tent headquarters in the woods. He sleeps in what he hower's calls his "circus wagon," built on a 21/2-ton army truck tent headchassis—an idea borrowed from Monty. Its one room is quarters. littered with an odd assortment of Wild West yarns and psychological novels.

On Friday afternoon, June 2, Prime Minister Churchill and Field Marshal Smuts dropped into Eisenhower's camp after touring the coast to watch loading operations

on the "hards." The three men talked for an hour. Churchill suggested that he should go along with the assault forces on D Day.

Churchill wants to participate in the invasion.

General Eisenhower at first passed off the Prime Minister's remark as a joke, but Churchill returned to the point and finally Eisenhower said flatly that Churchill could not go. He reminded the Prime Minister that if he were lost things would be disorganized in Britain and the whole military operation would be endangered. "Besides," continued Eisenhower, "the warship you'd be on would require more protection than we'd ordinarily give it."

Churchill was persistent. "After all," he said, "I am Minister for National Defense. I can put myself aboard a British warship as an officer. Even the Supreme Commander cannot dictate the complement of a British naval vessel."

While Churchill was speaking in this vein, he was informed that Buckingham Palace was calling him on the telephone. It was the King, who had learned of his Chief Minister's purpose in visiting Eisenhower.

The King stops the Prime Minister. Under no circumstances, said the King, was Mr. Churchill to consider going to France on D Day.

Churchill acceded, in downcast mood.

Saturday evening, June 3, General Eisenhower held the first of four conferences that were to determine D Day, H Hour. The conferees were Monty, neatly dressed for a change, in a new battledress just sent him

from the United States; quiet, soft-spoken Air Chief Marshal Sir Arthur Tedder, Eisenhower's brilliant dep- Conferees uty; Allied Naval Commander in Chief, small, peppery arrive. Admiral Sir Bertram Ramsay, the man who had brilliantly improvised the "operation dynamo" that rescued the troops from Dunkirk.

Last to arrive was Air Chief Marshal Sir Trafford Leigh-Mallory, Commander of the Allied Expeditionary Air Forces. He had flown down from London in his private puddle-jumper aircraft.

Outside in the fading half light of an English summer day, the weather appeared good to a layman's eyes, but to the weather experts at SHAEF the forecast was dis- Weather couraging. There were three chief weather midwives forecast assisting at the birth of the great invasion—two British officers and an American Air Force colonel. For weeks past they had been producing forecasts and charts almost hourly. Now their predictions were not favorable. Weather over the Channel and France would worsen steadily, bringing low ceilings which would cancel out air activity, also high winds and rough seas which would hinder beach landings.

discouraging

Final decision was postponed until 4:30 next morning (Sunday, June 4), and the High Commanders separated to get a few hours' sleep. When they met Sunday morning, the weather men confirmed their earlier forecasts and it was decided to postpone the invasion at least 24 postponed hours. If the weather continued bad, the whole opera- 24 hours.

Full moon needed. tion might have to be set back for weeks until the tides and moon again would be right for landings. For only one day in any month would be really suitable. The moon must be full—to let airborne troops operate effectively, to give our fighter-cover and anti-aircraft a chance to keep the Luftwaffe away, and to make difficult the operation of the Nazis' light-shy but very effective Eboats. The tide had to be at low ebb three hours before dawn to expose underwater obstacles for demolition and make the beach right for H-Hour landing.

On Sunday evening, June 4, the Prime Minister and Smuts—later joined by General de Gaulle—dropped in on Eisenhower and sat for a long time discussing aspects of the momentous decision that was Eisenhower's alone to make. They left, and at nine o'clock, Eisenhower held another staff conference at SHAEF. The weather men were called in singly. Their forecasts, arrived at independently of each other, tallied and they made a more favorable picture. There was every prospect that weather over France and the Channel would steadily improve during the next 48 hours.

Improvement in weather expected.

The High Commanders and their Chiefs of Staff weighed the gamble they were about to take. After 45 minutes, tentative agreement was reached that the invasion would go on. But they decided to hold one last conference at 4:30 on Monday morning, June 5, for the final word.

Back at his caravan, General Eisenhower turned in and slept a few hours. At four o'clock, he went back to SHAEF. Around the table sat Tedder, Montgomery. Leigh-Mallory, Admiral Ramsay and their Chiefs of Staff. The first weather man was called in. He stuck to his original forecast. There was good weather ahead. It might not come for a day or two. On the other hand it might come within 12 hours. The other two weather men, separately questioned, agreed.

General Eisenhower summed up the position to his Commanders. Everything was ready. If they delayed Everything much longer, German reconnaissance aircraft were ready. bound to find out the extent of mass shipping and landing craft assembled off the ports. The American assault force and the United States naval task force were already under weigh and the longer they stayed at sea, the more difficult it would be to keep the many landing craft shepherded into convoys. A few more days under German observation and the invasion might lose its chance of tactical surprise.

The weather was a gamble, General Eisenhower ad- The weather mitted, but it was up to himself and the High Com- a gamble. manders to rise to it, or turn away. They all knew what turning away implied—delay, perhaps weeks; the intricate loading process to be done over again; bad effect on the morale of troops.

Eisenhower turned to Admiral Ramsay and asked, "What do you think?"

The "Air" willing.

Ramsay replied, "I'd like to hear the 'Air' give his views."

Air Chief Marshal Leigh-Mallory spoke with deliberation but left no doubt that "Air" was willing to gamble on the weather experts' predictions.

"All right," said Admiral Ramsay, with mock belligerency, "if the 'Air' thinks he can do it, the Navy certainly can."

General Eisenhower smiled, but only briefly. This was the moment the peoples of the Allied nations had sweated and toiled for. Looking down the table at his commanders, his face more serious than it ever has been or is likely to be again, he said quietly, "Okay, let 'er rip."

"Let'er 11p."

> Those around the table rose quickly and hurried from the room to set the operation in motion. Ike called after them, "Good luck!"

> He was last to emerge from the room. He was walking heavily and those who saw him remarked later that each of the eight stars on his shoulders seemed to weigh a ton. He drove quickly back to his "circus wagon" and turned in without waking his aides. . . .

Supreme Commander useless. With the mammoth operation at last under way, there was no one more useless than the Supreme Commander. During the long day before D Day, General Eisenhower had nothing to do but visit his troops. In the morning, he drove to a nearby port and chatted with British soldiers loading on their LCI's. In the evening he drove to

girfields where men of the 101st U.S. Airborne Division were loading in their transport planes and black gliders. As he rolled up in his four-starred Cadillac at airfield after airfield, the men were already coloring their faces with cocoa and linseed oil. He went about from group to group wisecracking with them, partly to relieve their tension, partly his own.

As the boys climbed into their dark planes, the General called out, "Good luck!" He was noticeably af- "Good fected. To drop several divisions of airborne and para- luck!" troop forces miles behind the Atlantic wall, long before H Hour on the beaches, was a tremendous risk. Many of his own staff officers, British and American, had strongly advised against it. If the beachheads weren't established securely it meant several divisions of superbly trained troops would be lost. The General took the risk. He knew that, in taking it, he was sending some of them to certain death. They knew it, too.

The first phone call on D Day, June 6, came to Eisenhower's office about 7 a.m. Commander Harry Butcher, Eisenhower's friend and naval aide, answered. It was Leigh-Mallory reporting that airborne and paratroop Airborne landings had been unbelievably successful and that the and first assault landings had been successfully made. Butcher paratroop stepped across the cinders to Ike's "circus wagon" expecting to find the General still asleep, but he was in bed successful. propped up behind a Wild West novel. Butcher told him

landings

Leigh-Mallory's news. "Am I glad!" breathed the General.

Germans taken by surprise. Admiral Ramsay reported that the naval part of the show was 100 per cent successful, with few losses. In fact, the landings had taken the Germans entirely by surprise. Ramsay had craftily sent a decoy convoy up through the Channel late on the eve of D Day. The German coastal gunners had opened up with everything they had on the unfortunate decoy convoy and then shut down for the night. Whereupon the real invasion armada sailed unmolested right to its goal.

Comparatively quiet D Day. At breakfast that D-Day morning, General Eisenhower was animated and happy for the first time in months. He talked to Butcher about other D days he'd been on—North Africa, which he directed from Gibraltar; Pantelleria, Sicily, which he directed from Malta; and Salerno. Compared to these, said the General, the invasion of France had produced the quietest D day of all.

The weather remained his biggest worry and even before Butcher had called him he had been out of his caravan, peering up at the skies through the trees. As the sun began occasionally to peep through the clouds he relaxed.

First
signal
from the
beaches.

At the nerve center of SHAEF there was one chilling moment that morning, when the first signal came from the beaches. It was rushed to the Staff Chiefs. They opened the message and read that the first assault wave

had drowned. Faces went white. Then someone asked hurriedly for a repeat on the message. For a minute or two they waited. Then came the repeat. There had been a mistake. The correct message was that the first assault wave had grounded.

Within 48 hours of H Hour, the invasion spearhead had established a foothold in France. And without the frightful toll of casualties which professional pessimists had predicted. On D-plus-six, a week after the invasion began, more than 500 square miles of Europe had been occupied by Allied armies. The battle was by no means over. The lives of many of our bravest and best were Bridgehead vet to be taken. But the bridgehead into France had with France been established.

established

What Philip of Spain and Napoleon failed to do, what Hitler never had courage to try, the Allied armies under Eisenhower had dared and done.

 \forall HIS was it—D Day and almost H Hour. A $_{lust}$ few miles ahead on the low-lying coast of before France, not far from Cherbourg, a lighthouse HHour. winked peacefully. The bridge telegraph tinkled and our engines stopped throbbing. The anchor chain rattled through its hawsehole. Our whistle roared a short, hoarse signal and all around us the silhouettes of dozens of other ships came to rest. It was very quiet there in the moonlight; much too quiet, I thought, as we waited for

the first German gun to blast its challenge from the shore.

Germans unaware. They could hardly believe it in the wardroom of the flagship. Turning from a big wall chart, the Admiral's navigation officer shut his dividers with a snap. "On the nose, by God!" he announced. The intelligence officer rubbed his head. "Not a smell of them all the way across," he said, "and if they knew we were here, they'd have opened up already." The chief of staff smiled his wry smile. "Maybe they're just waiting to give us a surprise when they get us figured out. We can't be that good."

But he was wrong. The big German coastal batteries remained silent, and as nerve-racking minutes ticked by, the battleships, transports and landing craft of our task force slid into their exactly prearranged positions unmolested.

Zigzag course ucross Channel. It was very quiet in the ship, too. We had been steaming all day on a long zigzag course, designed to make the Germans think us heading for Pas de Calais rather than the Cherbourg Peninsula. Spirits were gay during the morning. The long, dull months of training were over at last, and the colossal spectacle we were watching took our minds off what lay ahead. Troops lined the rails as we picked up unit after unit of our tremendous convoy at various meeting places along the coast. There were endless rows of waddling tank and infantry landing ships—their barrage balloons bobbing crazily in the

sky above them-flanked by escort craft of every kind. And then over the horizon came the impressive line of our supporting warships. A deft maneuver brought us into column ahead of the battleship Nevada and the cruisers Tuscaloosa and Quincy. The big guns bristling behind us looked very good. "Gee," said a young soldier "Alot of standing next to me, "that's a lot of cannons."

cannons."

Lagreed happily that it certainly was a lot of cannons. As the afternoon wore on, tension grew. Everybody was being very polite. On the bridge, even the crusty officer who ran the ship gave orders less brusquely than usual. But there were no jitters, no traces of hysteria. A leathery Marine colonel, veteran of many battles, managed a wintry smile and said that, for green troops, the Troops kids looked pretty promising. Coming from him, that look was praise indeed.

promising.

When an alarm bell suddenly began to clang and a bosun's rasping voice came over the intercom-"All hands man your battle stations!"—the call to general quarters was welcome relief. There really was a Nazi plane ahead this time. It was 10:30 p. m. But nothing happened.

In the combat intelligence room—nerve center of the Admiral's command post—a vast picture of the big crossing was unfolding. We were one of two invasion T_{tvo} forces—American, under Rear Admiral Alan Kirk, invasion U.S.N., and British, under Sir Philip Vian, Royal Navy. forces. Five thousand ships were moving across the English

Intricate communications system.

Channel, assembled from several dozen ports and routed on exact schedule through narrow lanes swept and marked by minesweepers several hours before. The two task force commanders were linked with each other and with Supreme Headquarters ashore by the most intricate military communications system ever devised.

There was surprisingly little activity, however. The operation plan covered all details of every ship's movements and it worked like a clock.

It was about 1:30 in the morning of June 6 when an officer in the combat intelligence room suddenly barked; "Two hundred planes coming over."

"Enemy?" shrilled a young officer.

"No," said the commander, "they'll be the airborne boys."

Airborne transports. And they were. One, two, three, and then score after score of the big transports thundered by overhead. On the peninsula, German flak began roaring and search-lights swept the sky.

A few minutes later, the commander turned to the radioman monitoring German military stations, alert for the first sudden burst of activity. "Well?" he asked. We held our breaths. "Still very light traffic, sir," said the British expert, reading a Western thriller as he twiddled his dials. He was very efficient, and he always caught everything worth catching, but he considered the war, as he told me, a very dull way of earning one's living. He wasn't at all disturbed, as I was, about the

danger of German searchlights picking us up. Fortunately, when they started poking around, the beams were deflected by clouds, and the Nazis apparently decided it was just another air raid. The coastal batteries which Coastal could have given us terrible punishment were still silent. batteries

We knew that just then airborne divisions were going stlent. down. Parachutists went down first, to clear strategic fields of the poles and other traps which the Germansforewarned by careless publicity of the scope of our airborne operations—had set for gliders. The parachutists worked quickly with grenades and mine detectors, but the glidermen suffered casualties nevertheless.

Along the beaches, Commandos and Rangers were busy, too. A dozen large units were mopping up crucial strong points, overrunning coastal batteries and wrecking communications centers. One of the most powerful German coast-defense batteries was tucked away in a huge concrete fortress, almost impregnable even to air and artillery attack. Immensely massive steel doors barricaded its entrance. Two Commandos stole a German staff car and, yelling, "Die Invasion hat begonnen!" at "Die the top of their lungs, they careened up to the sentries Invasion and startled them into opening the gates wide enough to begonnen! throw in their bombs. After that the gates could not be closed, and within a few minutes the last of the German garrison fell under a hail of lead from the Commandos' tommyguns.

Preinvasion raiders.

Up and down 60 miles of coast, the preinvasion raiders were doing their work on schedule. Their incredible exploits will make one of the greatest chapters in military history.

All this, however, seemed very far away to us on the Admiral's flagship. As the reports came in, a bell would ring. The commander would read the message and put a new sticker on his chart. Finally, at three o'clock, the silence ahead of us split wide open. Pathfinder planes of the RAF had roared by overhead. Huge chandelier flares, red and green, came down over the beach. And then all hell broke loose. Geysers of fire and sand in closely patterned rows flashed upward as bombers, following their guides, laid down stick after stick. German flak spat from all directions, their tracers arching fantastic fireworks into the sky. They were pretty accurate and from time to time a mortally wounded plane would plunge blazing earthward like a meteor, ending in a leaping flash of fire as it struck the ground.

Enemy fire pretty accurate.

On the bridge, a veteran captain—seemingly oblivious of the din—gave orders for lowering landing craft from our davits. He paused to look at the booming, lethal pyrotechnics and remarked to another correspondent and me that they reminded him of a "hell of a Fourth of July" he remembered as a kid.

Like Fourth of July.

All around us landing boats were forming circles ready to take off the troops from transports for the dash ashore. "Boat team number five form at station three"

came the bosun's bored voice over the loudspeaker system.

Dawn was breaking, and on the flag bridge, the Admiral and the General commanding the division we were putting ashore were worried. The waves were too High high and the landing craft were bobbing around like waves. corks. Troops clambering down the nets were having a tough time. Every time a GI landed with a smack on the bottom of his boat—his tin hat flying in one direction, his gun in the other—our hearts went into our throats. Was this going to be the catastrophe we had iust avoided in the Sicilian landing?

Somehow at last the landing craft were loaded. The Landing bleak strained faces at command positions began to relax. craft At 5:40—as though at touch of a button—the warships loaded. ahead of us began bellowing. Our teeth rattled as flash followed flash and shells of every caliber whined from the battleships, cruisers and destroyers into the beach. Over the whole assault area, 600 guns in 80 ships put down 2000 tons of explosives in ten minutes.

Actually both the bombing and the naval gunnery were the most carefully prepared and coördinated bar- Coördinated rage of the war. On the highly important chart in the barrage. wardroom which scheduled the attack of every bomber squadron and the fire of every ship in our task force, German positions and batteries were marked. Their priority for attention had been decided according to their size, range and ability to interfere with our operation.

Coastal batteries destroyed. One coastal battery particularly, set in the side of a hill and practically invulnerable to air attack, could have mauled us badly while unloading. "That one, gentlemen," the Admiral had said at pre-D Day briefing, "is a must." Salvos of 14-inch shells from one of our battle ships began hitting it precisely on schedule and, when a Ranger party arrived there a little later for mopping up, they found not one live German in the fortification.

Beautiful shooting. Small, slow spotting planes cruised lazily over the target areas, their observers talking directly to their fire-control officers afloat and correcting aim as the shells came over. It was beautiful shooting and at almost regular intervals the commander in our intelligence room put a new sticker against one of the red rings on the chart. "DESTROYED," it said.

Demolition

crews.

Behind this curtain, the loaded landing boats formed exactly spaced waves for the final run to the beach. Heading them, Navy scouts in control craft found the exact boundaries of assigned beaches—no easy job in the dust and smoke of a bombardment which had blasted almost every recognizable landmark, and in the teeth of machine-gun and vicious mortar fire. The scouts guided in demolition crews of the naval beach battalion who, with their bombs and Bangalore torpedoes, had to blast a way through the maze of hedgehog-like steel structures, upended rails, barbed wire and mines. We could see them calmly paddling boats and setting their charges, with lead and steel slapping the water all around them. The



D-DAY, JUNE 6, 1944 NAZI UNDERWATI'R OBSTACITS ARI RIVI ALLI IN THE HEBING HOF ON A NORMANDA BEACH. IN THE FOREGROUND ARE ALLIED VEHICLES WRICKED DURING THE LANDANG OPERATIONS (Pages 248) THOM AN OLLICIME G.S. NAVA PRIOTOGRAPH

leaders of this toughest job were men with Mediterranean experience, but the rest were boys being shot at for the first time.

Through cleared channels came like clockwork the personnel landing craft loaded with troops, and tank Personnel landing craft, with tanks firing from them. Over their landing heads and from the flanks, rocket craft sent fantastic salvos swishing, to explode mines on shore with their closely patterned miniature earthquakes and to tear open harbed wire. Small fast rocket craft, motor torpedo boats, flak ships and destroyers close inshore poured a last burst of drenching fire, then again as by clockwork. the curtain lifted and the leading landing craft rammed their bows into the sand, to drop ramps and discharge line after line of crouching, running, firing men and roaring tanks.

It was H Hour and the invasion had begun.

H How.

On and behind some of the beaches in the hours just before and after H, bad luck and mistakes caused heavy losses. One airborne outfit struck an area which the Germans happened to be using for anti-invasion maneuvers. Nazi machine gunners were in place and waiting as the Allied troops stepped out of the gliders. In one beach sector, the landing force struck an accidental last-minute German troop concentration.

The weather was not at all cooperative. Four-foot The weather waves delayed troop loading at some places by over 60 is not minutes past schedule. By that time, the fast Normandy cooperative.

tide had dropped sharply, landing craft grounded far out and left men wading through four feet of water and under leaden hail without cover. The delay let the Germans regroup their artillery and it cost us lives, but it did not give them time to bring up sizable reinforcements which might have caused disaster.

Complete surprive.

On the whole, however, surprise was complete. The picture I had seen ahead of me was repeated on beaches up and down the line. The Germans had, as a gold-braided wit said, been "caught with their panzers down." The American and Royal navies had fulfilled Admiral Ramsay's promise to Eisenhower—"We will land you there to the inch." "The miracle," as Ernie Pyle wrote, "of landing there at all" had been accomplished.

Beachheads
are unlike
anything
else on
eath.

HIS Normandy beachhead of ours is the fourth beachhead I have been on in the last two years. All beachheads are unlike anything else on earth. Thousands of things are going on at once, from life to death, from hysterical triumph to crushing failure. Night is different from day only because the light is poorer, the tracer bullets more lurid, the waves creamier and your particular task either harder or easier. You work until your job is done or your superior feels too exhausted to work you any longer. Then you sleep until prodded awake by explosions or bullets or some other urgency.

Our first view of France, from the U.S. Coast Guard troop transport that carried us across the Channel, was that reflected by anti-aircraft shells lighting up the night Anti-aircraft above Normandy. It was a little past 1 a.m. on D Day, shells. and paratroopers were beginning to land, their planes showered by whole buckets of blazing shells and golfhall flak. One plane went down, then another and another, in plain sight of our ship, while our men stood silently in the darkness, their faces grim and their hearts sick.

The transport anchored about 11 miles offshore, and at dawn, after a terrific naval and air bombardment of the beaches, we transferred to small boats for the land- Transfer ing. The boats were being thrown five and ten feet to small into the air and digging deep into the troughs between the waves, and the leap from the slippery ladder to a greasy hatch had to be timed nicely.

landing boats.

To the right and left and ahead and behind, farther than a man could see, the scene was the same—a spreading mass of ships lying to, waiting patiently as cows to be unloaded, each deep laden and teeming with men and goods. The waters between them were teeming too, with small boats threading back and forth and hanging to the sides of the larger vessels like the metal spangles of a tambourine.

We passed under a sky full of airplanes laid layer Sky upon layer on top of each other. We passed warships full of bombarding the enemy, and saw the splashes of enemy an planes.

shells trying to hit the ships. An inferno was brewing on the beach; smoke was clotting up from it, and blinding white and orange blasts of explosions flickered hotly.

Then the war reached out a giant paw and struck dead ahead of us. There was a big explosion. Gray smoke and white water rose hundreds of feet into the air. Out of its center a mortally stricken minesweeper plunged and tilted, bleeding oil in spouts as if an artery had been severed. Then it righted itself and lay quietly, with the big gaseous-looking bubbling that ships make when they die.

Stricken minesweeper.

Standing by to pick up survivors, we came first to those who had been blown farthest by the explosion. They were all dead. "Leave the dead and take the living first," cried Lieutenant John Tripson.

And then, from all over the sea around us, sounding small and childlike in the wild world of waters, came cries of "Help! Help!" and one startling, pathetic cry of "Please help me!"

"Help! Help!"

Big John Tripson is a Mississippi boy who used to play football for the Detroit Lions. His strength came in handy now. The wet boys in the sea with all they had on them weighed up to 300 pounds. Big John reached out and scooped them up with one hand, holding onto the boat with the other. We fished six out of the water, two of them uninjured, taking only the living and leaving the dead awash like derelicts in the unheeding sea. One man was naked. Every stitch of clothing.

including his shoes and socks, had been blown off and Clothes his body was welted all over as if he had been thrashed blown off. by a cat-o'-nine-tails.

Other rescue ships had come alongside the minesweeper now, and we stood out again on our mission. Close to us was the U.S. cruiser Tuscaloosa. A German battery had challenged her, and she and an American destroyer had taken up the challenge. The Germans were using a very fine smokeless powder that made it impossible to spot their gun sites unless one happened German to be looking right there when the muzzle flash gave gun sites them away. They also had some kind of bellows arrange-protected. ment that puffed out a billow of gun smoke from a position safely removed from the actual battery. This was to throw off the spotters. But their best protection was the casements of earth-and-concrete 121/2 feet thick.

The affair between the battery and the warships had the color of a duel to it. When the Germans threw down the gauntlet you could see the gauntlet splash in the water. It was a range-finding shell. Then the shells started walking toward our warship, in a straight line. If you Duel followed them on back you would eventually get to the between battery. This was what our warship commanders were trying to do. It was a race between skills. If the Germans warships. landed on the ship before our gunners could plot the line of their shells, then they would win. If our gunners could calculate more rapidly, then we would win.

batterv

Captain Waller, in command of the *Tuscaloosa*, held his \$15,000,000 warship steady, setting it up as bait to keep the Germans shooting while his gunners worked out their calculations.

Salvos come closer and closer. The destroyer—I could not identify it—stuck right with our cruiser. The splashes kept coming closer. Our ships did not move. The splashes started at 500 yards off and then went quickly to 300 yards. Now, I thought, the warships would move. But they remained silent and motionless. The next salvo was 200 yards off. The next one would do it, the next one would get them, I was thinking. The next salvo blotted out the sides of the vessels in a whip of white water, throwing a cascade across the deck of the *Tuscaloosa*.

Now in this final second the race was at its climax. The Germans knew our ships would move. They had to guess which way, they had to race to correct range and deflection for the next salvo. Our ships had to guess what the Germans would think, and do the opposite.

Gust of
black
smoke
fools the
Germans.

The destroyer had one little last trick up its sleeve. And that tipped the whole duel our way. Its black gang down below mixed rich on fuel, and a gust of black smoke poured out of the stacks. The ship had turned into the wind, so that the smoke was carried backward. The Germans could not tell whether it was the wind doing that or the destroyer's forward speed. They decided that it was forward speed and swung their guns, and straddled perfectly the position the destroyer would have occu-

pied had it gone forward. But the destroyer had reversed engines and gone backward.

Now the game was up for the Huns. The warships The game swung around in their new positions and brought their guns to bear; their shells scored direct hits, and the Germans lay silently and hopelessly in their earth.

is up for the

On the first beach we touched the air smelled sweet and clean with the sea. Clouds of sea gulls swooped overhead, filling the air with a whole twitter of flute notes as they complained of the invasion by American troops. There was bleak strength here, and bare wild blowy beauty, and death over every inch of it.

The Germans had sown every single inch of the soil Every inch with mines. In 24 hours our men had cleared only nar- of soil row paths, losing 17 wounded and one dead in doing so.

mined.

They walked, slept, ate, lived and worked along those paths. When they walked they put one foot carefully before the other. When they lay along the paths to sleep they put rocks alongside themselves to keep from turning over.

We had landed in the early afternoon. The wind was dying then, and the black and gray smoke stood up in Spires spires wherever one looked and hung in the gentle wind. of Smoke came from planes that had been shot down and from mines being set off by mine detectors and from American guns and German shells. Normandy seemed to be burning.

smoke.

Men land and go to work. Men were coming out of the sea continually and starting to work—digging, hammering, bulldozing, trucking, planning, ordering, surveying, shooting and being shot at. Amid the artillery and machine-gun fire, and the rush and smack of shells, you could hear typewriters making their patient clatter and telephones ringing with homey businesslike sounds.

German prisoners were coming down one side of a road while American assault infantry were going up the other side. The Americans had that odd preoccupied look of men going into battle; but they were a fine, bold, brawny sight as they swung along.

Each
soldier
follows
the man
ahead.

"Where are you going?" I asked one of them. "I don't know," he replied. "I'm following the man ahead." The man ahead was following the man ahead, too. Finally I asked the head of the column. "I'm following the column ahead," he said.

I laughed and he laughed, but he laughed with a jubilant sound. "Well," he told me, "it's not as bad as it sounds. We've all got the same idea in this army, and if you just follow the man ahead you're bound to get to where the doing is to be done." He looked very tan and healthy as he said this, walking along with a long-legged slouch, chewing a slab of cheese from a ration tin as if it were a cud of tobacco. He was a soldier to be proud of.

Our men would go along until fired upon. Then they would investigate what was firing on them. If they had

enough force on hand to solve the problem, as the military saying goes, they solved it. If not, they contained the problem and sent for what force was needed-air, artillery or ground reinforcement.

The first French people I saw were a family of typical Norman farmers-tall, blue-eyed, sturdy and very red- Norman theeked. American soldiers going up to the front had left farmers. the mark of their passing on the household's dining table-chewing gum, hard candy and some cigarettes. We talked about the bombardment, and I asked how they managed to live through it.

"An act of God," they said. "But the Germans, they Bombardwere worse than the bombardment."

ment "An act of God."

I had forgotten what the French word for "run" is. and I asked if the German soldiers billeted in their house had "promenaded away quickly" from the bombardment. They all laughed heartily.

"The Germans," one of the men said, "promenaded from the bombardment-ZIP! The way an airplane promenades through the air."

The Germans were tough veteran fighters. You never got a chance to make more than one mistake against them. Yet they were willing to surrender and seemed only to want sufficiently strong inducement. They were Germans veterans of duty in Russia. The Russians seem to have are tough made them very tired of the war. They fight while they think they are winning, but it is not hard to hammer them into believing they are losing. Then they give up.

veteran fighters. German prisoners on the beach. When I returned to the beach more German prisoners were being brought down to await transportation to England. The bay and its immense weight of shipping was spread out before them. A German officer, when he saw that vast mass of ships, lifted his hand and let it drop in a gesture of utter despair, as if to say, "Who can win against this?"

But the thing I remember most clearly about this long day was a particular moment in the twilight. It is a picture frozen in my mind—the way a scream sometimes seems frozen in the air.

I was aboard an LCT moving both American and German wounded from the murderous beach. The Nazi prisoners sat silently slumped side by side with the silent Americans. We were a few hundred yards offshore when there was a low-swooping air raid which came close enough for me to feel the desperate heat of one Hun plane. It hit like a bundle of fists against my face.

Low-swooping air raid.

Very few of the men aboard stirred. Most of them were immersed in the apathy that seizes a man when he knows he has done all he can possibly do.

A large, sooty cloud of smoke sprang up from the beach as abruptly as if prodded. Our LCT trembled all over. There was debris in that cloud—big, black, torn chunks of it—and sitting on top of the cloud, poised delicately there for a moment many feet in the air, was a truck, all intact. It was silhouetted so sharply in the twilight that I could make out its wheels. Then the blasting

Truck
on a
cloud.

sound of the explosion came clapping like a huge hand against our ears.

A German officer told me the war would be over in War will October because the Americans and Russians could not be over right longer than that. I told him that all the enlisted men among the Germans I had spoken to had agreed the war would be over in October because Germany could not hold out longer.

in October.

"Your men seem very tired of fighting," I said. "Do you have trouble convincing them that Hitler will lead them to a happy end?"

"German soldiers," he said, "fight for the Fatherland and there is no separation possible in any German mind Das Vaterbetween Der Führer and Das Vaterland."

Der Führer and land.

As the officer delivered his pronouncement about Hitler and the German mind an enlisted man sitting next to him winked at me. I smiled broadly back at him.

Suddenly I saw a German Heinkel seemingly stuck in the air above me. I saw the first of its stick of bombs drop into the water. Then I threw myself against the iron deck. The German officer clamped down on his emotions and the pain of his wounds and stood erect to show that no German was afraid. He posed himself insolently against the rail, smoking a cigarette in a care- Nazi ful, graceful, stiff-handed way while one knee wilted superman. slightly in the manner approved for gentlemen posing before a mantel. I looked away in disgust from this Nazi

superman across the open deck where the brown-blanketed seriously wounded lay in silent rows.

Fires in Montebourg. As we made our way out into the darkening sea we could see fires springing up from the town of Montebourg. The fires were the work of the *Tuscaloosa*—or, as I found out later when I got aboard the vessel, more specifically the work of the Army's Lieutenant Joe PuGash, of Tampa, serving as spotter with a naval shore fire control party; and Lieutenants Theral O'Bryant, of Tampa, and William Braybrook, of Ohio, sitting deep in the ship, in the plotting room. These boys had been talking to each other over the radio.

Radio conversation.

"German infantry is entrenching itself in the main square of the town," Joe said. "Let's ginger them up." The guns fired.

"Cease firing; mission successful, old boy," said Joe Two roads lead into Montebourg. The Germans were shoveling reinforcements down from Valognes. Joe was changing places to get a line on these roads when suddenly in a very abrupt way he gave a target and cried. "Open fire!"

"Open fire!"

Immediately afterward there was silence from him.

O'Bryant sat listening to the silence from Joe for a long time. A British voice from a plane overhead brought him back to work.

"There are transports coming into town, troops getting out of trucks and taking up positions near a cemetery there." The voice was tranquil and most British. "Would British vou care for a go at them?"

tranquility.

After the Tuscaloosa had fired a salvo the British voice lost most of its tranquillity. "Beautiful!" it cried. "Oh, beautiful! What a lovely shot!"

It seems that ten trucks full of Huns had been blown across acres of field by a single straddle. The British voice abruptly regained its calm. "I'm afraid I'll have to be off now," it said. "My covering plane has been shot down and a Jerry is shooting at me. Good-bye all."

"The best to you and thanks," shouted O'Bryant. But he never heard the British voice again.

Instead he heard from Joe. The boy was back overlooking Montebourg.

"I couldn't keep on spotting for you," he explained. The He sounded very tired. "The Germans had us in a barrel spotter. for two hours and if I had lifted my head to see what was going on I'd have got it knocked off." Joe began running around all over the place, spotting infantry positions, troop movements, observation posts and strong points. "You sure shot the hell out of them that time," he kept saying in his tired voice.

About the time we were huffing and clanking past the Tuscaloosa, O'Bryant came out on deck for a breather. He helped us watch Montebourg burn. "That Joe is sure building himself up a hot time there," he said.

The wounded to whom I talked gave some idea of Wounded what the day had been like. A paratrooper captain said, paratrooper.

Leg broken in landing. "When I landed I broke my leg. I had spent two years training, and four seconds after I go to work I'm out of it. I rolled into some kind of ditch. There the krautburgers were shooting at me but they didn't hit me. I waited in the ditch and thought, Well, your total contribution to the war effort is that you spared the time of a man in the burying detail by finding your own grave. A German started coming toward me. What's the German for Kamerad, I wondered, and remembered that Kamerad is the German for Kamerad. Then I thought, the hell with that. I'm going to get at least one lick in in this war. So I killed the German. I waited till he got close and aimed for his groin and walked my tommygun right up the middle to his chin. Then I passed out. But I got one. My training wasn't altogether wasted."

Training not wasted.

A naval officer, suffering from exposure, said: "The whole stern blew up. You know, it's a funny thing. There was a kid blown higher than the mast. I saw him in the air, arms flailing around, legs kicking, and recognized his face there in the air. That kid was picked up later and all he had was a broken leg."

A glider pilot, shot down behind German lines, said, "I walked all night. I went toward where the guns were shooting and then I met a Frenchman. I gave him my rations and he gave me wine.

Glider pilot gets drunk. "Boy, did I get drunk! I walked through the whole German lines—and our lines, too—drunk as a goat and singing."

[June 15, 1944. United States troops invade Saipan Impossible Island in the Mariana group. England is attacked by to record robot bombs launched from Pas-de-Calais area. B-29 everything. Superfortresses bomb Japan. June 19. Task Force 58 off Philippine Islands repulses large Japanese sea force. June G.I. Bill of Rights is signed by President Roosevelt. June 27. Allies capture Cherbourg. July 1-22. Delegates to the United Nations Monetary and Financial Conference at Bretton Woods, N.H., agree to establish Inter- Bretton national Monetary Fund. July 8. United States forces Woods complete conquest of Saipan. July 20. Guam is invaded by United States assault forces. July 31. United States Marines gain control of Tinian Island in the Marianas after 9-day battle. August 10. Conquest of Guam is completed. August 15. American and French troops invade outhern coast of France. August 25. Paris is liberated.

Conference.

V-DAY IN PARIS

(A.D. 1944)

ERNIE PYLE

E ARE in Paris—on the first day of liberation—one of the great days of all time. This One of the is being written, as other correspondents are great days writing their pieces, under an emotional tension, a pent- of all time. up semi-delirium.

Our approach to Paris was hectic. We had waited for three days in a nearby town while hourly our reports on what was going on in Paris changed and contradicted themselves. We were about to break through the German ring around Paris and come to the aid of the brave French Forces of the Interior who were holding parts of the city. We could not bear to think of the destruction of Paris, and yet at times it seemed inevitable.

That was the situation this morning when we left Rambouillet and decided to feel our way timidly toward the very outskirts of Paris. For fifteen minutes we drove Approach through a flat gardenlike country under a magnificent to Paris. bright sun and amidst greenery, with distant banks of

From "Brave Men," by permission of Henry Holt and Company.

Pandemonum of great 10y. smoke pillaring the horizon ahead. And then we came gradually into the suburbs, and a pandemonium of surely the greatest joy that has ever happened.

The streets were lined as by Fourth of July parade crowds at home, only this crowd was almost hysterical. The streets of Paris are very wide, and they were packed on each side. The women were all brightly dressed, with flowers in their hair and big flashy earrings. Everybody was throwing flowers, and even serpentine.

As our jeep eased through the crowds, thousands of people crowded up, leaving only a narrow corridor, and frantic men, women and children grabbed us and kissed us and shook our hands and beat on our shoulders and slapped our backs and shouted their joy as we passed.

That first afternoon only the main streets into the city were open and used, and they were packed with humanity. The side streets were roped off and deserted, because the Germans had feeble fortifications and some snipers.

The second day was a little different from the first. You could sense that during those first few hours of liberation the people were almost animal-like in their panic of joy and relief and gratitude. They were actually crying as they kissed you and screamed, "Thank you, oh thank you, for coming!"

Second day a prepared festival. But on the second day it was a deliberate holiday. It was a festival prepared for and gone into on purpose. You could tell that the women had prettied up especially.

The old men had on their old medals, and the children were scrubbed and Sunday-dressed until they hurt.

And then everybody came downtown. By 2 in the afternoon the kissing and shouting and autographing and applauding were almost deafening. The pandemonium of a free and lovable Paris reigned again.

Welcome and applause from Paris crowds.

They pinned bright little flags and badges all over you. Amateur cameramen took pictures. They tossed flowers and friendly tomatoes into our jeep. One little girl even threw a bottle of cider into ours.

As you drove along, gigantic masses of waving and screaming humanity clapped their hands as though applauding a fine performance in a theater. We in the jeeps smiled back until we had set grins on our faces. We waved until our arms gave out, and then we just waggled our fingers. We shook hands until our hands were bruised and scratched. If the jeep stopped, we were swamped instantly.

They sang songs. They sang wonderful French songs Songs of we had never heard. And they sang "Tipperary" and the freed "Madelon" and "Over There" and the "Marseillaise." Parisians.

I was in a jeep with Henry Gorrell of the United Press, Capt. Carl Pergler of Washington, D. C., and Corp. Alexander Belon, of Amherst, Massachusetts. Everybody, even beautiful girls, insisted on kissing us on both cheeks. Somehow I got started kissing babies that were held up by their parents, and for a while I looked like a baby-kissing politician. The fact that I hadn't shaved

A.D. 1944

for days, and was gray-bearded as well as baldheaded, made no difference.

The streets were lined with green trees and modern buildings. All the stores were closed in holiday. Bicycles were so thick I have an idea there have been plenty of accidents today, with tanks and jeeps overrunning the populace. Of all the days of national joy I ever witnessed, this is the biggest.

Biggest day of national joy.

Germany is invaded.

Paratroopers escape Arnhem trap

[August 21-October 7, 1944. Delegates to the Dumbarton Oaks Conference draw up United Nations Char. ter. August 30. Soviet troops take Rumanian oil city of Ploesti. September 3. Allies capture Brussels. September 4. Antwerp capitulates to Allied troops. September II. Germany is invaded for the first time since start of the war. September 11-16. President Roosevelt and Prime Minister Churchill confer at Second Quebec Conference. September 12. German garrison at Le Havre falls to Allies. Rumania signs armistice with the United Nations. September 15. United States Marines invade Peleliu Island in the Palau group. Morotai Island is also invaded by American troops. September 24. British forces land on Greek mainland. September 25-27. Approximately 2,000 survivors of 8,000 British paratroopers escape German trap at Arnhem. October 18. Hitler announces creation of volksstrum (home army) to defend the Reich. All German males between 16 and 60 are mobilized. October 20. United States forces under Gen-

eral MacArthur invade Leyte Island in the Philippines. Leyte Island October 21. German city of Aachen falls to Allies. Oc- is invaded. tober 23-26. United States Pacific Fleet decisively defeats Japanese Navy in Second Battle of the Philippine Sea.]

AMERICA'S GREATEST NAVAL BATTLE

(A.D. 1944)

OUENTIN REYNOLDS—GEORGE E. JONES— FRANK D. MORRIS-RALPH TEATSORTH

DMIRAL William F. "Bull" Halsey is a legend in and out of the United States Navy. His men Nadmire him because he is a fighting admiral and because he speaks their blunt, salty language. His hunches, born of experience, pure instinct, and hatred of the Japs, seem to put his forces in the right place at the right time.

For instance, his ships seemed to be in the right place Halsey's late on the afternoon of October 16th, when an American ships pilot on patrol sighted a force of Japanese cruisers and destroyers moving at high speed from the northeast to-place at ward a mighty American fleet, waiting just over the right time. horizon.

always in the right

When Halsey got word of the approaching Jap force he felt sure his prayers were being answered. So did Vice-Admiral Marc Mitscher, commander of the famous carrier task force which included the Essex, Lexington, Hornet, Wasp and Enterprise. Their planes had been roving the Philippines area for the past two months,

Condensed from article written by Quentin Reynolds, George E. Jones, Frank D. Morris, and Ralph Teatsorth for Collier's, The National Weekly. blasting some two hundred Jap airfields and knocking down more hundreds of Jap planes.

Ordnance crews work late. Aboard Mitscher's many carriers, ordnance crews in yellow helmets worked late that night filling the bomb racks of the Hell-divers, the torpedo bays of the Avengers and the machine-gun ammunition belts of the Hellcat fighters.

Then—at the last moment—Bull Halsey's luck ran out. The Jap force sighted his patrol planes at dawn, and turned tail. Bull was disappointed but not discouraged. He had repeatedly challenged the Japs to slug it out and he knew there were ways to force them to accept the challenge eventually.

Plans for the next step. He sat down aboard his flagship with Rear Admiral "Mick" Carney, his brilliant chief of staff, and commanders of other fleet units hunched over a huge round table in Halsey's living quarters and began mapping the next step. It was then that the Second Battle of the Philippines began to move from the preliminary to the decisive stage that was to come hardly a week later.

The next step in the war in the Pacific had called for invasion of the Jap-held island of Yap in the Carolines. But Bull Halsey had a better idea. Why not by-pass Yap, he suggested, and take advantage of the terrific pounding which Mitscher's task force had been giving the Japs in the Philippines for the past six weeks? Why not speed up the schedule and invade the Philippines at once? The proposal was passed along to higher authority. General

Why not invade the Philippines? Douglas MacArthur was willing and, by herculean effort. could be ready. Admiral Nimitz gave the go-ahead signal. Throughout the vast Pacific war zone there was a sudden switch to breakneck tempo.

The 7,000 islands and islets of the Philippines are a scattered handful of giant green boulders guarding the western approach to the South China Sea. The main islands are Luzon, with the capital of Manila, on the north, and Mindanao on the south, spreading over 77,720 square miles. Some 275 miles north of Luzon is Japan's Japanese Formosa island, while to the south of Mindanao lies the bastion of 700-miles-wide Celebes Sea and then Jap-held Celebes, 1ungles and flanked by Borneo. This was the bastion Japan must hold; a green bastion of jungles, and swamps, and rugged hills and scattered towns—except that it was not all green on the morning of October 20th. Great columns of flame and smoke spurted up from Leyte island, midway between Luzon and Mindanao, where two units of the U. S. Fleet, working with Lieutenant General George C. Kenney's Fifth Air Force, lambasted Jap defenses and hammered Jap airfields, while planes from Halsey's Third Fleet shellacked airfields in the northern Philippines. MacArthur, striking midway between the main lands on Philippine islands, began his landing on Leyte.

swamps.

This return to the Philippines was the culmination of everything that had gone before—the Marshalls, the Gilberts, the Marianas and the other historic steppingstones -and it also made inevitable the greatest naval battle in

Levte.

Naval battle inevitable. our history, the battle that the enemy had been avoiding. The landings had been made. Now it was up to Nimitz's Navy to protect the ground troops from Jap naval and air attacks which everyone from the admiral down to the newest messboy in the Fleet knew would come. But where was the Jap fleet? MacArthur's ground forces stabbed inland the next day, given air support by the baby flat-tops that stayed near his transports in Leyte Gulf. Another day passed.

Submarines locate Japanese fleet. Before dawn on Monday, October 23d, one of our submarines patrolling the South China Sea, on the other side of the Philippines, was cruising on the surface to recharge her batteries when a large group of ships was contacted. The skipper knew, from Intelligence reports, that they weren't ours. They must be Japs. Another American sub in the same area also located the warships which were moving northeast, probably from Singapore, through Palawan passage.

"We are moving in to attack." A crackling radio message carried the news to Halsey's flagship. The final sentence of the message is typical of submariners: "We are moving in to attack." But that was enough to tell Bull Halsey where the Japs were making their first move on this vast, azure checkerboard. That was the beginning.

The Americans had found a submarine commander's dream come true. They moved in close and four projectiles darted straight for each of three heavy cruisers. Explosions sent them lurching through the sea.

AD. 1944

Twelve direct hits in a single attack broke the enemy Twelve armada's precise formation. The ships swerved and direct dodged in confusion; milled about like stampeding hits. cattle. Two of the big cruisers shuddered and lay dead in the water, torn and smoking and sinking. A third hobbled uncertainly away, with doubtful chances of reaching safety. But after the first confusion, the Japanese ships reassembled and again took on the appearance of an armada. Their destination was obvious: Leyte. Their purpose was just as obvious: to destroy MacArthur's transports and carriers and pin our invasion forces down without supplies or aerial protection and then to erase them at leisure.

On the afternoon of October 23d, the word began to drift through American warships from flag bridge to engine room: "The Jap fleet is coming out." That night the information crystallized, and the aviators, assembling in the air-conditioned ready rooms, saw the approaching The shadow of battle as they received their instructions for approach the next day:

of battle.

"Our subs have located and attacked a force of enemy ships. We think the Jap fleet has come out to fight."

The men of the Third Fleet had been in action since August, getting fuel and supplies at sea. They badly missed the occasional feel of firm ground under their feet, the change from monotonous life between the same steel bulkheads where they looked at the same faces day after day.

The airmen had matured; lines developed around their eyes and mouths as they went out on a timetable schedule to pound the enemy. The pilots had been looking forward hungrily to a rest, but Third Fleet veterans now prophesied: "If Bull Halsey sees a chance to beat hell out of the Jap Fleet and get this war over sooner, he won't give a damn about you or me or himself or anything."

Necessary to anticipate the enemy's plans. Now Halsey had to anticipate the enemy's plans. There were two logical routes for the Japs to take. One led across the Mindanao Sea and through Surigao Strait, southeast of Leyte, and thence to our beachhead on Leyte Gulf. The other route, longer but safer for the enemy, led across the Sibuyan Sea, northwest of Leyte, through San Bernardino Strait and thence southward through the Philippine Sea, past Samar, to Leyte Gulf. The Japs might follow either route—or they might split and follow both routes and thus converge on Leyte Gulf from both north and south, pincers fashion.

Japanese Southern Fleet attempts pincers movement. Later on October 23d, it had become evident that the Japanese Southern Fleet from Singapore, reinforced by ships from the Philippines, had split and was attempting the pincers movement. An American sub contacted the enemy near Mindoro Strait, just south of Manila, and torpedoed another heavy cruiser, which was severely damaged and driven into Manila Bay.

Now almost all of the pieces were in place on the checkerboard. There were uncertainties, of course, and

there were errors of judgment but the picture fell naturally into three parts; a three-ring naval circus. The line-up Three-ring was:

naval circus.

Ring One, in the south: The Japanese Southern Fleet from Singapore had split in two, and the battleships Fuso and Yamashiro, accompanied by two light cruisers. two heavy cruisers and eight or ten destroyers, were cut- Ring One ting across the Mindanao Sea to narrow Surigao Strait, in the south. from which they intended to emerge and attack our Levte Gulf beachhead from the south. Our Seventh Fleet under Admiral Kinkaid was disposed across the tenmiles-wide strait to meet this threat.

Ring Two, in the center: The remaining and larger Ring Two part of the Jap's Southern Fleet was steaming northeast- in the center. ward through the Sibuyan Sea toward San Bernardino Strait from which they intended to attack our Leyte Gulf beachhead from the north. This enemy force included five battleships—the new, speedy Yamato and Musashi, and the older Nagato, the Kongo, and the Haruna—as well as seven heavy cruisers, one light cruiser and about 15 destroyers.

Ring Three in the north: Halsey's Third Fleet of war- Ring Three ships and carriers was waiting northward of the Gulf of in the north. Leyte to meet the enemy force heading for San Bernardino Strait (Ring Two) and also to engage whatever enemy fleet might be sent down from the north (Formosa or Japan) to join in the battle. Halsey felt certain the Japs would send reinforcements from the north.

Halsey had disposed his available carriers—all under Mitscher's command—to provide the maximum search coverage of the Philippines area. To the north, search planes of Rear Admiral Frederick C. Sherman's carrier force ranged west of Luzon. Farther south aircraft from other carriers commanded by Rear Admirals Ralph Davison and Gerald F. "Jerry" Bogan probed the Sulu and Sibuyan seas, between Luzon and Mindanao.

Continuous attack by enemy aircraft.

The men of Mitscher's task force will remember October 24th as a day of continuous attack by enemy aircraft.

In Ring Two, Commander Dan F. Smith, Jr., of Pittsburg, Texas, commander of the Third Fleet's Air Group "X," led his dive bombers, torpedo planes and fighters into attacking position west of the big enemy force. The beleaguered men-o'-war consisted of two groups, both heading east.

An ideal attack means an assault by great numbers of torpedo planes and dive bombers, with fighter-strafing support if possible. Under ideal conditions, the first torpedoes will be launched while the confused and battered enemy turns this way and that. American airmen had long awaited the opportunity. This was their chance.

Desperation of American attack.

Perhaps the enemy warships sensed the desperation of the attack, for they turned toward the American aircraft at high speed, spewing clouds of antiaircraft fire as they turned. They did both with the unanimity of a well-trained chorus line. Only one ship was out of step. Trailing in the column of three battleships was the Musashi,

one of the Yamato-class monsters. Perhaps because of a previous hit, she wheeled north. Commander Smith spotted the Musashi, "big as Lookout Mountain and twice as unprotected." She seemed to be going at the slow speed of ten knots.

The dive bombers peeled off out of the sun and plummeted down in quick succession on the Musashi. Avenger American torpedo planes skimmed low over the water, launching carrier torpedoes port and starboard against her long, graceful planes heam. Two torpedoes were seen to rip into her portside and Dan Smith swears that he saw four others heading for her starboard beam.

When the attackers pulled up and away, the Musashi's Battleship bow was under water almost to the base of her bridge Musashi structure, and her stern was high in the water. She circled crippled. slowly that afternoon, great oil slicks forming a colored wake, under the anxious care of destroyers. She was not seen the next day, or subsequently, and it may well be that she sank.

The antiaircraft reached a violent tempo as the Ameri- Violent can carrier-based air groups attacked that day. One tor- antiaircraft pedo-plane pilot, Lieutenant Robert Cosgrove of New fire. Orleans, said the flak reminded him of "going into a cave." His squadron mate, Lieutenant (j.g.) Otto Bleech of Pahokee, Florida, had two thirds of his left elevator shot away, while Ensign A. R. Hodges of Norfolk, Virginia, returned to his carrier with his elevator control cable shot away to one control, his hydraulic system de-

stroyed, and his radioman wounded. From another carrier, an Avenger pilot fervently whispered: "I was praying when I got out of my run."

Heavy score against the enemy.

Mitscher's pilots piled up a heavy score against the Japs with bombs and torpedoes. Four of the enemy battle-ships were reported damaged, and practically every other ship in the force was hit. In addition, 150 Jap planes were blasted from the skies by our fighters and antiaircraft, back at Leyte Gulf. At dusk our scout planes advised Halsey that the Jap ships had reversed course and were in retreat to the northwest.

But while we were delivering these telling blows against the enemy on October 24th, Sherman's carriers were under attack—dangerously so. At 8:01 A.M. our fighter patrols contacted two large groups of bogeys (enemy aircraft) thirty miles astern. Admiral Mitscher glanced at a correspondent: "Better get ready to duck inside—they're dive bombers." It was murky weather, and the warships headed toward a rain squall.

Sherman's carriers attacked by bogeys.

Our fighters began slashing into the enemy aircraft, but the bogeys were "all over the sky from six to twenty-four thousand feet," according to the interceptors.

From several directions, the enemy attacked. Black specks, hardly visible to the naked eye, danced in and out of the clouds, then roared down on the twisting, turning American warships. Guns banged away with that peculiarly stirring symphonic effect of kettledrums and basses. The warm breath of concussion stung the men's faces,

2 1944

ad they smelled the stimulating odor of gunpowder, ahich comes in time to associate itself only with excitement and fear.

Still in formation, the ships headed into the protective ver of a rain squall. There, shrouded in soupy weather, Rain squall maneuvered patiently as the screening vessels fired provides periodically at bogeys lurking on the edges of the squall.

Probably the enemy had dispatched, all told, well over no hundred planes from his land bases in the Philiprines to cripple Sherman's carriers. Yet, strangely enough, cany Japanese airmen seemed reluctant to close for the Japanese estack. Were they afraid? One large group—perhaps fixty to sixty bombers, torpedo planes and fighters— to fight. would come no closer than thirty miles to our formation. There they began to orbit as seven Hellcats, led by Commander David McCampbell of Los Angeles, plunged into their midst. As McCampbell and his cohorts watched in amazement, the bogeys headed back for Luzon.

The Hellcats took up the pursuit, in the course of which Dave McCampbell is officially credited with shooting down nine Japanese fighter planes. Not once did the enemy offer to engage in aerial combat, as the Hellcats sniped at straggling Zeros, one by one.

But the law of averages struck. At 9:38 A.M. the light carrier Princeton, one of several built from converted Princeton cruiser hulls, was hit. A thin wisp of smoke, seeping out hit. of her hangar deck, became black and thick. Red flames could be seen as the Princeton charged indomitably

Small in size, big in spirit. through the seas. She was a proud, scrappy ship, small in size but big in spirit. More than one hundred and fifty enemy aircraft had fallen prey to her guns and air groups.

Men aboard the Princeton awaited developments calmly, continuing their work until they could no longer breathe in the smoke; then they made their way to the open air.

Below, Chief Commissary Steward Frederick W. Plath of McAllen, Texas, ruefully contemplated two hundred mince pies he had baked the previous night. Chief Plath sighed; just two years ago, aboard the old *Hornet*, he had baked a batch of mince pies the night before she was sunk.

Twenty minutes after the *Princeton* was hit, she called for destroyers to come alongside with fire-fighting equipment. Hardly had the call gone out when she was wrenched by a terrible explosion; the flames had reached loaded torpedo planes. Great chunks of her flight deck peeled back.

Another explosion shook her frame at 10:05. The *Princeton* fell behind Sherman's formation. Aboard the *Princeton*, Captain John M. Hoskins, who was scheduled to take over command of the carrier, was directing the efforts to save her, but it was a losing struggle. As the skipper watched his men fighting several fires, a terrific blast rocked the carrier from stem to stern. The after ammunition magazine had gone up.

Losing struggle to save carrier.

Stunned for a moment, Captain Hoskins felt a burning sensation. Looking down he saw a naked foot lying on Captain's the deck. It was his own right foot, blown off by the foot explosion and now hanging by a tendon to the rest of blown off. his leg. He twisted a tourniquet around his thigh and waited for help.

A ship's doctor rushed over and, unsheathing an abandon-ship knife from his belt, he started to sever the tendon. The knife's blade wasn't sharp, but finally he cut through and then bound up the stump with a gauze bandage. Captain Hoskins watched the operation calmly. "Thanks, Doctor," he said at last. "I'm lucky it wasn't my head."

The order to abandon ship was given. Other ships Order to stood by to pick up survivors. One of these was in trouble abandon herself. The Birmingham, a light cruiser, had rushed to the stricken carrier shortly after the bombs struck, and her crew were manning hoses, trying to douse the carrier's fires, when the magazine went up. That blast swept over the decks of the cruiser alongside the Princeton like a gigantic, flaming broom, inflicting heavy casualties on the fire fighters and gun crews topside.

Despite such handicaps, most of the Princeton's crew Survivors were removed to other ships, the light cruiser Reno, the rescued. destroyers Irwin, Cassin Young, Morrison and Gatling. One of the last to leave was Captain Hoskins who was lowered over the side on a line to a rescue boat.

Princeton
goes down.

An hour later, destroyers and cruisers, circling about the broken *Princeton* in the twilight of the Philippine seas, launched their torpedoes and fired their guns. Slowly, she turned over, illumined by the fires in her, and slipped below the waters.

On the morning of the 24th, Mitscher was considering a message from a land-based patrol plane that approximately twenty-seven enemy warships, including battleships and carriers, had been sighted north of Luzon. At last enemy reinforcements were coming from the north. It was the third enemy fleet unit sighted that day and to judge from this report, the most powerful. This was what Mitscher had been waiting for.

Third enemy fleet sighted.

Meanwhile action was under way in Ring One to the south. In fact, Commander Frederick È. Bakutis of Brockton, Massachusetts, may have fired the first shot in the entire struggle between the two surface fleets. Taking off from his carrier in a Hellcat fighter just after dawn, he and his close friend, Commander Emmet Riera, were leading a search mission south of Negros Island.

Search mission.

It was 8:30 on the morning of October 24th, and the sun was shining brightly over the Sulu Sea; in the distance rose the blue, cloud-capped peaks of Negros. They sighted the first enemy surface force about the same time, near the end of their assigned radius.

"You could damn' near tell those big battleships right away with their pagoda masts and all," says Riera.

"Someone called up and said 'There they are.' I called back, 'Okay, I see 'em.' "

As the Americans circled twelve miles away, great bursts of smoke around them told of an angry and Angry and aroused enemy. It was fourteen-inch antiaircraft fire, the aroused first of many times that Japanese battleships were to hurl enemy. main-battery salvos against American aircraft in the next two days. The Yamashiro and Fuso class battlewagons were firing all guns.

At about 9:05 Commander Riera's planes attacked out of the sun. On their pull-outs, the bombers and fighters strafed the smaller warships. Riera says, "We were only carrying five-hundred-pound bombs because it was such Larger a damned long search. It really takes a larger bomb to do hombs any real good on a battleship."

needed.

A fire was burning briskly on the stern of the battleship Fuso as the bombers wheeled away to the west, but the Japs continued westward toward Surigao Strait.

As a first line of defense in Ring One, Kinkaid's First Seventh Fleet was drawn up outside Surigao Strait. He line of had PT boats waiting on the other—the far side—of defense. the strait. In the strait itself, he stationed a gantlet of destroyers along its 35-mile length and, at the end of the narrow slot, within sight of Leyte Gulf, Kinkaid placed his heavyweights, the Seventh Fleet's battleships and cruisers. He was crossing the Japanese "T" before the Nip fleet arrived. The ironic touch was that Kinkaid placed six battleships—"sunk" at Pearl Harbor—across

the strait. Thus his battlewagons could fire fore and aft batteries. The Japs coming head on toward his Pearl Harbor "wrecks," could fire only their forward guns.

PT-boat attack. Around midnight, Ensign Dudley J. Johnson of Kerrville, Texas, on the tiny bridge of his PT 127, sighted the Jap task force. By radio he alerted the flagship, then moved in to attack with his fragile craft. Soon PTs were closing in from all directions. The Japs tried to hunt down the fleet skimmers with searchlights, but the PTs were zigzagging at better than fifty knots as they moved in. Then star shells hurled by the Jap ships lighted up the scene with the brilliance of daylight, and their big guns rained explosive shells on the torpedo boats. The PTs answered with small-caliber machine guns. Peashooters against cannon.

Star shells.

Driving directly into the beam of a searchlight, a PT boat commanded by Lieutenant (j.g.) Ed Wakelin of Holyoke, Massachusetts, let go with torpedoes at less than two thousand yards. Then, sighting a half dozen destroyers, Wakelin fired his remaining torpedo at one of them, while shells from the Jap ships dropped so close to his boat they splashed water down the open engineroom hatch.

Black
night.

The night was black, but the PT boats got two hits, although they did not stop the Jap task force from proceeding in a double column into the narrow waters of Surigao Strait. These ships were making twenty knots when our destroyers on picket duty in the strait made

contact with them. Now came the hardest part. In spite of temptation, destroyers held their fire. Rear Admiral Jesse B. Oldendorf was waiting at the other end of the Jap ships strait with his battleships and cruisers, and he wanted the Japs to get deep into the trap.

into trap.

The crews of Oldendorf's battleships waiting in the darkness had been at their battle stations for hours and were understandably trigger-happy.

As Oldendorf prepared, Admirals Halsey and Mitscher in Ring Two, up north, had made their decisiona hard decision, and probably the most important of the Important entire battle. They had decided to take the main strength decision of the Third Fleet north to Ring Three to meet the ex- of the pected attack by the Jap carrier force coming from the Formosa area. They knew of the impending action in Surigao Strait and figured that Kinkaid's Seventh Fleet was capable of repelling it. Their last reports from the all-day action in Ring Two specified that the central Jap force had been badly crippled and had been seen at dusk retreating to the west across the Sibuyan Sea. Presumably this force was out of the picture.

Third Fleet.

Why not, then, concentrate striking power on the enemy carrier force to the north? Of course, this would leave the Leyte beachhead covered only by the escort carriers in the Seventh Fleet. They would be helpless against a strong surface attack, but Halsey figured they Japanese were safe because the Japs had retreated in Ring Two. believed He ordered several of his big carrier task groups to ren- in retreat.

Third Fleet steams north.

dezvous and steam north. Other units, refueling far to the east, could be called upon in case of emergency.

The decision was made—and it became the subject of hot controversy, but that was later, after the Navy had narrowly escaped disaster.

Meanwhile, back at Surigao Strait in Ring One, Admiral Oldendorf was ready to spring the trap. He lined up his battleships across the mouth of Leyte Gulf. They were steaming in column to "cross the T," a maneuver every naval man dreams of executing some day.

Ready to pounce.

The enemy ships steamed into the trap. On either side of them, cruisers and destroyers were lined up in the darkness ready to pounce as soon as the battleships opened up.

At 2:49 A.M. there was only darkness and silence and the tenseness of unseen danger over Surigao Strait, a bottleneck ten miles wide and thirty-five miles long, through which the Jap southern force was passing to get at our Leyte beachhead. The moon had set, and on Oldendorf's flagship the men could not see even the men at battle stations on their own ship.

Honor roll of ghost ships. You could call the honor roll of ghosts that morning in Surigao Strait. There was the *California*, now a quarter of century old, which, on Sunday morning, December 7, 1941, was hit by bombs and torpedoes, and sank at her berth in Battleship Row off Ford Island.

There was the *Pennsylvania*, which, immobile in a floating drydock at Pearl Harbor, had been bombed,

but whose crew had fought off waves of Jap planes. There were the Maryland and the Tennessee, each hit by a pair of bombs, but returned to active duty several months later.

And there was the West Virginia. Six torpedoes and two bombs plowed into the West Virginia on December 7th and, a mass of flames and billowing black smoke, she had listed badly to port. Those were the ghost ships come to life and waiting for the Japs in Surigao Strait.

Oldendorf lined up five destroyers on one side and Line-up behind them he placed five cruisers, parallel to the east- of the ern shore of the strait. On the western side of the strait, gantlet. he had more cruisers, preceded by four destroyers. Then he drew a line on his chart from Desolation Point, on Dinagat Island, to the island of Cabugan Grande, and ordered his battleships to take station in column just north of that line. They closed the northern end of the gantlet.

And now the Jap force of two battleships, the Fuso and Yamashiro, two cruisers and four destroyers, with a second group of cruisers and destroyers four miles astern, was steaming in twin columns into the trap, into the steel gantlet. There were about fifteen Japanese ships in all, moving now at eighteen knots.

About 3 A.M., Oldendorf gave the order, "Let 'em have it. Commence firing." Destroyers raced in toward "Commence the enemy ships, swung and launched torpedoes. There firing." was no more darkness that night in Surigao Strait. There

were blinding flashes as the torpedoes struck, and then everything happened at once.

Blistering cross fire. The torpedo attack was a signal for cruisers on both sides of the trap to direct a blistering cross fire against the enemy ships. At first the Japs thought it was a mistake, that they were being fired upon by their own ships. Their warships flashed colored recognition lights, which was proof that they were completely surprised and bewildered, and these lights furnished an excellent point of aim for our gunners. Then the Jap ships laid down a protective smoke screen. As they did so, our destroyers—except for one which was hit—withdrew through their own smoke screen and opened up with their five-inch batteries.

On one of the destroyers of Captain Kenmore M. McManes, a squadron commander, there was a gunner with good eyes. He saw the door of a Jap admiral's flag cabin fly open after a salvo struck one of the enemy battleships. A bright light flashed out. McManes' report on the incident concluded with: "We closed the door with our next salvo."

Jap fire inaccurate. The Jap columns plunged up the strait, firing sporadically and, for the most part, inaccurately. Even the star shells that they sent soaring into the darkness to light up our ships were falling in front of the targets instead of behind them, as was required if they were to silhouette our ships.

AD. 1944

Suddenly the lead ship of one Jap column, reaching a certain narrow point in the strait, reversed course. The lead ship in the other enemy column followed suit and so did the second ship in each column—at the same point. It was the opportunity of a lifetime for Oldendorf. If the Jap ships had turned simultaneously, they might have escaped the worst punishment, but they didn't. And Crossing Oldendorf crossed the T.

As each enemy ship came to the turning point, it presented a perfect target, at constant range (twenty thousand yards—about 111/2 miles), to broadsides from the big rifles of our six battleships, deployed across the mouth of the strait under command of Rear Admiral George Weyler. It was almost too easy for the ghost ships. The Almost first salvos smashed directly on the enemy's leading units too easy. at about four o'clock.

The enemy kept coming doggedly up to the same point—as precisely as trained animals—to make the turn and, now slowed to twelve knots, each ship received the same punishing dose of steel. It took Weyler only fifteen minutes to do a good job. Then he gave the order for Cease-fire the battleships to cease firing.

order.

The reason for that order, however, was partly due to the fact that one of our destroyers, the Albert J. Grant, had been hit and heavily damaged during her torpedo run. Now she was dead in the water and drifting down toward the enemy ships—within range of Weyler's big guns. Also, the retiring enemy vessels were getting out of Fleeing enemy pursued.

easy range. But the crippled Jap ships were not to be spared further torture, for our cruisers and destroyers immediately took over from the battleships, pounding away at the fleeing enemy.

With grim satisfaction, Oldendorf stalked his cornered prey. He saw two Jap ships burning, early in the engagement; then a battleship, obviously in trouble after being heavily shelled, started to blaze. Next he watched another big ship, probably a Jap heavy cruiser, go into its death throes. There seemed to be no end to the one-sided carnage. A large enemy destroyer with its whole stern ablaze loomed up, and Oldendorf ordered his ships to finish it off. In the admiral's words, "Our ships started firing at the Jap. There was a destroyer there when they started—and suddenly there was nothing."

Japanese losses.

Of the estimated fifteen Jap ships that had ventured into Surigao Strait that night, not one returned to its Singapore base. At dawn, Oldendorf could see eight columns of thick black smoke rising from as many enemy ships, one of them a battleship.

"I sent planes out to get pictures of that one," he complained later, "but the damned thing sank before they could get there."

American ship casualties. Our casualties were surprisingly light—one destroyer damaged. This was the *Grant*. The task force commander feared the destroyer was doomed and would have to be abandoned. However, Commander T. A. Nisewaner, the *Grant's* skipper, saved his ship, and the

crippled Grant later weathered a typhoon before getting back to a repair base.

There was considerable mopping-up to be done by our Mopping-up forces in Surigao. Planes knocked off the remnants of in Surigao. the Jap surface force, and PT-boats ranged through the waters of the strait, filled with debris and dead Japs. nicking up survivors. Some of the Nips protested at being taken prisoner, but Oldendorf ordered his men to haul them out with boat hooks.

It was just before 4 P.M. of the previous afternoon, October 24th, when Lieutenant (j.g.) Stuart Crapser of Springfield, Massachusetts, a rangy blue-eyed Helldiver pilot, was cruising his search plane back toward his carrier after a fruitless search of the Pacific area to the north. Suddenly his gunner, Aviation Radioman J. F. Burns, of Garwood, New Jersey, gave off with his triumphant vell.

Thousands of feet below the broken clouds lay four enemy flat-tops and their escort, less than one hundred Enemy and fifty miles north of our own force! It was a two-way flat-tops discovery; the enemy spotted the search plane at the spotted. same time and dispatched fighters. Frantically, the usually reticent Lieutenant Crapser radioed five messages back to Admiral Mitscher's flagship announcing his find.

Meantime, another search plane, piloted by Lieutenant (i.g.) Herb Walters of Tyler, Texas, spotted—not far away—two Ise-class battleships with flight decks on their stern, and turned in his report. All told, the enemy force

Size of enemy force.

consisted of seventeen ships, somewhat fewer than the total reported earlier that day by a land-based patrol plane. There was one light carrier of the Shokaku class; three light carriers of the Chitose and Zuiho classes; two battleship carriers; a heavy cruiser of the Mogami class; four other cruisers; and six destroyers. The next move was up to Halsey. He sped his main force northward.

At two o'clock the next morning, October 25th (just before the battle of Surigao Strait began far to the south), a night-flying Hellcat contacted the Jap carriers seventy miles away, bearing on a collision course for Halsey's ships. Third Fleet surface vessels were ordered to prepare for a night battle, but, shortly afterward, possibly aware of the contact, the Rising Sun carriers turned north.

Rising Sun carriers turn north.

But their doom was sealed. Never in the history of naval warfare has such an aerial onslaught been delivered as descended upon the Japanese flat-tops that morning.

Before the take-offs, serious young Lieutenant Roger S. (Smiley) Boles of Santa Paula, California, told his fighter squadron aboard this carrier flagship: "We're so close to the Japs that the torpedo planes will have to make a couple of orbits to get enough altitude for the attack."

As the first light of dawn came, the carriers of the task force turned eastward, pitching and rolling slightly, into the wind. The first Hellcat roared off, dipped, then soared away, clutching at the sky. Before its wheels had lifted, another Hellcat was in the launching spot. And

American planes take off.

so the planes took off, one by one, for the attack, and another deckload of planes came up from the hangar deck in readiness for the second wave.

In Flag Plot, task force headquarters aboard his carrier, Enemy's Admiral Mitscher learned that the enemy was heading course. in a northeasterly direction, while Mitscher's carriers and battleships were coursing due north. Mitscher put on more speed.

To Commander David McCampbell, the Navy's leading ace with thirty-four Nips shot down, Mitscher assigned the direction of the first strike against the enemy. First

"We took off at dawn," McCampbell said later, "and strike. prhited (that is, circled and waited for orders) about fifty miles north of our fleet. I had with me a large force of fighters, torpedo planes and dive bombers. The ship had previously sent two scout planes ahead to locate the lap fleet. They found it sixty miles north of us, and we were then directed to attack.

"We spotted the fleet thirty miles away. There was a great sight. What a mass of stuff down there—seventeen warships in formation! To my surprise, only a few planes Few came up to intercept, about twelve Oscars—carrier-based interceptor Zekes. We paid no attention to them but went in after planes. the ships. They sent up the damnedst AA I'd ever seen, bursting all around us in every color of the rainbow. They put up phosphorous shells which exploded and fell in streamers. There was even a thing that looked like a pinwheel. The sky was full of it.

Plan of attack. "I gave the boys assignments, and they went to work The fighters strafed the outer screen of destroyers, hoping to divert their fire so the bombers and torpedo plane could make their runs and pull out safely. It worked pretty well. The bombers from my air group went in or a carrier and laid seven 1,000-pounders right in the middle of its flight deck. That took care of her, so I sent the torpedo planes after the nearest battlewagon.

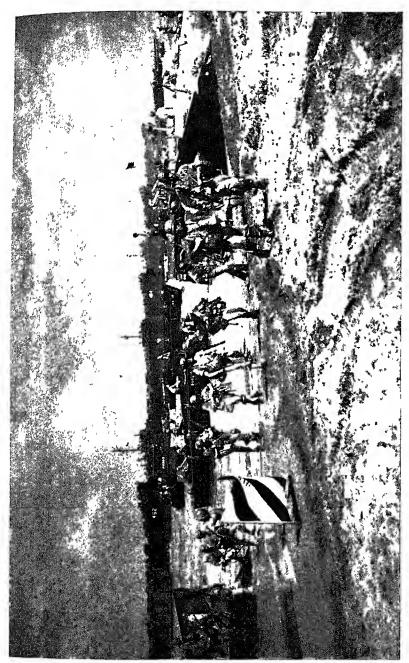
"It was nice to see that carrier roll over. Knocking out Jap planes is only incidental to us. We were trained to go after ships, and what happened that morning showed that we had been taught pretty well.

Everything "by the book." "Everything went by the book. First the fighters would strafe, then the dive bombers would drop their loads and they were immediately followed by the torped planes. Huge columns of smoke now came from the burning ships, and the water was full of Japs. One carrier was sinking, and you could see that other ships were really hurt. The Nip destroyers never bothered to pick up survivors, as far as I could see."

"How long were you over the target?"

"Three and a half hours," he replied. "And while I was there I saw one carrier, two cruisers and two destroyers actually sink. By this time my gas was running low and I was relieved by another strike group from our force. When I left, four other ships were dead in the water, drifting helplessly, and I knew they were dead pigeons."

New strike group takes over.



AMI-RICAN TROOPS AND LQUIPMINT POUR ASHORI IN THE TIMEANT GUIT AREA OF LUZON, IN THE PHHIPPINES, ON JANUARY 9, 1915 ($P_{48}c_{-313}$) TROM IN ULLICIAL L.S. CONST GUNED PHOTOGRAPH

The size of this attack can be judged from the fact Nineteen that nineteen Helldivers were assigned to one enemy to one. light carrier! One by one, the orbiting dive bombers reached the step-off point, eleven thousand feet above the doomed warship, and peeled off at two- and three-second intervals. They scored at least seven hits. Lieutenant (i.g.) George Peck—a blond, burly youngster who once played a tough game of quarterback for San Diego State College—was the fourth Helldiver to descend on the carrier.

"Somebody had got some hits ahead of me, because she was smoking," said Peck. "Still, she had enough speed to turn a bit as we came down. Not that it did any good. There were just too many of us. Why, I saw two dive Too few hombers diving side by side on the same target. My targets. bomb went smack into her flight deck, and just as I pulled up, I saw a torpedo heading into her."

The carrier came to a dead stop; explosion after explosion racked her frame, and she was shrouded in smoke.

One torpedo-plane pilot, Lieutenant Joseph C. Black of Knoxville, Tennessee, made his run on her, saw her condition, and simply swerved behind the carrier's blazing fantail. He resumed his course and launched a torpedo against a near-by battleship, scoring a hit which Battleship sent up a white column a thousand feet into the air.

torpedoed.

Two enemy light carriers were hit in that first attack; one blew up very shortly, while the other hung on grimly above the water line until late afternoon. Several other ships in the formation were hit, some beyond escape.

Huge flak holes in returning aircraft. Aircraft returned to American carriers with huge flak holes exposing the structural framework and their windshields covered with oil. Said one pilot: "Walk on that AA? Hell, I just put my plane on it and skidded in!"

Meanwhile one hundred miles south of this scene, Jap planes had been attacking our carrier force. Mitscher stood on the bridge of his flagship, his wizened face expressionless. Twelve Jap planes came in, and ack-ack fire from our destroyers began to dot the cloudless sky. A Jap plane careened down crazily.

"What destroyer got that one?" Mitscher barked. "The Sullivans, sir," his flag lieutenant reported. Mitscher grunted with satisfaction.

The Sullivans fighters again. Three minutes later, the *Sullivans* (so named in honor of the five Sullivan brothers lost in the cruiser *Juneau*) brought down another torpedo plane. The Sullivans were fighters again this day!

Land-based planes came out from Luzon, but the naval fliers were waiting. Some twenty-one Nip planes had gone hurtling into the sea. Mitscher's fleet escaped almost unscathed. One Jap plane flew into a flurry of flak directly above a carrier and crashed on the deck, killing the ten men of the gun crew which had shot it down. They were ten Negro messboys who had volunteered to man the 20-millimeter guns. They had saved their ship.

Negro messboys man gun.

By noon, Halsey had the satisfaction of knowing that Third Fleet his fleet had sunk seven warships: four carriers, two battle cruisers and a destroyer. Two battleships had been badly score. damaged and were crawling away, while three stricken cruisers and four destroyers looked for rain squalls to hide in.

Here was a glorious chance for Halsey to wade in now with his carriers and fast battleships to wipe out the fleeing, damaged Jap ships. But, strangely, at this hour. a large part of his carrier force was steaming south at high speed. At one moment we had been on the brink Brink of victory; the next moment we appeared to be retreat- of ing. What had happened?

victory.

The answer had already been given with startling effect aboard Mitscher's flagship. Mitscher's Flag Plot was crowded with officers listening to reports from the scenes of action. The communications officer brought in a dispatch and handed it to the admiral. Adjusting his horn-rimmed glasses, Mitscher read it silently then handed it to Thirty-one Knot Burke, his chief of staff, saying quietly, "What do you think of this?"

Burke read the dispatch. It was a plain-language mes- Hurried sage from Rear Admiral Sprague, in command of our message comparatively helpless escort carriers which were supporting MacArthur's beachhead on Leyte Island, far to the south. Sprague hadn't even taken time to have it encoded because he was in a hell of a hurry. He said,

"Urgently request support." in effect: "Am being engaged by enemy battleships. Urgently request support."

A look of grave concern crossed Burke's face as he replied: "I think it's bad, sir."

The Kitkun Bay was one of six CVEs (escort carriers) about twenty-five miles east of Samar Island under command of Rear Admiral C. A. F. Sprague. Seven miles farther south was another group of CVEs under Rear Admiral Thomas L. Sprague, over-all commander of the escort carriers, and a third group, bossed by Rear Admiral Felix B. Stump, was spotted thirty miles to the southeast. Planes from all three groups were giving air cover to the Leyte beachhead.

It was the ending of a black, unfriendly night. Frequent, brief rain squalls cut down the visibility of the officers and men standing watch on the bridge. But before the sun rose, Hellcat fighters and Avenger torpedo planes roared up the flight deck and over the bow ramp on the daily "milk run" to bomb and strafe Jap positions on Leyte. Then, without warning, it happened!

At 6:50 A.M. a lookout on the Kitkun Bay sighted the foretops of big ships on the northern horizon. None of our ships was in that area. There was only one answer: They must be Japs. Captain John Perry Whitney grabbed his binoculars and verified the lookout's report. Immediately he sounded a second call to general quarters and the public-address system echoed: "Stand by to repel enemy surface ship attack."

Call to general quarters,

Below decks in the wardroom where a group of "airdales" (pilots) not scheduled to fly that morning were finishing their coffee, a flier ran in and shouted, "The whole damned Jap fleet is out there—battleships, cruisers -everything!" As the coffee sippers ran toward the flight deck, a second announcement came over the P. A. system: "Pilots, man your planes!"

What had happened was that the enemy central force, which had tried to reach San Bernardino Strait the previous day but had been seen turning back after an all-day Japanese attack by carrier planes, had again reversed course under reversed cover of darkness and had slipped through the strait course during the night in a strike toward the Leyte beachhead.

at night.

At this moment the Leyte beachhead was stripped of all naval protection other than the CVEs and their screen. The heavy Jap force was approaching at high speed, and the baby flat-tops had virtually no protection against their big guns. They had no real armor, and their escort screen was pitifully small and weak—three destroyers and four destroyer escorts. None of these mounted a gun heavier than five inches, and this was puny firepower against the 16- and 14-inch rifles of the enemy battleships. The CVEs called urgently for help but they CVEs and could expect no immediate aid from ships in our Third escort no Fleet, which was far to the north engaging the Japs' northern force, or from our Seventh Fleet which had just turned back the enemy southern force in Surigao Strait.

match for enemy battleships. Catapult launchings.

Up on the bridge, Captain Whitney, his face shaded by a long-peaked baseball cap, watched the first Avenger move into launching position on the catapult. Beside him stood Rear Admiral Ralph A. Ofstie, commander of this jeep carrier division. The wind was from the northwest, which meant the ships had to head in that direction to "scramble" their planes. It also meant they were closing in rapidly toward the attacking Jap force.

Five minutes after the enemy ships were sighted, and while the Kitkun Bay was still launching planes, large shells began splashing into the water near her and the other jeep carriers in the northernmost group. These shells came from four Jap battleships in the van, which were followed by seven heavy cruisers and nine destroyers. The range was less than fourteen miles—duck soup for the enemy battleships. Everybody aboard the Kitkun Bay knew they were in for it then.

Short range for Jap battleships.

A young seaman, manning a telephone on the bridge, turned to the officer of the deck: "We're not out here alone, are we, sir?"

The officer nodded grimly.

Destroyers and DEs do not falter. But, no, they weren't entirely alone. There were the three destroyers and four DEs forming the screen. These little guys didn't falter an instant. Forming in column, they laid down a smoke screen. Then the seven, destroyers and DEs, charged through this curtain and made torpedo runs on the enemy—like a handful of Chihua-

huas attacking a bunch of mastiffs. Miraculously, all came back through the smoke screen—alive.

Salvos were straddling the Kitkun Bay and they were coming even closer to the Gambier Bay just ahead of her. These finished scrambling their planes and turned south. away from the Japs, at flank speed-around twenty knots. Sometimes the wind blew gaps in the smoke screen, exposing the jeep carriers, and from the 16-inch guns of the lead Jap battleship came angry orange flashes Geysers and, seconds later, geysers of foamy water rose around of foamy the CVEs.

"They're firing on the White Plains," someone shouted, and just off the port bow, Captain Whitney saw her steaming through a line of geysers. The Gambier Bay also was drawing a concentration of fire. Considering the range, the Japs wasted untold amounts of ammunition before scoring hits.

The Jap commanders now detached two heavy cruisers from their force and sent them south at high speed on the escort carriers' port hand. As soon as the enemy cruisers—easily able to outrun our ships—were in position, their main batteries subjected the CVEs to heavy fire.

The Gambier Bay was the first victim. At ten minutes Gambier after eight, a 16-inch shell holed her below the water Bay line. Water flooded one of her engine rooms. This cut first victum the Gambier Bay's speed down to ten knots, and she dropped behind, an easy target for the Japs. The two heavy cruisers ignored her and continued pounding the

other carriers, but the Jap battleships astern scored more hits on the cripple.

From the bridge of his own CVE, Captain Whitney looked back and wondered if Captain Walter Vieweg could bring the *Gambier Bay* through. He doubted it for the ship was drifting at right angles to her normal course, moving toward the Jap force. Thus she presented a perfect broadside target, and the Japs sent two other heavy cruisers from their main body to finish her off.

Destroyer versus Then out of a rain squall came one of our screen destroyers. The skipper saw a heavy Jap cruiser of the Tone class concentrating fire on the Gambier Bay and gave the command to open fire with the five-inch guns in his main battery. He was deliberately taking on a heavy cruiser, mounting eight-inch guns—practically double the destroyer's firepower—but after they had slugged it out for twenty minutes, the Jap cruiser caught fire and turned away.

The destroyer suffered a direct hit by an eight-inch shell, which flooded her forward compartments, and she was so far down by the head her anchors were awash. She was pulling away at reduced speed when three other Jap cruisers appeared and opened fire. It looked like the end for the destroyer, but, after a short attack, the Jap ships inexplicably turned away.

Jap ships turn away.

The Gambier Bay was rocked by successive explosions. At 8:50 A.M. Captain Vieweg gave the order to abandon ship, and her crew started sliding down long lines to

rafts. Many wounded were helped from the dying carrier by their shipmates, who, at nine o'clock, saw the Gambier Bay take her final plunge.

As she went down, the other CVEs were trying to escape the Jap attack. The two detached enemy cruisers circled their prey, firing salvo after salvo at the thin Salvo sides of the Kitkun Bay, the White Plains, the St. Lô after and the others steaming south with them. Rear Admiral Sprague used every tactic in the book to dodge the Jap shells.

"We made frequent changes of course," he said later, "to throw them off in their gunnery problem. Each ship captain 'chased' the splashes from the enemy salvos. It "Chasing" was miraculous that we emerged as we did. When the the range between the two forces was reduced enough to splashes. bring the Jap ships within reach of our escort carriers' five-inch guns, we opened up and got hits."

At about eight-thirty the seven destroyers and DEs had been ordered to make a second torpedo attack on the Japs. They plowed back through the smoke screen at thirty-five knots. Four Jap cruisers, followed by four battleships, rushed toward the American ships at about twenty-five knots. Frequent rain squalls made visibility spotty as the two forces charged along on a collision Collision course.

course.

When they were within range, the destroyers fired their torpedoes. The Jap battleships turned out of column, then formed another column and drove straight

for the destroyers, showering 14-inch shells on them. Two of our destroyers were heavily hit. The Americans made a hard left turn and swung sharply right to place the Japs on their beam so they could close to short range and fire broadsides. The rain came down hard—and so did the Jap shells.

Rain and Jap shells.

The American five-inchers had little effect on the thick armor of the Jap battlewagons and, after a brief clash, the destroyers and DEs fired their remaining torpedoes. One struck a battleship only 4,000 yards away and exploded under her Number Four turret. The Jap ship ceased firing and, shortly after, the entire column changed course and withdrew to the north.

Only four small ships survive. Now the carrier crews watched anxiously as our ships came back through the smoke screen. First came a destroyer to rejoin the escort carriers. Three of the DEs followed. That was all. Only these four of the seven small ships which had gone in on that attack came out alive. Two destroyers and a destroyer escort had been sunk. But their torpedo runs had diverted much of the enemy's firepower from its original targets.

Like Indians in a war dance. The five surviving baby flat-tops, however, were battling against heavy odds, and their doom seemed to be only a matter of time. Two Jap heavy cruisers circled this force at high speed, like Indians in a war dance. Again and again the Jap shells found their mark. Several hits rocked Admiral Sprague's flagship, the Fanshaw Bay. Others smashed into the Kalinin Bay. A near miss

lifted the stern of the White Plains out of the water while she was still launching planes, but there was no great damage and she continued launching.

Then, at last, came the first response to the calls for Help help. Up from the south roared planes launched by comes. sister carriers, who were in a refueling area. Fighters and torpedo planes swooped down over the attacking enemy ships and got hits on several. Diving through thick bursts of ack-ack, the fighters desperately strafed the enemy decks hoping to knock out the crews manning the AA guns and clear the way for the torpedo planes to strike again.

Encouraged, the menaced carriers redoubled their fight to survive. More planes from the carriers under Fight attack joined the air battle. Some of these had been on to anti-submarine patrol when the Jap ships first appeared. Others were recalled from their regular mission of giving air cover to our troops on Leyte, and these pilots added a note of raw courage to the day's record. They had expended most of their ammunition on Jap positions ashore but they made daredevil "dry runs" (simulated "Dry attacks) on the enemy ships now. Some concentrated runs." on the two Jap cruisers circling our carriers. Sweeping low, they penetrated the flak-studded air to simulate a real bombing and strafing attack. Time and again they returned to the "attack" without a single bomb or round of ammunition

These dry runs caused the Jap ships to change course frequently and threw off their gunners' aim, and that's exactly what our pilots intended.

Torpedo attack without fighter protection. They weren't all dry runs that morning, though. Four young Avenger pilots from the Kitkun Bay, rookies in their squadron, made a torpedo attack without fighter-plane protection. Ensigns Marchant, Kummerlin, King and Fulton found a Jap battleship and, led by Marchant, they damaged it badly.

"Nice work, son!" Admiral Ofstie said to Marchant when he had returned aboard.

Hits were also scored on a Jap cruiser by bombs which started a series of explosions. Another Jap cruiser was attacked by four torpedo planes and left dead in the water.

Unexpected enemy withdrawal. The battle was at its height when, at 9:25 A.M. word was passed on the *Kithun Bay* that the enemy cruisers were withdrawing.

It didn't seem possible that the Jap cruisers would pull out when they had definitely trapped the surviving five carriers and probably could have sunk every one of them in a short time. Yet there they were, reversing course and heading back toward San Bernardino Strait.

Over on the crippled destroyer, her skipper couldn't understand it, either.

"I'll never know why they're leaving instead of going right on into Leyte Gulf," he said. "They have the ships and the power to do it."

The Jap cruisers were not the only ships retreating. One by one, their battleships turned and laid a course for the strait, accompanied by the other cruisers and destrovers. Aboard the baby flat-tops, an unnatural silence settled down. Nobody could understand what had happened. Then the tension broke, and men laughed until Menlaugh they cried. By some incredible miracle they were still and cry. alive. The fight had lasted two and a half hours, but, during it, some of them seemed to have aged twenty years.

After the Japs had ceased firing, and the Kitkun Bay and other carriers in her group had landed their planes, the general alarm sounded, followed by: "Stand by to repel air attack!"

Eight Jap dive bombers came in at an altitude of five Enemy thousand feet and peeled off for an attack. Three of bombers them were shot down before they could drop their loads. Each of the five remaining enemy bombers picked a carrier as its target and roared down.

return to the attack.

The Kitkun Bay and the Kalinin Bay were the victims of direct hits, but neither was seriously damaged. The St. Lô was not so fortunate. One bomb hit, and there St. Lô was a big explosion.

is hit.

On the hangar deck, men had been rearming and servicing two Wildcat fighters and three Avenger torpedo bombers. In all, eight planes were down there and at least six of them had 100-octane in their tanks. Four torpedoes were ready for plane installation, while four more torpedoes were in the same area with no less than six depth bombs, fifteen 500-pound bombs and forty 100-pounders. In boxes were 1,400 rounds of .50-caliber machine-gun bullets. There was enough explosive on the premises to level a fair-sized town.

Time measured by explosions. From then until the ship sank—just thirty-two minutes after the bomb hit—men measured time by explosions. Whatever happened to them they remembered as happening just before or after the second explosion, or the third, or the fifth, and so forth. A plane blew up on the port side. That was the second explosion, mild compared with its successors, and more like a puff than a blast which, nonetheless, knocked men down and rolled them along the deck. A hose party was seen to crumble, and some of its members never got up.

It was the third explosion that blew another hangar door off its hinges and sent a 100-foot section of the flight deck sailing into the air. That was on the port side. A section of about the same size on the starboard side was folded and rolled back like a hall carpet. Entire fire parties were wiped out, burned or killed outright or blown overboard. The word was passed: "Prepare to abandon ship."

About a quarter of the St. Lo had blown into the water, sides and all. She was ripping apart in 50- and 100-foot chunks, and some of the pieces were flung 1,000 feet into the air. Involuntarily, she was bombarding the crew in the water. Her end was near.

Crew in water bombarded. 4D. 1944

Captain McKenna left the ship after the seventh explosion. Everyone knew he would be the last man alive Skipper to leave. He always performed the way you wanted the last man skipper to perform—with the composure of a man who is never surprised, even when he is scared as hell.

to leave.

The eighth explosion blasted out parts of the St. Lô helow the water line. Before this explosion she had been listing to port. Now she rolled over to starboard very fast and went down with her bow pointing straight at the sky. As night fell, destroyers and destroyer escorts were Survivors still picking up survivors. One destroyer retrieved 453 of the crew and Captain McKenna.

St. LA.

With the sinking of the St. Lô, we had lost two escort carriers, but the other four in Tommy Sprague's group were still intact. Two destroyers, the Johnston and the Hoel, had sacrificed themselves in defending the CVEs, and so had the little DE, Samuel B. Roberts. All considered, it was a small price to pay for saving the bulk of the escort-carrier force and the transports and supply ships in Leyte Gulf.

> battle turns.

By early afternoon the tide of battle had turned Tide of definitely in our favor. Planes from the three escortcarrier groups were countering successfully the attacks staged by the Japs' land-based planes. And finally, help was coming from carriers in Mitscher's task force. Some of these big flat-tops, which had been refueling far to the east of Luzon, had been dispatched at full speed. Shortly

after 2 P.M. these planes started making strikes on the fleeing enemy ships. They kept the enemy in retreat.

Enemy keep retreating. What had been happening up in that northern area while the escort carriers were under attack was encouraging. The Jap carrier force split up. One group, composed of damaged and sinking ships, was dead in the water with one Ise-class battleship and a few smaller vessels circling them. The other group, including one battleship, one light carrier, one large Shokaku-class carrier and a few other undamaged ships, was retreating to the north.

At 10:07 A.M. Halsey messaged the carriers: "Instruct all pilots to strike at undamaged ships. Leave cripples until later."

The second and subsequent waves of aircraft, therefore, swept down on the ships fleeing northward. Blond slender Lieutenant Al Seckel of Chicago was one of several Hellcat fighters who stabbed at the Shokaku-class flat-top with armor-piercing bombs.

Armorpiercing bombs.

Seckel reported that the Shokaku (or she may have been a sister ship, the Zuikaku) twisted this way and that, at first seeming to ignore the torpedoes and bombs raining into her hull. Then she stopped dead in the water and large columns of smoke poured from her vitals. Yet two hours passed before she rolled over and sank belly up and stern first. The other flat-top, too, clung doggedly to life—for five hours after the first hit had been recorded on her.

Said Commander Winters: "Then I turned away for a moment and, when I looked again, there was nothing but a huge oil slick and the tip of her stern going under. Hundreds of guys were swimming around or clinging to pieces of wood until a destroyer came up and began taking them aboard."

Those survivor-packed Jap destroyers, and the two Iseclass battleships received their share of trouble in the fourth and final aerial attack that day. One destroyer was sunk, and the others were strafed and bombed, while one of the battleships sustained torpedo and bomb hits.

As the afternoon sun approached the western horizon. only one Jap carrier remained affoat. United States Only one cruisers and destroyers ranged ahead of our carriers. Jap carrier Coming across the gutted carrier just before dusk, they sank it. To the north, the two crippled battleships, two cruisers and several destroyers were making their escape. One destroyer was left behind and it, too, was sunk by surface gunfire. Later that night of October 25th, eager American submarines attacked the escaping ships with a spread of torpedoes, sinking a heavy cruiser.

The Second Battle of the Philippines was now over. Rattle Our ships were picking up hundreds of survivors from is over. the water—Japs and our own men. Despite the heavy punishment the St. Lô had taken, 784 of her crew were rescued, half of them wounded. Of the entire ship's company 114 were listed as dead or missing.

afloat.

Men on
afts fight
off sharks.

Captain Vieweg and more than 750 of his men from the Gambier Bay also were rescued after they had drifted on rafts for forty-two hours, fighting off sharks.

The Jap casualties were, of course, much greater. They lost thousands of men, and dozens of their ships had been sunk or damaged. Jap shipyards and drydocks would be busy for months repairing the damage.

Great naval victory. Secretary of the Navy Forrestal summed up the results as "One of the great naval victories of the war that will go down, along with the Midway and Guadalcanal sea battles, as one of the great, shattering blows struck against Japanese seapower." The Japanese fleet was indeed beaten, routed and broken.

The battle also provided a tasty morsel for naval experts, authentic and armchair, to chew over for years to come. Had Admiral Halsey made the right decision in taking his Third Fleet north to engage the Jap carrier force, thus leaving Leyte beachhead and the escort carriers covering it vulnerable to an enemy surface-ship attack?

Opportunity missed by Japanese. The answer probably can never be given, even by the Japanese high naval command which missed a grand opportunity to mess up our invasion of the Philippines. But one part of that answer is definite and convincing: we won.

MILITARY SURGERY

(A.D. 1944)

Kyle Crichton

HROUGH the glass in the closed door of the operating room, the surgeon could be seen work- Surgeon ing on a patient. With a knife he began to carve at work. three sides of an oblong on the man's forehead. The incision was deep and when the skin was drawn back the skull could be seen. One end of the oblong piece was still attached to the forehead; the length of loose skin was now turned and laid carefully over the eye of the patient. The most meticulous care was then taken in sewing this flap into place. That done, the patient was wrapped with a turbanlike mass of bandage and adhesive tape and wheeled out of the operating room.

The surgeon was Lieutenant Colonel James Barrett Brown, chief of plastic surgery at Valley Forge General Hospital at Phoenixville, Pa. What the man on the operating table had gained was a new eyelid. This meant that the eye was protected and another veteran of the New war had been saved for active life. Hundreds of men

eyelid gained.

From the article "New Faith," Collier's, The National Weekly, by permission of the author and publisher.

Remarkable record of plastic surgery. have already been helped by Colonel Brown and his staff, and thousands of others will have that good fortune later. The greatest comfort our wounded can have is the knowledge that the greatest plastic surgeons in the world are available to help them. Seventy per cent of the plastic surgery cases treated at Valley Forge have been returned to active service—a remarkable record.

Valley Forge General Hospital sits on a hill in the beautiful rolling country of eastern Pennsylvania. Valley Forge itself, the site of the tragic winter encampment of Washington and his ragged troops in the Revolutionary War, is about five miles distant. Convalescent veterans of the present war play croquet between buildings or stroll about the green quadrangles, preparing themselves for the return home or duty that will soon come.

In the popular view, plastic surgery has often centered on beautifying some individual who desires a prettier nose. At Valley Forge it is a matter of a man's future life. Success may mean the difference between desperation and a life that may be short of perfection but will be satisfying.

When a man is given a new jaw, he will not complain if it leaves his face scarred.

Function is restored first.

"We try to restore function first," says Colonel Brown.
"A man must have an open nose so he can breathe; he must have a jaw so he can eat; he must have eyelids as a protection for his eyes, and the movement of his hands must be restored. Besides function, one of the greatest

challenges is to take a man with a totally burned face who would be a horror to himself and his family and make him into a man with hope for the future."

the future given.

The best way of showing what is being done at Valley Forge is to report on a recent visit to the hospital. The first operation was made on a man whose forearm had heen half shot away from the elbow to the wrist. He was a thin, energetic man of middle age who had been shot up at Cassino. When being examined by Colonel Brown he seemed to have a sort of pride in the intricacies of his case. By the greatest of luck his hand was intact and he Arm had control of the thumb and two fingers. That made worth the arm worth saving.

saving.

16,12

When he reached the operating room, Colonel Brown proceeded with one of the most astonishing operations in the history of plastic surgery. First, all scar tissue was removed from the arm. Then Colonel Brown made a deep incision on the man's chest in the pattern of a square U. The skin was then carefully cut back until there was a free flap approximately a foot square, with the bottom portion still attached to the abdominal wall. The incision had been deep, so that with the skin would come a layer of fat, very necessary in the growing that would soon take place.

The patient's arm was then laid on his chest, the flap was brought up to cover the portion missing from the forearm, and the attachment was made. The arm will lie in that posture until the skin flap grows firmly to it. New covering for shattered arm. That will take between two and three weeks, and, at the end of that time, the portion still attached to the abdominal wall will be severed and sewed to the arm. The patient will then possess a new covering for the arm, made from his own body. If it is necessary to build up the arm further by inserting new bone, that can be done later. It will be easily possible because he will now have a foundation to contain the new insertions.

"So far as I know," said Colonel Brown, "that is the largest flap ever made in plastic surgery."

While this was going on, Captain Bradford Cannon of Boston, at another operating table, was building up a nose that had been shattered in action, and Captain Carl Lischer of St. Louis and Lieutenant Parke Scarborough were performing a complicated skin-grafting job on a badly burned leg.

Nose reconstructed. From a picture of the nose patient taken when he first entered the hospital, it would seem to a layman impossible to help him. The nose was entirely shattered, being pushed to one side of the face and clinging to its normal position only by a bit of skin. This soldier was a firmly set-up young man from Wisconsin who had been banged up at Anzio. Captain Cannon was furnishing him with a new nose by building up the ridge from cartilage taken from the man's ribs and by grafting skin from his body to make a new lining for the nose.

This is a tedious operation that takes hours of work by the surgeon, but it is one of the commonest undertaken. Another that furnishes dozens of cases for the surgeons is skin grafting for burns. This often takes Skin months, and the question of finding enough skin on the grafting body to do the job is often extremely difficult.

for burns...

In most instances it is necessary to use one area over again repeatedly. The surgeons make what are known as "split" grafts, meaning that the skin is shaved off one section of the body (known as the "donor" area) and grafted on to the affected region (known as the "recipient" area). This is done in the simplest way imaginable by slicing the skin off with an instrument that looks like a razor. The skin is really split, with the top layer coming off like a fine bit of shavings and the fat not being touched. The operation is so delicate that the donor area heals rapidly and with little indication that it has given skin. The split grafts can be obtained over and over again from that spot if necessary.

Then we came to the most spectacular case of all. A Most young fellow of about twenty was brought into Colonel spectacular Brown's office. He had his hair clipped in crew fashion, case. very close to the head, and was one of the most recent casualties from France. When Colonel Brown asked him how he felt, he shook his head and seemed to answer with his eyes. When his bandages were taken off it was seen that his whole lower jaw had been shot away. His tongue, swollen to three times normal size, lay almost on his chest. His mouth could hold no food and naturally he was unable to speak. It was a shocking thing, and

Seemingly hopeless fate. when the boy left, we remarked on the hopelessness of his fate.

"Wait till you see this one," said the colonel, and a tall, thin young fellow came in with his lower face swathed in bandages. The colonel removed the bandages with care and it could be seen that the man had received at least two operations that had restored his jaw. "Exactly the same kind of injury," said the colonel, "and even a bit worse. How do you feel, son?"

"Fine," said the young man, with only a trace of difficulty.

"That's why that first fellow doesn't feel so bad," said the colonel. "He's been visiting with Tom here."

New jaw, new lower face. Tom had a new jaw and a new lower face. His ribs had been used for the jaw, and his face had been taken from his chest in another use of the flap technique. For a time, he will have severe scars on his lower face, but he now speaks naturally and, of course, eats and drinks normally.

Another remarkable patient was a man who had been shot through the mouth by a bullet that had followed an upward course. This had happened at Salerno to a member of the famous Thirty-sixth Division, the Texas outfit that first terrorized all of Cape Cod while training at Camp Edwards and then did an even better job on the Italians and Germans in Italy. The man was a big citizen of the jolly type and he was even better disposed now that he was fixed up. The bullet had blown away

half of his palate, and he couldn't eat or speak. Colonel Brown had fashioned a new palate for him, New palate giving him an entirely new lining for his mouth and made. restored him completely.

Nothing could have seemed more desperate than the condition of a big fellow from Illinois who had been shot up in Italy almost to the vanishing point. It is impossible to tell how he looked because in the dressing room where he was being treated, his eyes were still covered with a bandage. He had lost both ears, his nose, one eye, the covering of both cheeks and half of both hands. When we saw him, he had both his ears rebuilt, four new eyelids, a new nose, and work was being started on his hands. It is with the hand cases that Colonel Hardest Brown puts in his hardest work.

work on hand cases.

"It's the hands that distinguish a human being from an animal," he says. "In animals, even the monkey, the thumb lies alongside the fingers. With a human, the thumb is capable of facing the fingers, giving the hand grasping power. This is naturally the position of function of the fingers, and we do everything possible to restore that function to man, no matter how hopeless it seems originally."

The hand cases are delicate operations, and there are Delicate dozens of them at Valley Forge who will now have the operations. use of their hands even if it be only the thumb and one finger.

Wartime plastic surgery exhausting. A face smashed in by an automobile accident is quite different from one shattered by a bullet. It is this difference that makes the war work of the plastic surgeons so exhausting.

Colonel Brown explains it in this way: "In both cases, the face may be literally broken to pieces and completely detached from the skull, but with a bullet, there is actually an explosion inside the face. It is as if a firecracker had gone off inside the antrum. It kills much more bone, tears up much more tissue and leaves much more scar tissue than any external injury can produce."

Facial paralysis repaired. One of the most striking examples in the hospital was the repair of a facial paralysis in an enlisted man. This man's face had been twisted fantastically out of shape. The photographs taken when he entered the hospital were of a monstrosity. By building up some portions of his face and lowering others, he finally had a countenance that showed no sign of the defect. Long strips of fascia (the connective inner tissues) were taken out of his thigh, tunneled through the face and attached to a muscle that was not paralyzed. The result was miraculous, and anyone talking with the man now would refuse to believe what the first photographs showed. He is now at work in the wards as an example to others who may despair at their condition.

Despair turns to hope. In truth they are often in despair when they arrive. Some come kicking with rage and caring little what happens to them. In two or three days, there is invariably a change. It is one of the most encouraging things in the world to see the morale of the men undergoing treat- High ment at Valley Forge. The patients who come in to see Colonel Brown are obviously in no very great awe of him.

morale at Valley Forge.

"Let's have a look at that eye, son," he says. "H'mm, pretty good. Now, when do you want us to work on that nose? How about next Wednesday? Maybe you might go home over the week end to see the folks. How'd you like that? Oh, you would! Well, be back here Tuesday so we can look at you before the operation."

In the wards there are so many convalescent patients eager to help out with the other men that the staff has to confine them to working in relays.

Convalescent patients eager to

"Just like home folks around here," says the colonel. help out. He looks very much like home folks and has a good Middle Western accent that might come from a country doctor riding up in a horse and buggy. He is a product of Hannibal, Mo., and attributes his interest in medicine to the late Doctor E. H. Bounds of that place, a surgeon whose reputation went far beyond Hannibal itself. His academic and medical training was taken at Washington University at St. Louis, and he was on the surgical service of Professor Evarts Graham when work on the victims of an Illinois tornado turned his interest to plastic surgery. He is associated with Doctor Vilray P. Blair, Doctor Louis T. Byars and Doctor Frank McDowell of St. Louis and enjoys an international reputation.

A.D. 19-4

Colonel Brown's office at Valley Forge is a small room with a plain desk and four straight chairs. He keep his own records, writing them out at night in longhand

Most
personal
business
in world.

"I can remember them better that way," he says. "The is the most personal business in the world. It's just the doctor and the patient, and every patient is different.

Colonel Brown works till nine or ten every night and often till midnight. The plastic-surgery staff does be tween ten and fifteen operations every day, usually finishing around two or two-thirty P.M. The colonel spends hours at night analyzing the cases of the patients who are to be operated on next day.

Photographic record kept. In all instances, a photographic record is kept of stages in the patient's progress and, in addition, there is a lab oratory for making plaster masks under the direction of Sergeant Frank Eliscu, formerly a sculptor of New York. The masks are taken directly from the patients and used by Colonel Brown as a directive in his surgery

Plastic surgery is the hardest of work, because every patient requires the most intensive application of effort in the operating room. There are many operations of two and three hours, and some may be longer. This is often necessary in nose injuries, where it is impossible to leave off until the obstruction or defect is corrected.

Hundreds returned to jobs. The visitor to Valley Forge comes away with a feeling of great hope for the wounded. They may not be Adonises but hundreds of them will be returned to their jobs in civil life, who couldn't have dared to hope in

other days. The first World War saw the development Developof plastic surgery. From this experience, great strides ment were made in the following years. Techniques were per- of plastic fected. Cases that seemed impossible of treatment were tackled and conquered, and a great mass of information was built up from civilian observation. And thus the debt to the first World War veterans has now been paid to the present wounded. They have the benefit of twentyfive years of study and experience, and the personal assistance of surgeons who are world-famous.

surgery.

The high morale of the men under Colonel Brown and his staff is a testimonial to their personal qualities and to the service given by the Army.

We return to the man who was first seen in the operating room, having his arm reconstructed. In Colonel Brown's office the night before the operation, he was having doubts.

"You know, Colonel," he was saying in the straightforward and easy way that Brown's men have with him, "sometimes I think it might be better if I had it off."

"Well now, son," said the colonel gently, "it's your arm. You can do what you want with it, but I think we can save it."

"Well, if you say it, Colonel, that's the way I want it," said the man, getting up and smiling with relief.

Late next afternoon after the operation he was lying in his bed in the ward, looking contented with the world. "How's that old arm?" asked the nurse playfully.

Doubt becomes relief.

"Pretty good old arm."

"That's a pretty good old arm," laughed the man proudly, "and nobody ain't gointa get it away from me. either."

V-2 rocket

bombs London.

Germans open counteroffensive.

October 28, 1944. Bulgaria signs armistice with United Nations. November 1. British commandos invade Netherlands island of Walcheren. November 4. British troops and Greek patriots free Greece of German forces November 7. President Roosevelt is elected to a fourth term by 432 electoral votes to Governor Dewey's 00 November 8. Berlin announces bombardment of London with V-2, new long-range rocket. November 12. Tirput last German battleship, is sunk by British earthquake bombs. November 24. Tokyo is blasted by B-29 Superfortresses from Saipan Island. December 3. Civil War flares in Greece between ELAS and EDES. British forces intervene. December 10. Japanese base of Ormoc on Leyte Island is captured by United States forces. December 15. General MacArthur lands troops on Mindon Island. December 17. Germany starts powerful counter! offensive on western front. December 26. Organized Japanese resistance on Leyte Island is ended. December 28. German counter-offensive is halted on western from December 30. Archbishop Damaskinos is appointed regent of Greece by King George II. January 1, 1945 France formally joins the United Nations. January 5 Strife in Athens ends as ELAS forces leave the city. January 8. Field Marshal von Rundstedt's divisions in

the Belgian bulge begin to give way. January 9. American troops land on Luzon establishing four beachheads. Invasion January 14. German armies in the Belgian salient reel of Luzon. back toward the Siegfried Line in full retreat. January 17. Russian and Polish troops capture devastated Warsaw. January 21. Red army troops invade Silesia. Hungary surrenders unconditionally to the Allies and declares war on Germany. New Ledo-Burma Road is opened as a supply route to China upon capture of Wanting. January 26. Americans overrun Clark Field in drive to Manila, January 29. American troops break back into Germany from the Ardennes bulge. February 3. United States First Cavalry Division enters Manila and frees 3,000 British and American internees of Santo Tomas Concentration Camp. February 4-11. Marshal Stalin, President Roosevelt, and Prime Minister Churchill con- Yalta fer at Yalta in the Crimea. February 13. Budapest is lib- Conference. erated by the Russians after a 50-day siege. February 16. American forces land at Corregidor. February 19. United States Marines pour ashore on volcanic Iwo Jima, only 750 miles from Tokyo. February 23. Mount Suribachi on Iwo Jima falls into American hands. Turkey declares war on Germany and Japan. February 25. American forces win Dueren. March 1. Organized resistance ends on Corregidor. March 3. Finland declares war on Germany. March 6. Cologne capitulates to American forces. March 10. The siege of Danzig begins. March 16. The conquest of Iwo Jima is complete.]

A LETTER FROM IWO JIMA

(A.D. 1945)

EDGAR L. JONES

UR empty transport vessel with its deckload of beaten-up landing craft is rolling heavily on the long voyage home from Iwo Iima. To provide quarters for casualties, the sick bay has been expanded until half the bunks, built in tiers of four, are sick bay. now occupied by the wounded remnants of the Fourth Marines who rode the ship into battle.

The doctors aboard this particular ship are specialists in eye surgery and mental cases, so that in bed after bed one passes men who have lost their eyesight or their sanity. The same small boats which headed valiantly for the beach on D Day returned again and again on succeeding days with litter-loads of pain-crazed bodies; not really men, just bodies, which were salted down as the crazed heavy seas broke over the bows of the lurching landing bodies. craft, jarred into sickening consciousness as the waves hurled the boats against the high walls of the transport, and finally lifted, two stretchers to a crane-load, onto the

From "To the Finish," a letter to Mr. Weeks, Editor, Atlantic Monthly, by permission of the author and publisher.

flat, steady decks of the ship which was to take them home.

Dead lined up on deck. Some of the more fortunate ones died during the night, and in the morning the bodies, so tightly wrapped in gray blankets that they seemed Pygmy size, were lined up on deck, waiting for the same small boats to take them ashore for burial. Among the less fortunate are one man who is faceless from the end of his nose to his hairline, and another whose right side is paralyzed, whose left arm is gone, and whose one remaining eye stares out of a pulpy mass of flesh. The doctors, who with such skill and untiring attention have kept these bodies alive, come into the wardroom, remove their rubber gloves and face masks, and sit over their coffee in brooding silence.

rpanese soners. The brig contains the only Japanese prisoners, nine of them, to be captured prior to our departure on D plus

There were two others, but they died aboard ship, wo of the remaining are unconscious most of the The same small boats which took the first waves rines ashore, and brought the endless waves of ded back again, also transported to the safety of hip's brig those of the enemy who still had a breath fe.

many ways the crews of those small boats were the es of the battle of Iwo Jima, because, tough as the nese were, the heavy seas were tougher. The preng winds reversed themselves during the first ten, so that instead of being on the leeward side of the

island, the beachhead was exposed to the sullen fury Fury of the Pacific Ocean. Because Iwo Jima is a volcano rising straight out of the sea, there is no shallow water. The box-shaped landing craft were tossed about like egg crates caught on the crest of a spring flood. Unprotected by breakwaters or coral reefs, the boats were swamped by six-foot breakers as soon as their bows rammed into the volcanic sand. The boats floundered, sank, and were spewn along the shore to form twisted barricades of debris.

Pacific.

Despite their losses, the boat crews continued to shuttle men and materials. The men rarely slept, and depended for food upon having someone aboard a transport pass down K rations and an occasional sandwich. The crew of one small boat from this ship, manned like so many others by Coast Guard personnel, went four days and nights without relief. The men could barely walk when without they finally came aboard to sleep.

Four days and nights relief.

The waves hit the beach at an angle, swinging the boats sidewise and overturning them before the ramps could be let down. The Marine beach parties and Seabees had to resort to bulldozers and stern lines to keep the craft at right angles to the shore long enough to roll the matériel onto the sand. While a bulldozer with a Bulldozers tow chain kept the ramp anchored in the sand, a small and tug with a stout line on the stern strained against the current to prevent the landing craft from being swept broadside against the shoreline. As the men rushed to

stern lines.

Boat crews never dry. unload vehicles, ammunition, and food, the breakers swarmed over the sterns of the landing craft, swamping some and leaving the rest half filled with water. The crews were never dry.

As if the seas were not enough to contend with, the Japanese had the entire beach under mortar and shell fire, so that the men never knew when a shell would explode in their midst. Our transport was lying close offshore, enabling the correspondents to go onto the beach each morning and return at night to such luxuries as a hot shower, warm meals, and a dry bed. Even when we reached the beach on the morning of the seventh day, a flurry of mortar shells hit the landing craft to our left and right. We were free to scramble through the deep sand to the nearest hole, but the crew of the boat was left to manhandle the cargo with no more protection than a steel helmet.

Mortar and shell fire.

Beachmaster directs operations.

Each of the half-dozen beaches had a beachmaster who stood on high ground with a microphone and directed unloading operations. A powerful battery of loud-speakers carried his commands to landing craft waiting to come in, to bulldozer crews, and to Marine working parties. Though shells burst around him, the beachmaster stood his ground and with a caustic voice of assurance kept the traffic moving with invectives interlarded with: "You there in boat number 457, whatja got 'board? All right, ride in on the next breaker. Hey, you cat drivers, get the hell down here with your tails in the water. Clear

that truck out of there. You Marines start moving or we'll bury you under. Drop the hawser! Drop the hawser! Swing her starboard." And so on.

Working with the beachmasters were the floating Floating traffic cops, the men in control boats who remained a traffic few hundred yards offshore and regulated the successive waves of landing craft. Beyond them were the destroyers, blasting away with their five-inch guns whenever the Marines struck an enemy strong point; and still farther out, riding at anchor, were the transports, tankers, LCT's, cargo vessels, and floating drydocks. On the horizon one could see the small, fast ships in the anti- Units of submarine patrol, and somewhere out of sight were the the fleet aircraft carriers which sent forth fighters and fighter bombers whenever enemy tanks or pillboxes were discovered. The larger units of the fleet, the battleships and cruisers, stood by, after having finished their three-day bombardment prior to the invasion, and fired their heavy guns only when a specific target required a salvo of eight- or sixteen-inch shells for permanent liquidation.

Two years ago, and possibly even one year ago, American forces would have lost the battle of Iwo Iima. The island was more heavily fortified than any previous one captured. The knee-deep volcanic sand stopped all ve- Knee-deep hicles in their tracks, and the heavy seas littered the two-volcanic mile beach with the shredded remains of boats, tanks, half-tracks, amphibious trucks, and jeeps. Yet the bulldozers were brought ashore to open lanes through the

landings.

sands.

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

deep sand. Steel tracks were laid to enable tanks and trucks to reach more solid terrain; cranes were set up along the beach; heavy artillery was hauled ashore, along with steam rollers, road-graders, and prime movers. The entire operation followed a tested pattern which neither the Japs nor the weather could stop.

Another Tarawa, only worse. The war correspondents found Iwo Jima a poor spot for startling news. Iwo was another Tarawa, only worse. For caves and hidden pillboxes, it was another Saipan, only worse. For poor weather and soggy terrain, it was another Guam, only worse. There was little new to write about; only an old story with stronger superlatives.

Those reporters who got ashore early were unable to get their copy back to the ships. The prearranged schedule for press boats broke down when heavy swells swamped the boats. Those who remained aboard transports knew less of what was going on than did the correspondents who stayed safely on Guam and read the latest communiqués issued by Admiral Nimitz. Most of us felt that even if our copy reached civilization, it would fall flat. Iwo was a dirty, painful, horrible struggle with none of the glamour which makes good reading

Pattern of assault followed. American tacticians had learned much between Tarawa and Iwo Jima about island-to-island fighting, but so had the Japanese. The landing followed a pattern which in three years has become a tradition: a long period of bombing from the air, a shorter flurry of concentrated naval gunfire, a final assault at close range

which utilized every type of weapon that floats or flies, and then the Marines landed. The Japanese knew what to expect, and had planned accordingly. The bombings they could not stop, so they went underground where Japanese the bombs could not reach them. The rocky cliffs of Iwo went were so soft that a man with a pick and shovel could dig underhimself a comfortable cave in a day.

ground.

For sixty-eight consecutive days the Army bombed Iwo. The Japanese lost all their planes and most of their surface installations, but they and their guns survived. On the sixty-ninth day, at dawn, the American Navy began its bombardment; the Japanese remained in hid- Record ing during the three days that the Navy poured a record bombardtonnage of explosives on the island. They could not stop ment. the Fleet any more than they could the Army bombers, so they did not try.

Their defense was based on not giving away their positions or revealing their strength until an actual landing was attempted. They had only a handful of coastal batteries; and the only time I saw one of them in action, it hit a ship. The Japanese policy was not to fire unless they were sure they could not miss. They allowed endless waves of carrier planes to make their bombing runs unmolested, but they practically threw the island at observation planes which served as the eyes of the Fleet.

Their defense plan was a simple one; they dug their guns into the high ground in such a way that they had the beaches in a cross fire. Because they did not intend plan.

Enemy detense

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

Reinforced

to fire back at the Fleet, it was unnecessary to have their guns facing the sea. The advantages of such a plan are obvious. They could mount their guns in reinforced caves which had only small openings facing inland. The Fleet could have circled the island for weeks and still not have been able to bring direct fire to bear on the entrances of the caves. The guns dug into Mount Suribachi pointed to the north, while those in the cliffs overlooking the northern end of the beach faced to the south. The Fleet was firing from the east and west.

Japanese gun mounts concealed. Had the Navy known the exact location of the caves, they might have had some success in firing over Suribachi into the cliffs on the northern part of the island and vice versa; the Japanese, however, shrewdly avoided revealing their positions. Had the Japanese elected to return the Fleet's fire, they would have had to have their gun mounts exposed so that they could traverse the barrels at least forty-five degrees to the left or right. Instead they pulled their guns back under cover until only the muzzles were exposed. This meant that the fire from any one gun could cover only a small segment of the beach, but by coördinating the fire from all guns, they had the beach completely covered, and the beach was all they were interested in.

I go into this at length to counteract any notion that the Fleet did not give adequate support to the landing parties. For three days prior to D Day I was on a light cruiser. No fleet ever moved in closer and unloaded so

many high explosives on so small a stretch of land. For two of those three days a heavy mist obscured the island, so that even the observation planes hovering overhead could not tell with certainty where the shells were landing or how much damage they were doing. The Japanese camouflaged the entrances of their caves. Once the camouflage was torn away, succeeding salvos found their mark. In other places, however, the caves had armor-plated doors as protection, and luck was as essential as accuracy Luck in knocking them out. The entire faces of hills tumbled as well as down, but it was still anyone's guess whether the right accuracy caves had been sealed off in the process.

needed.

In walking around Iwo later, I saw cement blockhouses which the Navy had pulverized into pieces so small that I could have picked up and carried away what was left as a souvenir. The face of Suribachi had been pushed back fifteen feet. Remains of some Japanese showed the effect of eight- and sixteen-inch shells exploding at close range, and there were others dead with- the Navy's out a scratch on them. Their heads were grotesquely firepower. misshapen by concussion, however, just as though someone had taken a ball of putty and squeezed it. When the Navy had a definite target to aim at, it left no doubt of its firepower.

Whether Iwo will have any lasting military significance is something which men out here argue about. In the midst of mobile warfare, Iwo nearly proved that a stationary defense was invulnerable, but there were too Battle for Iwo inevitable. many flukes working against the invaders to make any generalization possible. Probably the most significant thing about the battle for Iwo was its inevitableness. No American operation was less secret. Everyone in the Pacific, including the Japanese, knew that the island had to be taken, knew approximately when it would be taken and how it would be taken. This does not imply faulty security. It simply means that Iwo was next on the list of steppingstones to Tokyo, and there was only one way to capture it.

The island could not be knocked out from the air or sea. It had to be stormed when the typhoon season had passed, and when the prevailing winds were such that the eastern beaches were on the leeward side of the island. The master stroke of American strategy was having a task force at large between Iwo and Japan. This left the Japanese on Iwo without air or naval support.

The Japanese, under the command of an artillery

officer, fought a smarter battle with better weapons than in any previous engagement. With an abrupt change of

Task force between Iwo and Japan.

tactics, they fought with the skill of the German Army. Yet 20,000 Japanese did not stop 40,000 Marines from landing in small boats from the open sea. Any evaluation of opposing tactics must, I suppose, be based on which side won, unless future historians prove that the Japanese

Evaluation of opposing tactics.

was worth.

324

made the United States pay more for Iwo than the island

There never should be another Iwo; that is, there Never never should be an occasion again in the Pacific when another American forces are confined to fighting without benefit Iwo. of heavy tanks, fast-moving artillery, and the other comnonents of large-scale mobile operations. Iwo was the last time that the odds were in favor of the Japanese. Odds in Usually they line their beaches with pillboxes and fight favor of a showdown battle on the shores of their islands. On Iwo, they left the actual beach comparatively undefended. They had a few pillboxes scattered between the shore and the first airfield, a quarter of a mile inland, but not nearly the number they had at Tarawa. Instead of fighting it out with the Marines at close hand, the Japanese sat back on their high ground and poured shells on the Marines, who were prepared to fight with rifles, machine guns, and grenades.

The first time I went onto the beach was D Day plus four. I went in with a large group of Fourth Division Marines. The beach was another Anzio. The Japanese Beach were lobbing shells into supply dumps, ammunition another depots, communication centers, and every other place Anzio. where they saw men or machinery concentrated. No man on the beach felt secure. The Americans held about one square mile of low ground at that point, most of which I toured. Everywhere men were struggling: to keep landing craft from submerging, to dig roads in the deep sand, to push mired trucks onto solid ground, to haul equipment to sheltered locations, and to fight nature

325

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

for the chance to get on with the battle. And all the time the Japanese shells whined down and tore into sand and flesh with indiscriminate fury.

Sand absorbed shrapnel.

Absence of dead Japanese. Trying as the volcanic sand of Iwo proved to be, it was also a blessing. The Japanese shells buried themselves, and the sand absorbed most of the shrapnel. Usually a man was killed instantly by having a shell land beside him in the foxhole, or he escaped without injury. This did not hold true when a shell landed in a boat, or when one dropped in the midst of a beach party. What impressed me most, however, was the absence of dead Japanese. Some had been buried, of course, and others had died underground, but it was unnatural to find so few bodies after so much fighting. There were American bodies—more than 3,000 of them buried or not yet buried—but where were the Japanese? Everyone I questioned simply pointed to the hills on the left and right and swore fervently.

On the top of his underground command post, rather like a woodchuck sunning himself close to the entrance of a hole, Major General Clifton B. Cates was sitting quietly when I came by. As Command Officer of the Fourth Marines, General Cates was a busy and worried man, but just at that point he seemed to be the only man in the American sector with nothing to do and with a desire to make conversation. Through binoculars he could see everything that was going on; his orders had

heen given, his troops knew what they had to do. He was "sweating it out."

I talked with General Cates for nearly thirty minutes. The loss of his men was a personal loss. It hurt him deeply. But he was cheered because the sun was out. All the day before it had rained, and rained hard. His men had been downcast, wet, tired, and many of them sick. The sun had boosted morale, which is the secret weapon Morale of the Marines. The General talked a lot about the new secret Japanese tactics. He spoke of how much he and the other weapon officers had learned on Iwo, and how they would have to change their own tactics. Variations in bombing and shelling techniques would make the next operation easier.

of Marines.

The General passed me his binoculars so that I could see two of his tanks burning on a hill. He issued a command to a subordinate and continued to talk about battles to come. Never did he doubt that Iwo would be won, or that he would lose many personal friends in the process; but always in his voice there was a strong note of confidence that there would never be another Iwo. As at Tarawa nearly a year and a half before, American forces had learned much.

One thing was apparent at Iwo: the Japanese had Japanese heavy weapons in large quantities. They possessed innu- heavy merable five-inch dual-purpose guns, equally good weapons. against planes or troops. The Japanese reserved their fire until the Marines were within their sights. They had

Large enemy mortars a bountiful collection of mortars, many of them larger than anything in use by the Allies. A mortar, actually, is only a reinforced stovepipe with a base plate and standard attached. Its value lies in the fact that it can be moved at will and can be fired as rapidly as a man can drop shells down the barrel. The Japanese were using some mortars which were as large as seven- or eight-inch guns. They were too large to be either mobile or rapid-firing, but from positions on high ground, they were deadly.

Rockets and robombs. Also unleashed for the first time at Iwo were large Japanese rockets and five-foot robombs. A forward observer one day was astonished to see doors swing open in a cave; in less time than he took to tell it, two Japanese wheeled out an eight-inch rocket-launcher, fired two projectiles, and disappeared into the cave, closing the doors behind them. The rocket fire was inaccurate, but with so many Marines crowded into a small area, accuracy was not essential. Yet here the robombs, dubbed "flying ashcans," were of little value, since most of them landed in the ocean. One robomb traveled the length of the island and cleared the top of Suribachi, the highest point on Iwo.

Horrifying carnage. No one who was at Iwo can analyze the battle objectively. The carnage was so horrifying that the blood and agony of the struggle saturated one's mind, dismally coloring all thought. Iwo was unlike any war I had ever seen. It was a fight to the finish, with no man asking for quarter until he was dead. Of the nearly 20,000 Ameri-

can casualties, approximately two thirds were wounded. but all except a few score of the 20,000 Japanese died where they fell. There is such a thing as dying decently, but not on Iwo. I do not believe anything practical can No dying he achieved by describing men blown apart. Veterans decently of two and three years of war in the Pacific were sick- on Iwo. ened. An estimated 26,000 men died in eight square miles of fighting. There were 5000 dead and wounded American and Japanese soldiers for every square mile.

I returned to Iwo on D Day plus six, seven, and eight. By that time the Marines had captured territory where Japanese had lain dead in the hot sun for more than Japanese a week. I crawled into pillboxes burned out by flame- dead. throwers, and into deep caves where the Japanese had been burning their own dead to conceal the extent of their losses. I was torturing myself to look at the results of war, because I think it is essential for civilians occasionally to hold their noses and see what is going on.

Somehow the sight and smell of the Japanese dead were bearable; mostly I think, because a dead Japanese does not look quite human. The yellow skin darkens and the bodies seem unusually small and characterless, like figures in a wax museum. One cannot look at them and be unmoved, but they lack the personal quality which grips the soul of an observer.

The sight on Iwo which I could not force myself to see again was the section of the beach allotted for an American American cemetery. The chaplains were endeavoring to cemetery.

identify each body and hold a brief, individual service for each man to be buried in the black sands of the barren island. Naturally the chaplains and the burial parties were far behind in their work. The dead were brought in faster than they could be buried.

Half-acre
of dead
Marmes.

On the afternoon I walked by, there was half an acre of dead Marines stretched out so close together that they blanketed the beach for two hundred yards. The stench was overpowering. There, in mangled lots, not laid in neat rows, was part of the price paid for Iwo. All I could think of as I hurried by was the old priest who died in Dostoevski's *The Brothers Karamazov* and shocked his followers by decomposing before the burial service. The smell of one's countrymen rotting in the sun is a lasting impression.

Perhaps one becomes accustomed to it. To me it was an experience which made it impossible for me to return to Iwo. Undoubtedly I shirked my duty, but I never could have been an impartial observer after that. I still have not attempted an article on Iwo. While that smell remains in my consciousness, I cannot evaluate the battle for Iwo objectively. The Marines fought with courage and determination seemingly beyond human capabilities They died the hard way.

"They died the hard way."

[March 17, 1945. Coblenz falls to the Allies. March 20. British and Indian troops take Mandalay in Burma March 23. Lieut. General Patton's troops storm across



UNITED STATES MARINI S CROUCH IN THE VOLCANIC SANDS OF IWO JIMA I ARLY IN THE INVASION OF THIS VITAL SLEPPING STONE TO JAPAN, HERUARY 19, 1915 (Pages 345-359) TROM AN OFFICIAL U.S. MARINE CORPS PROFUGRAPH

Rhine. March 29. Frankfort is cleared of German troops. March 30. Russians take Danzig. April 1. United States forces invade Okinawa, key island of the Ryukyu chain Okinawa and stepping-stone to Tokyo. April 5. Russia denounces invaded. her neutrality pact with Japan. April 8. United States fliers sink Yamato, Japan's largest warship. April 12. President Roosevelt dies suddenly at Warm Springs, Georgia. Vice-President Harry S. Truman takes oath as 32nd President of the United States.]

FAREWELL TO F. D. R.

(A.D. 1945)

I. F. STONE

R. ROOSEVELT'S body was brought back to Washington today for the last time. The crowds began to gather early in Lafayette Park opposite the White House, as they did all along the gather. line of the procession from Union Station. I got down to the park early and stood with many others waiting. Some small boys climbed into a tree for a better view. The gray tip of the Washington Monument showed above the White House. The trees were in full green; tulips bloomed on the lawn. Outside on the sidewalk there were soldiers in helmets every few feet, and we could hear the harsh tones of command as the guard of Guard honor lined up on the White House lawn. Florists' trucks of honor. pulled up at the door, and huge wreaths were taken inside. Cameras were set up on the front porch, and camera men were perched on high ladders on the sidewalks and among us in the park. Birds sang, but the crowd was quiet.

Reprinted by permission of The Nation.

People from all walks of life are present.

In the park I recognized a group of girls from the C.I.O. offices in nearby Jackson Place, Walter Lippmann and an Army and Navy Club bellboy with a sensitive Negro face. There were soldiers and sailors, Waves and Wacs. There were many Negroes, some of them quite obviously housemaids. There were well-dressed women and men in shirt sleeves. I noticed a small middle-aged priest, several grave and owlish Chinese, many service men with their wives or sweethearts, a tired man in overalls and blue-denim work cap. A tall gangling Negro boy in jitterbug jacket and pork-pie hat towered above the crowd in front of me. A man who seemed to be a hobo, unshaven and dirty, jarred the silence with a loud laugh at something a child behind him had said. There were close-mouthed New England faces, Jewish faces, Midwestern faces; workers and business men and housewives, all curiously alike in their patience and in the dumb stolidity that is often sorrow's aspect.

Sarraiv's aspect.

Procession approaches.

A truck sped by on Pennsylvania Avenue. On the roof of the truck two navy men operated a movie camera, taking pictures of the crowd. Far above us, twenty-four Flying Fortresses roared across the skies in proud formation. One remembered the President's 50,000-plane speech, and choked. Motorcycle police heralded the procession's approach. The marching men, the solemn bands, the armored cars, the regiment of Negro soldiers, the uniformed women's detachments, the trucks filled with soldiers, and the black limousines carrying officials

and the President's family went by slowly. They seemed part of an unreal pageant by comparison with the one glimpse of what we had come to see—the coffin covered Coffin with a flag. Many faces in the crowd puckered as it went covered past. In that one quick look thousands of us said our goodbys to a great and good man, and to an era.

with flag.

I was at the PM office in New York Thursday when it happened. There was a commotion in the newsroom. A copy-boy ran out of the wire-room with a piece of United Press copy in his hand. That first flash, "The President died this afternoon," seemed incredible: like something in a nightmare, far down under the horror Roosevelt's was the comfortable feeling that you would wake to find death a it was all a dream. The Romans must have felt this way when word came that Caesar Augustus was dead. Later, when work was done, I went to a meeting of liberals in an apartment on Washington Square. It was a gloomy gathering, much too gloomy to honor so buoyant a spirit as Mr. Roosevelt's. Some felt that with his passing the Big Three would split up, that hope of a new world organization was dim. One of those present reported, apropos, that an automobile-company official in Detroit had told a delegation of visiting French newspapermen, "Next we fight the Soviet Union." Some thought the Nazis would be encouraged to hold out, that the war had been lengthened by the President's passing. Every-trouble one seemed to feel that trouble, serious trouble, lay ahead. ahead.

nightmare.

The Roosevelt era.

I don't want to sound like Pollyanna, but I can remember so many crepe-hanging sessions of this kind since 1932. The Roosevelt era, for folk who scare easily, was a series of scares. Just before he took office, when the bonus marchers were driven out of Washington, revolution seemed to be around the corner. There was the banking crisis. The NRA was suspected of being the beginning of fascism; one of my friends in New York cautiously erased his name from the volumes of Marx and Lenin he owned; he felt the men with the bludgeons might be in his apartment any day. The Supreme Court knocked one piece of reform legislation after another on the head, and Mr. Roosevelt, when he set out to fight back, showed a deplorable disrespect for the constitutional amenities. There were the Chicago massacre and the Little Steel strike. There was Hitler. France fell when our armed forces were in good shape for a war with Nicaragua. The Japs sank most of the fleet at Pearl Harbor. It was a lush era for Cassandras.

Roosevelt's leadership.

Personal courage.

Somehow we pulled through before, and somehow we'll pull through again. In part it was luck. In part it was Mr. Roosevelt's leadership. In part it was the quality of the country and its people. I don't know about the rest of the four freedoms, but one thing Mr. Roosevelt gave the United States in one crisis after another, and that was freedom from fear. Perhaps his most important contribution was the example, the superlative example, of his personal courage. Perhaps some of us will feel less

gloomy if we remember it. Perhaps some of us will be more effective politically if we also learn from Mr. Roosevelt's robust realism, his ability to keep his eye on the Robust main issue and not worry too much about the minor details.

realism.

I found the mood of the intellectuals and New Dealers in Washington this week-end quite different from that in New York. There has been much swapping of information and sidelights, and there is a good deal of con- Confidence fidence in the new President. No one, least of all Mr. Truman, an impressively modest man, expects him fully to fill Mr. Roosevelt's shoes. But the general feeling among those who know Mr. Truman is that he will surprise the skeptical. I can only record my own impression for whatever it is worth. I talked with Mr. Truman several years ago and liked him immediately and instinctively. The Presidency is a terrific job, and it remains to be seen how he will stand up under its pressure. But he is a good man, an honest man, a devoted man. Our country could be far more poorly served. Mr. Truman Truman's is a hard worker, decisive, a good executive. He works character well with people. He is at once humble about his own and ability. knowledge and capacities, as a wise man should be, and quietly confident about his ability to learn and to rise to the occasion.

in the new President.

I hate to confess it, but I think Mr. Roosevelt was astute and farsighted in picking Mr. Truman rather than Mr. Wallace as his successor. At this particular moment in

Good-will of all Democrats.

Friendly relations with the Senate.

Close to progressives andNew Dealers.

our history, Mr. Truman can do a better job. Mr. Wal. lace's accession might have split the country wide open, not because of Mr. Wallace but because of the feeling against him on the right. Mr. Truman has the good-will of both sides and is in a position to capitalize on the sobering influence of Mr. Roosevelt's passing. The heaviest task of the President lies in the field of foreign relations, and the biggest obstacle to its accomplishment is in the Senate. It is fortunate that Mr. Truman's greatest and most obvious political assets are his relations with the Senate. He is a friendly person, and was well liked on both sides of the aisle. Isolationists like Wheeler and La Follette are among his friends, and he may be able to exert an influence with them that circumstances and the momentum of past events denied to Mr. Roosevelt The chances of a two-thirds' vote in the Senate for the new peace organization are improved by the shift in the Presidency. I say this with no disrespect to our great departed leader.

I think Mr. Truman will carry on Mr. Roosevelt's work. He had been very effective in support of Mr. Roosevelt in the Senate. I can authoritatively report that the famous B2H2 resolution originated in Mr. Truman's office. Three of the sponsors, Senators Ball, Burton, and Hatch, were members of the Truman committee. Mr. Truman's closest personal friends in the Senate were Kilgore of West Virginia and Wallgren of Washington, both sturdy progressives and good New Dealers. There will be changes in the Cabinet, perhaps some for the better. On domestic policy Mr. Truman's record is an excellent one, and labor has nothing to fear from him. Labor has The shock of Mr. Roosevelt's death has created an atmosphere in which the new President may be able to unite the nation more closely than ever and carry it forward to that stable peace Mr. Roosevelt so deeply desired.

nothing to fear.

[April 13, 1945. Vienna falls to Russian forces. April 17. United States drive on Berlin halts as General Eisenhower's forces concentrate on reducing pockets behind the battle line. April 19. Americans launch offensive in southern Okinawa. April 20. Nuremburg falls to the Allies. April 21. Russians enter Berlin. Allied Fifth and Eighth Armies win Bologna. April 25. Delegates to the United Nations Conference on International Organiza-San tion convene at San Francisco. April 28. Benito Musso- Francisco lini is executed by Italian partisans. April 29. Allied Conference. troops seize Milan and Venice. April 30. Munich is captured by Allies. May 1. Death of Hitler is announced. May 2. Berlin falls to the Russians. Germans in Italy surrender unconditionally to the United Nations. May 8. V-E Day is celebrated as unconditional surrender of Germany is announced.]

VICTORY IN EUROPE

(A.D. 1945)

PEACE that passeth all understanding came to the world this week. It was anticlimactic, it was premature, it was confusing, it was the greatest news snafu of all time—but it was wonderful. On the 2,075th day of the biggest, costliest war in history, some Costliest 25,000,000 men ceased fighting. The hardest peace ever war ends. to fall on a nation in modern times was meted out to Germany by the 48 countries that had declared war on the Reich. Ahead lay the difficult problems of the peace and the hard struggle to bring to an end the other half of the global war, the war against Japan. But for a few days at least a great burden was lifted from much of mankind.

Tuesday, May 8, was the official V-E Day in the United States. At 9 A.M. President Harry S. Truman V-E Day broadcast a short speech to the nation reminding all that the "fighting job" would not be done until "the last Japanese division has surrendered unconditionally." Then the President read his proclamation announcing that "the Allied armies, through sacrifice and devotion and

Reprinted by permission of Newsweek.

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

Unconditional surrender. with God's help, have won from Germany a final and unconditional surrender."

A few minutes after the President spoke, Prime Minister Churchill announced that hostilities would officially end throughout Europe at 12:01 A.M. Wednesday, May 9 British time (fighting actually ceased at 11:01 P.M. Central European Time). He proclaimed both May 8 and 9 as Britain's official V-E Days and ended with a rousing: "Advance Britannia! Long live the cause of freedom! God save the King!"

General rejoicing.

That was the official news for which the world had been waiting for nearly two weeks. Throughout the United States, in London, Paris, Moscow, and dozens of other capitals bells pealed, crowds shouted—or prayed—and in general rejoiced. But the official celebration was an anticlimax nearly everywhere except in Russia. In one of the greatest scoops in journalistic history, the Associated Press broke the news of the German capitulation 24 hours before the official release. The Germans themselves had earlier announced their surrender in a broadcast by Count Lutz Schwerin von Krosigk.

The capitulation was actually signed at 2:41 A.M. Monday at General of the Army Eisenhower's headquarters at Rheims in northern France. Both Churchill and President Truman stood ready to read their victory proclamations. But somehow it turned out to be hard for them to get in touch with Stalin to arrange a coordinated announcement, and impossible to arrange it for Monday.

Victory
proclamation is
delayed.

One story was that Stalin wanted to talk to the Soviet representative who signed the surrender before he committed himself. The result was the wild but officially pre- Premature mature celebration in New York, London, and Paris. celebrations. Only the Russians had no victory hangover on Tuesday. They didn't know of the surrender until Stalin was ready to announce it.

An entire nation died at Rheims on Monday morning. For days the end had been obvious to all and it was equally obvious that the task of Grand Admiral Karl Doenitz, who succeeded Hitler as Führer, was to surrender what remained of the German armed forces.

Then finally, as in 1918, the Germans came to the Allies and asked for terms—any terms. However, it was not so simple as 1918, when the German representatives Not so were escorted across the desert of no man's land and simple taken to the famous Wagon Lits restaurant car in the as 1918. Compiègne Forest, where for almost two hours Marshal Ferdinand Foch loudly and slowly read out the terms of surrender. And it was in terrible contrast to the scene that took place in the same railway car in 1940 when a jubilant Hitler dictated a harsh peace to the French.

This time Grand Admiral Doenitz from his headquarters-presumably located in Norway-contacted Allied The Allies Supreme Headquarters. He then sent Gen. Admiral are Hans Georg von Friedeburg, the sad-faced, lachrymose contacted. officer who negotiated the surrender of the Germans in the north to Field Marshal Sir Bernard L. Montgomery.

Friedeburg arrived at Eisenhower's headquarters at Rheims on Saturday. After the negotiations began it turned out that Friedeburg didn't have the power to offer unconditional surrender. On Sunday Doenitz sent a man who did—a tall, ramrod-stiff Prussian, Col. Gen. Gustav Jodl, new Chief of Staff of the Germany Army.

Germans
agree
to terms.

Jodl pleaded and argued through Sunday night—to no avail. Early Monday morning the Germans gave in and agreed to the terms set by the Allies. Correspondents were summoned to the 30- by 30-foot, map-lined personal war room of General Eisenhower. Lights blazed fiercely and throughout the ceremony photographers scrambled madly about. Across a rickety wooden table Jodl and Friedeburg faced the Allied representatives—Lt. Gen. Walter Bedell Smith, Eisenhower's Chief of Staff, looking weary after 33 hours of negotiating; Gen François Sevez, the breathless French Assistant Staff Chief; and Gen. Ivan Susloparoff, the Russian representative, accompanied by a translator with a bald head and a baleful eye which he fixed on the Germans.

Signing
of capitulation
at Rheims.

At exactly 2:41 the signing of the four copies of the documents—one each for Britain, the United States, Russia and France—was completed. Jodl asked permission to speak. He rose from the black-topped table. Every muscle in his pock-marked face was taut with emotion. In half-choked voice, he said: "With this signature, the German people and armed forces are for better or worse delivered into the victors' hands. In this war, which has

'sted more than five years, both have achieved and suffered more than perhaps any other people in the world."

Later on Tuesday the surrender was formalized be-Surrender tween the Germans and Russians directly in Berlin with in Berlin. Marshal Gregory Zhukoff, commander of the First White Russian Army, signing for the Soviets and Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel, Commander-in-Chief of the Wehrmacht, signing for the Germans.

The Reich had dropped to the lowest estate ever reached by a modern nation. Grand Admiral Doenitz himself broadcast the requiem: "Soldiers of the German Wehrmacht . . . are starting out on the bitter road to Bitter captivity . . . The foundations on which the German road to Reich was erected have collapsed . . . The [Nazi] party captivity. has left the scene of its activities. With the occupation of Germany, power has been transferred to the powers of occupation."

The pattern taken by events leading up to the German capitulation was as anticlimactic as the surrender itself and as wrapped in mystery as the rest of the negotiations. In the first place, Heinrich Himmler, the Gestapo chief, apparently dropped out of the picture. His name was last Himmler's mentioned when Count Folke Bernadotte, the Swedish proposal. go-between, arrived in Stockholm without any reply to the three-power demand that Himmler surrender to the United States, Britain, and Russia together and not to the United States and Britain alone, as Himmler had proposed.

Survender qualified. Thereupon Admiral Doenitz took over—and immediately proceeded so far as he was able, to see to it that the Germans surrendered only to the Americans and British On May 4, he qualified the surrender of the German forces in Holland, Denmark, and northwest German to the British by broadcasting that: "The war against the Western Powers has become senseless and will only lead to the shedding of precious German blood. Resistance against the Soviets is being continued to save as many Germans as possible from the Bolshevik terror."

To a considerable extent, this strategy succeeded. It is part of the nature of unconditional surrender that it is almost impossible to refuse it when offered. The result was the extraordinary spectacle, unparalleled in military history, of the Germans fighting fiercely against the Russians in order to get to points where they could surrender to the Americans and British. The German High Command communiqué on May 5 had this Alice in Wonderland statement. "Further units of our Ninth and Twelfth armies have fought their way through to American-occupied territory."

Germans continue fighting Russians

Effort to split Allics. The obvious German objective was, even in defeat, to split the Anglo-Americans from the Russians. Furthermore, the Germans were attempting to build up the legend of a Reich that went down heroically fighting Bolshevism while it was stabbed in the back by the British and Americans. Count von Krosigk broadcast that Germany "formed the bulwark of Europe . . .



REPRESENTATIVES OF NAZEGERMANY (θ_{ab}), and suppresent the presentation of the angles of representation of respectively. TROW IN INTERVITORIA STAND PRODUCTION

against the Red flood. She could have saved Europe from Bolshevism had her rear not been menaced." In what may be a corollary to this policy, the Doenitz regime also apparently decided to cooperate officially with the west-Allies. The Germans were ordered to help repair railways insofar as they were permitted, not to blow up bridges, not to sabotage ships, and "abstain from any illegal fighting activity in the Werewolf or other organirations in enemy-occupied western territories."

The Nazis had vanished from the scene. But a new German plan to regain power by a division between the Western powers and the Russians was already taking shape.

The mighty war machine which the Nazis built to conquer the world flew into pieces last week. Under the hammering blows of General of the Army Eisenhower's offensive, the vast pockets where the Nazis planned to Nazi carry on a war beyond war turned out to be traps for what remained of the Wehrmacht.

pockets are traps.

crackup

The German crackup began in Italy, where Army German Group "C" surrendered on May 2. In swift succession, begins. the Germans in the other major pockets followed suit. They surrendered their forces in Holland, Denmark, Helgoland, the Frisian Islands, and Northwest Germany on May 5, and Army Group "G" in Western Austria and Bavaria on May 6. And on May 7 the Germans surrendered everything left.

Peace feelers in Italy. On March 2, two German officers representing Gen. Karl Wolff, Nazi plenipotentiary and chief of Elite Guard formations in Northern Italy, approached Allied agents in Switzerland with peace feelers. Six days later they returned to the unidentified Swiss border town, accompanied by Wolff, who professed willingness to discuss surrender. He said that Field Marshal Albert Kesselring, then commanding German forces in Italy, would fall in line. Field Marshal Sir Harold R. L. G. Alexander, Allied commander of the Mediterranean theater notified the Allied governments.

The Allied officers returned to Italy and Alexander opened his offensive. That brought definite assurances from Wolff. On April 28, a plane brought the German peace delegation to "Alexander's headquarters in the Italian royal summer palace at Caserta. The Germans a lieutenant colonel and a major respectively appearing for Col. Gen. Heinrich von Vietinghoff, new German commander in Italy, and Wolff, wore civilian sports clothes.

Germans surrender at Caserta.

Sitting on a chair at one end of a highly polished table, underneath a ceiling which still bore Fascist symbols, the two Germans took turns putting their signature on five copies of the agreement on the afternoon of April 29. Lt. Gen. W. D. Morgan, Alexander's Chief of Staff, sitting at the other end of the table, signed them swiftly.

Thus the German command turned over nearly one million men.

The stage for capitulation to Field Marshal Sir Berpard L. Montgomery meanwhile had been set by the greatest disorganized surrender in German history. As German the Russians swept through the province of Mecklenburg army to Rostock, the Germans declared Hamburg an open disorganized city and the British entered. Montgomery sent a spearhead across the Elbe River to Wismar on the Baltic. where it met the Russians. The Germans reacted like terror-stricken rats. By the tens of thousands they sped along the roads toward the Allied lines. The prisoner bag amounted to an estimated 300,000 in three days.

On May 3 a German delegation of four came to the British with a white flag and a curious request. They Curious were Admiral Hans Georg von Friedeburg, new com- request. mander-in-chief of the German Navy and also a general of the army, General Kinsel, chief of staff to Field Marshal Ernst Busch, Wehrmacht commander in the north, and two officers of their staffs. Brought to Montgomery's headquarters on Lüneburg Heath—the great training ground of the German Army south of Hamburg-they asked acceptance of the surrender of three German armies—the Twelfth, Twenty-first, and Third Panzer which were fleeing from the advancing Russians. Montgomery flatly refused, telling them to negotiate with the Russians.

Countering with a demand for the capitulation of all Counter forces opposing him, including those in Denmark, Hel- demand. goland, and the Frisian Islands, Montgomery gave the

Germans a look at his operational map of the western front. Then he let them think it over at lunch, which the Germans ate by themselves to the sound of the sobs of Friedeburg, who burst into tears as soon as Montgomery was out of sight.

At 4 o'clock Friedeburg and an aide went back to the German lines. The next afternoon at 5 the admiral returned to sign the agreement. A cold drizzle whipped down as the German delegation awaiting Montgomery stood before a weather-beaten tent.

Montgomery, wearing British battle-dress with red lapel tabs and his field marshal's insignia, finally sauntered down the path, bearing copies of the surrender agreement. To reporters he said out of the corner of his mouth: "This is the moment." When he entered the tent the Germans snapped to attention. Montgomery sat down and waved them to chairs around a table covered with blue cloth. As cameras clicked, Monty put on hornrimmed spectacles and read the terms.

"This is the moment."

One by one the Germans signed, betraying no emotion. Then, taking up the wooden pen, Montgomery wrote his name on the copies. Later he remarked: "This is a good egg." By that he meant the prisoners that fell into his hands. They totaled somewhere between 500,000 and 1,000,000 men.

Wholesale debacle. The wholesale debacle of the Wehrmacht in Italy and Northern Germany took the little spirit that remained out of Lt. Gen. Fritz Schultz's Army Group "G" which

opposed the Allies in Western Austria and Bavaria. Seventh Army infantry divisions, pounding through the mountains of the "National Redoubt," burst into Berch- American. tesgaden, the sleepy Bavarian town Hitler used as a rural in Berchretreat. SS men had burnt the Führer's chalet before tengaden. seeing. American soldiers ran their flag up the pole that had borne the swastika and then dipped it to half-staff in mourning for the late President Roosevelt. On May 4. the 103rd Division of the Seventh Army reached the Brenner Pass, continued south, passing armed Germans who saluted them with precision, and made a juncture Brenner with men of the American 28th Division from Italy at Pass 10:51 A.M. at the town of Vipiteno.

luncture.

That evening, a German delegation, acting on the authority of Field Marshal Albert Kesselring, southern front commandant, entered the Third Division's lines near Salzburg on a surrender mission to Gen. Jacob L. Devers' Sixth Army Group headquarters. The ten emissaries, headed by Lt. Gen. Hermann Foertsch, found Devers and other generals outside of Munich in the art Surrender museum of Prof. Joseph Thorak, reported to have been outside of Hitler's favorite sculptor.

Munich.

"It's understood this is unconditional surrender," Devers said incisively. When Foertsch nodded, the agreements were signed. The dour-faced Germans marked maps with blue pencils to show the positions of their troops. They confessed that they knew little of what they had to surrender. They guessed there were between 200,000 and 400,000 men.

Fate of remaining German forces.

The German surrenders at Rheims and Berlin sealed the fate of the remaining German forces. The Norwegian garrison apparently prepared to march eastward and give up to the Swedes. German forces on the Channel Islands, the Aegean Islands, and in the French ports waited for the Allies to come and take them over. In the great southeastern pocket an estimated million men of army groups A, E, and South battled the Reds to the last. But it was the end of them too.

Berlin Reichschancellery. Smoke and flame poured from the remains of the gray and somber Reichschancellery in Berlin. The windows which looked on the wrecked Wilhelmstrasse were blocked high with stacks of books out of which poked German machine guns. Behind them slumped the gunners, stiff in death, with Iron Crosses pinned to their uniforms. The main entrance was barricaded with large boxes of crosses and oak leaves.

No sign
of Hitler's
body.

In the high-ceilinged, grandiose rooms the floors shook and glowed with heat from raging fires. "Nothing was visible through the smoke and the heat," wrote a correspondent—least of all, any signs that might lead to Hitler's body or disclose his manner of death.

At the White House President Truman told reporters last week he was convinced Hitler was dead. He based his opinion on what he called the best possible evidence at this time.

The Moscow Radio quoted Propaganda Minister loseph Goebbels's captured assistant, Dr. Hans Fritsche. as telling his interrogators that both Hitler and Goebbels Hitler committed suicide in the doomed German capital. (The said to be Russians later said they had found Goebbels's body.) It also reported that Berliners generally believed Hitler to have committed suicide. Later still, Moscow quoted Fritsche as saying that Hitler's body "has been hidden in a place which will be impossible to find."

Another version was that Hitler died of a cerebral Report of hemorrhage. (His father died of a stroke.) General of cerebral the Army Eisenhower announced from Supreme Headquarters that Heinrich Himmler told Count Folke Bernadotte of Sweden at their meeting April 24: "Hitler was so ill that he might already be dead. At any rate, he could not live more than two days longer. General Schillenburg, who was also present, added that Hitler was suffering from a brain hemorrhage."

hemorrhage.

Field Marshal Karl von Rundstedt, taken prisoner by the United States Seventh Army, contributed the fact that when he last saw Hitler in Berlin on March 12 the Führer was "Shaking as if he had the palsy." Rundstedt Führer thought the Führer actually was killed in Berlin because "a brave "he was a brave man."

man."

From a German military hospital at Amberg, Bavaria, Maj. Erwin Giesing, the physician who examined Hitler after the bomb attempt last July 20, expressed doubts that the Führer died of a stroke. He declared: "When

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

I last saw Hitler [last Feb. 15] he was sound of hear and lungs . . . his condition could not have deteriorated to such an extent in the ten weeks since I last saw him.

Out of the catacombs of the broken city, out of the sewers and the cellars and the choking dust, stumbled the men who were to rule the world. They came with their heads down and their hands up, holding tablecloths, handkerchiefs, baby cloths—anything that looked like a surrender flag.

Retribution comes to Berlin. Retribution had come to Berlin. Marshal Stalin announced the city's fall on May 2 with a victory salute of 24 rounds from 324 guns just after Moscow lifted its blackout. In the slaughter of Berlin the Germans lost 343,000 in killed or captured, and the terrible 325-mile trail from the Vistula to the Wilhelmstrasse involved 1,800,000 German casualties.

Columns
of the
vanquished.

All day in Berlin the long gray columns of the vanquished shuffled wearily through the streets. Complete hopelessness on their grimy bearded faces, they tramped in humiliation under the massive sandstone arch of the Brandenburg Gate, its eighteenth-century Chariot of Victory surmounted now by the red hammer and sickle banner. Red Army tommy-gunners watched them as they continued down the Unter den Linden, toward the monument of Frederick the Great with its symbolic figures of Moderation, Justice, Strength, and Wisdom. Ahead were the inevitable prisoner-of-war cages and the possibly long years of rebuilding cities destroyed in the heyday of Nazism. Some 5,000,000 civilians were estimated to still be in Berlin-facing starvation and disease.

But under Col. Gen. Nikolai Berzarin, Soviet Commandant of the Berlin occupation forces, order began to Order emerge. In the comparatively undamaged suburbs, fac- begins to tories and municipal institutions were restored with the enforced aid of special German squads of engineers. The Russians hoped that some electric stations and water mains would be working in a very few days. Twenty hospitals were opened to care for wounded civilians. Food began to trickle in from the outlying districts, and the Red Army opened some bakeries and food stores for the starving population. Berliners lined up with documents and identifications, and stared wonderingly at the signs being plastered on the shattered walls: "The Red Army has no intention of exterminating the German people."

At Zossen, 20 miles south of Berlin, the Russians found Russians the underground headquarters of the German General find German Staff. In the telegraph room the clock had stopped at undertwenty minutes to three, the moment on April 21 when headthe general staff had fled. Correspondents found the last quarters. exchange of messages:

- O. Is there nobody in Berlin who could be sent off with a dispatch?
 - A. There is not.
 - Q. My God, what is happening?
 - A. We've fought ourselves to a standstill.

A.D. 1545

Q. Attention, I have an urgent message for Field Marshal Keitel . . .

- A. I told you, we are not accepting anything else ...
- Q. I should like to know what your situation is.
- A. They have all ratted. I am the last . . . there is a noose around my neck . . . Ivan is at the door. I'm cutting the wires.

But the lone operator never cut the wires. When the Soviet tommy-gunners marched in, he forgot the noove and meekly put up his hands.

[May 9, 1945. Russian armies battle German dichards who refuse to lay down arms in Czechoslovakia pocket. May 10. Point plan for army demobilization is announced. May 12. The United States opposes Yugoslav claims to Trieste. May 13. Over 500 Superfortresses blast Nagoya in greatest B-29 raid. Russians virtually complete task of mopping up German stragglers in Czechoslovakia. May 17. United States Marines enter Naha on Okinawa. May 19. Chinese forces occupy Foochow. May 22. Tension in Trieste eases as Marshal Tito compromises with American and British demands. May 23. Approximately 550 Superfortresses strike Tokyo. May 25. Japanese capital is again blitzed by gigantic B-29 blow. May 29. Yokohama is bombarded by enormous force of Superfortresses.]

door."

"Ivan is

B-29's bombard Japan.

WE MUST WIN ANOTHER BATTLE IN GERMANY

(A.D. 1945)

CURT RIESS

MUNICH (By Wireless).

FTER a few weeks in occupied Germany, and interviews and conversations with Germans of \ all walks of life, age groups, social backgrounds and convictions, you feel frustrated and utterly exasperated. You almost come to have the highest respect for Hitler, who evidently ran this country for thirteen years against the furious opposition, or at least the silent disapproval, of all its seventy-odd million inhabitants.

Frustratedfeeling.

It is difficult, if not impossible, to find a Nazi these days who admits being one or ever having been one. All Hard you find are people who profess extreme happiness about a Nazi. their "liberation" and are utterly servile and frightened.

to find

Needless to say, we don't believe them or most of them. We know that if they resent Hitler and other Nazi leaders today it is because Hitler lost the war. If they—subjectively—oppose Nazi methods now it is be-

Copyright, 1945, by The New York Times Company; reprinted by permission of the author.

cause these Nazi methods have failed to bring about German world domination and have got the Germans into the worst situation they have ever been in. If Hitler had succeeded they would still be for him, which means, as far as we are concerned, that they are still Nazis.

Germans not convinced they were wrong.

In short, the fact that our armies and air fleets proved superior to the Nazis' and that we achieved victory does not mean that the Germans are convinced, or can become so, that they were wrong and we right. Never in history has a military victory in itself changed or "re-educated" those who lost the war.

People confused and confusing.

It would be difficult to give a composite picture of the German mind today. Talking to Germans confuses you in no small measure, partly perhaps because Germans themselves are so confused.

Looking over my notes of the last few days I find the following:

Spoke to an old woman living in the town of Dachau. She inspected with horror in her eyes the dead bodies of inmates of the concentration camp shipped from Buchenwald who were left starving in freight cars. The woman wept and said she knew of the existence of the concentration camp but not that such things happened.

"This swine Hitler, these Nazi criminals—you must shoot them all," she wailed, crossing herself constantly.

I saw a full German general along a rainy, muddy little road. He was waiting in full-dress uniform to surrender to whoever came. He had emerged from his pri-

A.D. 1945 WE MUST WIN ANOTHER BATTLE

vate villa in the neighborhood when he learned that Hitler was dead.

"I haven't sworn allegiance to Doenitz," he said, "and am now free to do what I have wanted to do these last two years."

I interviewed the old manager of the most important Nazi publishing house who for twenty years published all the Nazi literature and papers. He said: "I never ap- Never proved of everything the Nazis did. I told Hitler so approved myself. I even had a Jewish friend. You must simply of Nazis. consider me as a business man with no political views."

Indeed he was a business man making millions printing what he didn't believe.

I talked to an army interpreter in a German warprisoner camp who claimed to have been "nice" to Brit- "Nice" to ish prisoners. He begged me to ask them, which I did, British and they confirmed that indeed he had been nice to them prisoners. during the last year when he knew that the Nazis wouldn't win.

I saw a man imprisoned for a minor offense and about to be shot when American troops entered Munich and thus saved his life. He told me this and continued: "You know, during the first days after liberation Munich foreign workers entered and looted several Munich homes. They stole from me my last two pounds of butter. Isn't Two pounds it disgusting?"

of butter.

I saw an elderly SS general who had donned civilian clothes sitting after his arrest in the waiting room of the

Subdued but still complaining offices of the Military Government where he was to be interrogated. This man had been personally responsible for killing countless men of all nationalities in Nazi camps. Now he was a little old man subdued and afraid but still complaining that the guards refused to let him go to the toilet alone or talk to other arrested people.

Devoted to his family. I talked to the maid of an arrested Nazi big shot. Though this man has a criminal record stretching over fifteen years the maid felt certain that a grave mistake had been made. She said, "My boss has been so devoted to his family; he lived but for his wife and children and was so good to us servants."

I talked to a well-known actor who for many years was a favorite of the Nazis, hobnobbing with them, living with them on their estates and making countless propaganda pictures.

"I never was interested in politics," he said. "Basically I was opposed to nazism, which doesn't permit the functioning of freedom of art."

This list could be continued ad nauseam.

Afraid of the Russians. In most of these people you can find certain common denominators: They're all frightened—afraid mainly of the Russians but also of the Western Allies as until a short time ago they were afraid of the Gestapo. And they feel disappointed at and disgusted by recent developments, which doesn't mean by nazism.

Then you have certain groups or schools of thinking or reactions. You have the so-called decent Germans,

AD. 1945 WE MUST WIN ANOTHER BATTLE

those who have in some measure proved that they are So-called anti-Nazi. But they don't necessarily welcome us. Some decent of them are even furious at us. Take, for instance, the Germans. Bishop of Muenster, Count Clemens von Galen, who opposed the Nazis on many issues but who since we hombed his city seems to feel that this was the greatest wrong committed in this war.

Then there are those who have admitted the German guilt and are prepared to take the consequences, to suffer and pay—this is the line of those organized in "Free Germany."

The largest group is composed of Germans who feel, above all, that they have suffered enough and should be left alone or given an opportunity to remake their lives. Many, perhaps most, belonging to this group are quite happy about our coming because they believe that we will improve their situation.

I talked to German business men and industrialists and found these people just as arrogant as ever. They believe Arrogant that the world simply has to do something for Germany, as ever. the implication being that a world without Germany wouldn't be worth living in. And they are by no means moderate in their demands. Others who have proved beyond doubt that they were strong anti-Nazis and who remained inside Germany not without taking great risks, asked me: "Why did we work against Hitler? Why did we go on under the gravest dangers if we are now going to starve or die from epidemics?" These people invari-

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

Atlantic Charter for all. ably throw into the discussion the Atlantic Charter, declaring that this document doesn't make sense if it isn't meant for all the people of the world.

In short, as far as all these Germans are concerned the war is over and the peace for them should be wonderful, or, at least, a vast improvement. They want us to change things for them though they haven't the slightest intention of changing themselves. They even don't think that there is such a necessity, for what are we going to do about it; what can we do about it? they ask.

There are optimists among us who believe that we won't have to interfere in the matter of German re-education. They feel that once the Germans begin to reflect and think out for themselves the reasons for the mess in which they are, they will re-educate themselves. To be sure, this is a possibility. But the world can't take a chance on it. The world has taken too many chances in believing in the "better Germans."

World can't take a chance.

There are others who believe that the re-education of the Germans will not be too difficult or take too long. These people say that since it took Hitler only about ten years to make the Germans what they are today, it will not take us longer to undo what the Nazis accomplished. In my opinion this is an illusion. The Nazi teachers could succeed in making the Germans into Nazi robots so speedily because most Germans did not have any basic view, any "weltanschauung" which opposed

Re-education to be hard and long. AD. 1945 WE MUST WIN ANOTHER BATTLE

nazism and had to be destroyed. But now the situation is different.

The Nazi Germans have basic views which must be Basic views destroyed or proved absurd before they can be replaced must be by something saner.

destroved.

In dealing with the subject of re-education we must. however, not take the moment of our entry into Germany as a final measure of the German mental and psychological situation. This moment represents nothing but a certain stage within the mental development of the Germans. When we began to occupy Germany the Germans—any number of Germans—were no longer what they had been a year or two before. A year or two after the Allied occupation is a fait accompli these same Germans will no longer be what they are now. They will have developed further. In what direction, to which viewpoints—that is the question.

Time will work for us and against us. It will work Time for against us because things will go from bad to worse in and Germany. There will be epidemics, there will be starva- against us. tion, there will be not enough houses, there will be chaos, even if, on the surface, the chaos is regulated by Allied troops. It will come precisely as Dr. Goebbels predicted. He will prove to have been a good prophet, while the pro-Allied Germans inside Germany, who for years have spread the line that if only Hitler were out and the Allies were in control everything would be much better, will be unmasked as liars.

This robs us of our best weapon of propaganda—this makes it impossible to prove in the most obvious manner that democracy is a better kind of order than Hitler's order.

And would it be too good an idea to save the Germans from hunger which they themselves are to blame for? I overheard two women in Heidelberg making fun of us Americans who helped them to food after they had all but starved our prisoners.

Fun made of Americans.

This alone should show us how wrong it would be to assume that our second victory, which has to be achieved, can be the result of a psychological blitzkrieg. One can destroy a house and the human beings in it within a split second. One cannot rebuild this house in any comparable time, and still one can rebuild a house so much faster than a human being. There are no short cuts to our psychological victory to come.

No short cuts.

And what weapons are at our disposal to conduct this psychological war of the future? What means have we to impress and affect the vast masses of Germans? What channels of propaganda are at our disposal?

Propaganda d**i**fficulties. Even if the theatres were standing, if the printing presses could work for us, even if all the channels of propaganda were at our disposal, the result would be negligible. Dr. Goebbels has used these channels to such a degree that he has compromised them. He has made the Germans into Nazis but at the same time filled them with utter skepticism as far as the trustworthiness of the

AD. 1945 WE MUST WIN ANOTHER BATTLE

press, the radio or any public or official statement goes. In such a way one can say that he has burned his bridges behind him. We can no longer use them.

Also, no former enemy of the Germans can be used for the purpose of disseminating propaganda. They won't believe anyone who only yesterday was fighting Germans them. They won't listen for a long time to anyone who won't speaks literally or in a figurative sense with a foreign accent, nor will they listen to anybody who may be in the pay of their former enemies. This is just as fundamental a fact as the fact that one cannot hope to re-educate German children through imported teachers who at best could be considered as comic relief, but who would probably have the more serious effect of developing even stronger nationalistic feelings in the German south.

believe or

The Germans are not only suspicious; they are also Suspicious very tired, and tired not only in a physical sense. They and tired. have been fed with so much propaganda; they have listened to so many speeches—and under Hitler they had to listen—their minds will be so occupied with the daily worries of providing food or repairing leaking roofs that they will not be able or willing to concentrate on complicated matters.

But time doesn't only work against us. In certain respects it works for us. While the Germans may be too tired to indulge in heavy and complicated thinking about nazism, democracy and other general principles, theories

and philosophies, there is no doubt that today they are already desirous of knowing what has happened, and even more important, what is going to happen to them.

I talked to a former German newspaperman who, until a short time ago, was correspondent of the official German News Agency in neutral Switzerland, and decided to quit the Nazis while the quitting was still good. I asked him what kind of newspaper he would make for the Germans after things had calmed down. Unhesitatingly he answered, "Give them news. Just news, just short pieces of information." He explained that most Germans were starved for news, since with the war going from bad to worse, the Propaganda Ministry had cut down news in German newspapers to almost nothing, while the space devoted to propaganda was steadily enlarged.

for real information.

Desire

This German felt that most Germans would be grateful if they could find out some of the things which were kept from them while they were happening. But he advised strongly against giving too much of such information in too short a time. Nothing would be more fatal than to start a large-scale campaign of enlightenment. We would have to give the Germans the news—the bad news of yesterday—in small doses. Otherwise they simply would refuse to believe it. Today and for a long time to come they would refuse to believe, for instance, the horrors committed by the Germans in Polish and French death camps. Only if they learned the horrible truth little 366

News in small doses.

AD. 1945 WE MUST WIN ANOTHER BATTLE

by little so that they could get used to the idea that Germans after all were capable of committing such crimesan idea supposedly inconceivable to most of them-could anything worth while be accomplished.

My experiences in Germany have proved, at least to my own satisfaction, that this man was entirely right. Since Germans in all occupied parts of the country were The need forbidden to use the radio, the hunger for news has be- to go come unbelievably strong. All of them ask you about the slowly. latest developments. Most of them no longer believe that they have learned the truth from the Nazis. But if you tell them of the horrors of the concentration camps on which they are unable to check, they simply don't believe you. If you want to convince them you have to go extremely slow.

Later, memories of the past might help, too. Every-Ruins body in Germany will remember that past—indeed, the a helpful countless ruins will render forgetting impossible.

reminder.

I wrote more than two years ago, at a time when most of us fondly believed that the German armies would collapse as soon as they had reached the German frontier, that Germany would have to be invaded and that the inevitable destruction of Germany would show the Germans what they had not realized for many generations, namely, that war was not only something to be conducted in other people's countries but something which could, and perhaps always would, come back to Germany. It seemed to me that the very existence of such

ruins, the very memory of the dreadful invasion would frighten the Germans from starting another war.

Hitler—
war—
destruction.

I still believe so. I think that eventually Bishop von Galen will become reconciled to the idea that his palace was bombed and that many other Germans will write of their personal losses as well. But if ever a new Hitler or a bunch of new Hitlers were to come up, and if their appearance were made at a time when the Germans already had learned that nazism (or whatever it then called itself) must eventually lead to war then the ruins of this war would play a decisive part. The logical thought and association would be: Hitler—war—destruction.

Conquest expensive. This is not an end in itself. It is a means to an end It should help to make the Germans understand that the idea of conquest and of national prestige arrived at by the proof of physical superiority, is not only horrifying but extremely expensive to those who cherish it. Then one day they may comprehend that it is not absolutely necessary for the happiness of a nation to make other nations tremble in their boots, that one can be perfectly happy without rendering the neighbors unhappy; that one can live peacefully and let others live peacefully.

The great and lamented French-American writer Raoul de Roussy de Sales once, in exasperation about the Nazis, exclaimed to this writer, "Will the Germans never grow up?"

I think they will begin to grow up once they conceive —what they have not understood so far—that it is not

AD. 1945 WE MUST WIN ANOTHER BATTLE

enough to have survived Hitler. Everything will depend on their understanding that to have lived under Hitler is to be co-responsible for what happened under Hitler, Germans on their understanding that this co-responsibility stretches co-responover all the years of the Third Reich and, most important, over many years to come. This the Germans must discuss, thrash out among themselves and finally make everyone in the country understand. This would be the final phase in the remaking of Germany. It would be a rebuilding of a new and better German world with material—simply information—we have furnished. The use of the information must be made by the Germans themselves. They and only they can build their new Self reworld. Therefore, in a phrase, Germany must have a free education "responsible" press, must have as much cultural freedom and latitude as possible. Only thus can the sense of responsibility for the past, and for the future based on the past, be developed.

Hitler.

needed.

Will the Germans ever grow up? We can do little toward this development except create certain preconditions. But history shows that eventually all nations grow All nations up. The growing up has always had to be accomplished grow up by their own blood, sweat and tears, and with the help of their own best men. There are no short cuts to this process on which so much depends for our children and their children. While it would be our final victory it must be a victory of the Germans over themselves.

eventually.

TERROR IN JAPAN

(A.D. 1945)

MARK GAVN

N A stormy morning last March, terror sneaked up on Japan. When it took its unhurried leave ten fearful days later, her people had had their first bitter foretaste of defeat. Up to then, it had been a remote and leisurely war. Here and there, in Japan's Foretaste teeming cities, shelters were being built. Along some streets, shallow trenches had been dug. There had also been rehearsals, with some people pretending they were hurt, and others pretending they knew how to take care of the injured.

Of warnings there had been plenty. A dozen big raids had left ugly blotches on Japan's map. In February, an Plenty American task force had prowled dangerously along her coast. But mostly the attacks had been nuisance raids by lonely Superforts—250 of them in 216 forays in 120 days. Fear flew in on their wings, but the damage was slight and the fear evaporated.

warnings.

Reprinted by permission of the author and Collier's, The National Weekly.

Then, at midnight, on March 10, 1945, a group of Superforts crossed Japan's coast line. Behind them came another group, and another in a line stretching far back toward Saipan. In a long, thin file they roared over Tokyo. They flew low, and out of their open bellies spilled bombs of jellied gasoline. When they hit, they burst, spewing out billowing, all-consuming fire. The flames leaped across fire lanes, swallowed factories, destroyed skyscrapers.

Bombs of jellied gasoline.

Fires blaze for many hours. The last of the 300 Superforts left Tokyo at 2:40 A.M., but the fires blazed on for many hours, eating hungrily into the city's heart, with its war plants, department stores, railroad terminals, and the countless thousands of homes in which women and children were making the small parts and gadgets without which no modern war machine can function.

Entire districts consumed. "The city burned like straw," said a Nazi eyewitness, in an intercepted message to Berlin. "Entire districts were burned down to the ground. As soon as the first incendiaries fell, the night was lighted up. The Superforts flew incredibly low above the spreading fires. One B-29 exploded almost over the very heart of Tokyo."

That night, he added, more people had been bombed out of their homes than in the heaviest raid ever endured by Germany.

The fires spread so rapidly, a Russian correspondent reported to Moscow, that the fire brigades never had a chance. The burden of fighting the flames thus fell on the ill-trained, ill-equipped Tonari Gumi, or neighborhood groups. The water mains failed, and bucket brig- of water ades vainly splashed water against the walls of fire.

mains.

Driven by a storm, flames leaped across the narrow. winding streets. Crowds seeking escape found themselves trapped. For once, the arrogant policemen fled together with the mobs, and together perished.

Those who could rushed to the bridges and the parks. The imperial grounds were opened to the refugees, but there, too, a fire was burning. The high and low suffered High and alike. Generals and cabinet ministers lost their homes. A low suffer. dozen members of the Diet died, or were made homeless.

Few doctors were available to treat the victims. What was more important, vast stores of food were destroyed in the warehouses, and it became necessary to rush food into the city. Crowds fought their way into the departing trains. Helpless, the police gave up asking for tickets or travel permits. The exodus went on for days, for even Erodus those whose homes survived now wanted to flee. Before from the ten days were done, three million people of Tokyo's seven million joined the flight.

Tokvo.

Long lines stretched before first-aid stations and hospitals. Community kitchens were set up in the blackened streets. With many public bathhouses burned down, private homes were compelled to open their bathrooms to the refugees. So many people had lost their ration books that after the early days of confusion, food was issued stamp-free to the victims. Evacuees were given five days rations.

On the roads leading from Tokyo, evacuees streamed out, on foot or bicycle. In the neighboring areas, officials sought empty barns, stocked up food, made arrangements to put the refugees to work in war factories.

Until their damaged plants could be repaired, the five Tokyo newspapers issued a joint daily. In it, men found orders, pleas to be calm, bitter abuse heaped on the American "savages and barbarians."

Embers were still hot on the ground when the Cabinet met to consider relief and defense. Before it dispersed, it had, in the typical way of Japanese bureaucracy, created a handful of committees with high-sounding if vague titles.

In the Diet that day, the Premier dodged charges of inefficiency by angry members bombed out of their homes. "The people are very much concerned," cried the members. "Have any steps been taken in regard to food? Will firemen be released from the army?"

Unhappily, the Premier pleaded guilty. "The people are caught in a feeling of restlessness and anxiety.... A plan will soon be made public. . . . The people will be asked to conform. . . ."

The wheels of government were beginning to turn again. The post office announced it would carry only short messages from the raid victims to their friends and relatives. What food stocks remained in the city were

Highsounding committees created.

Food stocks dispersed.

hastily dispersed, in fear of another raid. A "National Defense Mobile Bicycle Repair Shop" had gone into action.

Transportation remained disorganized. Repair crews Transportaworked on burned-out stations and twisted tracks. Ex- tion dispress trains had been canceled. In their stead, all passenger cars were mobilized to move evacuees. Freight trains were doing double duty, taking out war plants and bringing in food. Because of transportation snags, the cigarette ration had been cut from seven a day to three. ("The best thing is to stop smoking altogether," said the Tokyo radio.)

organized.

Belatedly, government experts announced that 3,000 New airnew air-raid shelters would be built in Tokyo. "Model raid shelters" for individual families were put on display, but shelters for lack of nails and wood, the people were told to use planned. salvaged building material.

In fear of raids it knew would come soon, the government charted 100 new firebreaks, 160 to 650 feet wide, More around factories and railroad stations. Special agents firebreaks. then chalked the single, ominous word "Evacuate" on tens of thousands of doomed one-story matchwood buildings, and their residents were told to move out. Once the houses were vacated, thick ropes were put around their supports, and tractors or teams of men pulled the buildings down.

On the morning of the eighth day, the emperor expressed a desire to see the damage. This had happened Emperor views damage.

only twice since the great earthquake of 1923, and the Japanese propaganda machine took care to publicize it With his retinue, the emperor spent an hour in the dam. aged area.

Wherever he went, the people knelt before him in the rubble and apologized for "causing him anxiety" and thanked him for "taking compassion on the privations of his subjects." A multimillionaire many times over he had given the victims ten million yen (about \$2,300,000 at the prewar exchange rate), and the official news agency at once reported that "the people responded like scorched grass revived by seasonable rain."

The newspapers carried the emperor's picture under a banner headline. The nation's network carried a passionate speech by a famous commentator: "This evening my friend visited me. He opened a newspaper and told me to worship it. I looked at the gracious figure of His Imperial Majesty, and could not speak for a while. 'We're going to win. We're going to win for certain!' I shouted."

"We're going to win."

Ten-day

attack by

1 1

Superforts.

This was Tokyo, stunned and scorched. Briefly the eyes of Japan were on it. But Japan's terrible lesson was only beginning. On the night of March 11th, the Superforts returned to her skies, to attack Nagoya, where airplanes are made. On the 14th came the turn of Osakahuge and ugly and busy making guns. On the 17th, neighboring Kobe, where men-of-war are built, was hit. By luck, Nagoya escaped much damage. Thus, on the night of the 19th, the Superforts were back. for a second, fiercer strike. It was as if New York, Chicago, Pittsburgh and Washington, D. C., had been devastated in a tragic ten-day period.

And as if that was not enough, the famed Task Force Task Force 58 sailed boldly to Japan's shores on March 18th. At 58 blasts 6 o'clock that morning, 1,400 carrier planes took off to lapan. blast airfields, factories and railroads. The following day, 1,100 planes returned to finish off the targets which still survived.

Now all Japan lay naked and in fear, and none bothered to conceal the hurt. "This," said her radio, "marks the outset of the war's final and grimmest phase."

"Nippon can take it!" boasted Tokyo. "National resolve is strengthened rather than weakened by the rain of death." But if the truth be told, her people and leaders took the blow with no greater moral strength than the hapless people of the lands she had devastated. There were fear and confusion. There were fumbling, charges, Fear and recriminations.

confusion.

Seventy-one generals were reshuffled. The governor of Tokyo, an empire builder with a vicious record, was angrily assailed for talking to the Japanese the way he had earlier talked to the Chinese. Much too late, two billion yen was appropriated for air defense.

In all the big cities, the government urged the people to leave, but transportation was inadequate, and for many, there was no place to go. "There is no time to think of such things," said Tokyo sternly. "Walk if need be to the near-by prefectures. . . ."

Total of losses for ten days. And it had finally totaled up the losses of those fearful ten days. More than three million people, it reported, had been killed, injured or left homeless. More than three quarters of a million houses had been destroyed in four cities. Tokyo fared worst, with 510,000 buildings burned down or demolished, and 2,100,000 victims.

Loss of Iwo adds to terror.

Nor was this the end. Before the ten days had ended, the sense of terror had been compounded by the loss of Iwo. The papers bravely called it a "moral victory" and spoke of its garrison joining the "army of ghosts" defending Japan. The terror was all the greater because it was superimposed against the background of wartime scarcity, shabbiness, exhaustion.

In the face of the blockade, Japan slashed the monthly rice ration from 30 to 20 pounds. (At the risk of a year in jail, many promptly rushed to claim "ghost relatives.") Fish, the second food staple of Japan, is scarce, and what there is of it is often rotten. The vegetable ration dropped to a pound a week.

Rations are cut.

But even this hungry diet is irregular. Graft, red tape, disrupted communications play havoc with distribution. One village has to stretch a two-week supply of rice over a month. A locality lives on tomatoes for a week. A prefecture (equivalent to one of our states) goes along without sugar for a month.

The people are hungry. Once the first animal fear is Food is gone, food replaces even the air raids as the main topic main topic. of conversation, and the people's anger finds an echo even in the regimented press. Cries a daily: "One red radish is given each person in Tokyo every two days. This is probably enough for a horse, but too little for a human being." Another reports that 60 per cent of the children are undernourished, 30 per cent have dysentery, and "in every classroom daily, there are, on an average, one student vomiting and two being sent home with dizziness."

Hunger and fatigue go hand in hand. Apathetically, Hunger a worker reports that sleep does men no good "because and we are worn out." When, however, the ten days of terror fatigue. had ended, the government canceled even the meager two days of rest a month granted until then.

But nothing gives a truer picture of Japan's distress than the broadcasts and private radiograms which fill Radio her air. In them are exposed the worries, the hopes and reveals secrets of her little men and her leaders. By the thousands, these messages flash between Japan and every corner of her crumbling empire to be intercepted by our watchful monitors.

distress.

A gendarmerie chief on a dinky, local Japanese station: "Some people have become listless. We must hold firm to our faith, we must keep our heads."

A station in Tokyo: "Until further notice, service is suspended on the following street-car lines ..."

Communicutions blocked. An unidentified station in Japan: "Travelers planning trips on the Tokaido and Chuo lines are warned communications have been blocked."

A station in Korea: "Pamphlets dropped by the enemy must not deceive us. Surrender them to the nearest police station at once. . . . Enemy broadcasts must be studiously avoided. . . . The Americans and the British cheated the Italians with their broadcasts. . . ."

A station in Formosa: "Most of our contacts with the homeland have been severed since the enemy landed on Okinawa. Formosa must struggle alone..."

And another: "Due to the change in war conditions, items such as kitchen pots, electric bulbs, umbrellas can no longer be issued. . . . Several families must now use a common pot for cooking, thus saving fuel and making other pots available to the state."

From Nanking, a commercial radiogram to Tokyo: "Business impossible."

"Cancel contracts. Excuse." From the Mitsubishi supertrust in Tokyo to Saigon: "For lack of transportation, your 1,000 cases deteriorated. Only way is to cancel contracts. Excuse."

From Indo-China to Tokyo: "Cancel the contracts, since there is no hope of shipping out the ordered jute."

Grisly tidings. And from every corner come grisly tidings of personal grief. From a town in Japan to Wuhu, in China: "Aiko dead." From Peiping to Japan: "Kiyoko's ashes sent by air. . . ." From Shanghai to Numagi: "Passenger boat full. Must wait another three months." From Takayama

a worried rubber trader in Rangoon, himself already menaced by the approaching British: "Your mother evacuated. . . . " From Bangkok to Osaka: "Am in favor of evacuation. . . . "

And, as the only note of comic relief, a message from Comic the German Minister in Bangkok to Reichsminister relief. Reichsfuehrer S. S. Himmler: "In faithful loyalty I think of you on your birthday with best wishes. Heil Hitler!"

Air raids, hunger, weariness, evacuation, the sense of defeat, the collapse of Japan's allies, all these intertwine into a pattern of flesh and spirit in acute distress. Less than a fortnight after the fall of Iwo comes the invasion of Okinawa, still closer home. The ten days are followed by other days and nights of terror.

To keep the spirit up, the government resorts to the familiar totalitarian devices: police terror, scare campaigns, skillfully guided mass hysteria, and lies without Lies limit. When Americans advance on Okinawa, the Jap without navy blandly claims it has sunk or damaged 21 Ameri- limit. can carriers, 19 battleships, 55 cruisers and 16 "battleships or cruisers."

But all such claims are only a drug which can give Japan momentary hope, but cannot save her. It does no good any more to boast of victories, or to conceal the imminence of American invasion. Thus Japan's leaders let out some of the terrifying truth. The Premier himself Terrifying issues the warning: "We must be prepared for the con-truth. version of our homeland into a battlefield. . . . "

People told to arm. The people of Japan are called on to arm themselves. "The bamboo spear is an excellent weapon," declares a broadcast. "Our warriors have fought with it in all their battles. Select a bamboo cane, sharpen it, dab the point with vegetable oil. Such a spear would easily stab through the bellies of our foes."

But even more drastic action is needed. On the last of the ten days of terror, the government introduces a bill to create a "Fortress Japan." Under this bill, the army can take over property, direct production, freeze labor.

Japan's toughest generals, who once carved the map of Asia, are called back to defend her own soil. The Home Defense armies are split in two, to permit continued resistance in one half of Japan if the other falls. Government and economy are decentralized, to avert paralysis should Tokyo be lost. The premier talks of "area by area" defense.

Home Defense armies.

A rigorous campaign is begun against yamitorihiki, the black market or "bargaining in the dark." The government admits the failure of its rationing program and estimates the army of "black marketeers" at one million. They are rounded up by the thousand and tossed into jails already overflowing with men and women arrested for "dangerous thought."

Campaign against black markets.

In Tokyo, over a ten-day period, 18,500 people are hauled off to police stations. Of these, 6,500 are vaguely accused of sabotage and 3,900 of "wicked behavior."

Old parties, which failed to drum up popular enthusi- Party for asm, go into the discard. In their stead comes a new a Twentyoutfit, headed by the 70-year-old flabby-fleshed jingoist. General Minami, who in 1931 engineered the rape of Manchuria. In a beer hall, a group of paunchy men, once known as "moderates," launches a "Party for a Twenty-Year War."

Year War.

"Invasion!" warns the press. "Invasion!" cries the Invasion radio. Foreign Ministry officials solemnly tell the people warnings. mass castrations are being planned by the invaders. A commentator declares: "If we ever surrender, we'll be treated like the Rumanians."

But nothing gets more fanfare than Kamikaze, which means Divine Wind, or the tempest which centuries ago Divine dispersed an armada of Mongol invaders. The word Wind caught Japanese fancy when it was attached to the "sui- fanfare. cide fliers" trying to crash into American men-of-war. When, with proper guidance, Kamikaze took hold of the susceptible Japanese mind, Japan's leaders channeled the hysteria into new fields.

Japanese submarines, one of the spectacular failures of this war, now boast of ramming Allied warships in true Kamikaze style. In factories, Kamikaze brigades work 16 to 18 hours, in an effort to increase production. In the country, Kamikaze teams drain swamps or till wastelands hitherto thought useless. Throughout the land, Kamikaze units are being formed for unspecified tasks beginning the day of the invasion. Thus, through terror,

false hope and skillfully guided hysteria, Japan's rulers mobilize the nation's strength for the next great battles. And Americans must not underestimate the fury and determination with which the coming battles will be fought. Japan is hard hit but not by any means fatally hurt. Her morale is still firm, her hatred for us is still unquenched, her punch still painful. Our admirals and generals want you to give a lot of hard, sober thought to the facts below. Each of them means time, stubborn effort, American lives.

Japan hard hit, not fatally hurt.

War machine rowerful. First, the Japanese war machine is still powerful. Nowhere is it near the bottom of the reserve barrel. The army still has 3,000,000 men, with 2,000,000 more in reserve. Most of these can be expected to fight with skill and fury in the defense of their own land.

Our airmen have helped to send thousands of Japan's best pilots to their end. But her air force still packs a powerful wallop, and despite the heavy pounding, her airplane factories were still turning out a thousand planes a month in May.

Shorn of its best ships and ablest admirals, Japan's navy is still a constant menace. It has the twin advantages of being close to home bases and knowing tomorrow's weather ahead of us. Under cover of a storm, it can still sneak up for a painful blow. Even more than the army, the navy is tough, resolute, fanatical.

Destruction of industry only begun.

1

Second, we have only begun to destroy Japan's industry. As we have found out in Germany, this takes time

and much more muscle than we have yet been able to supply. Some of Japan's industry has already burrowed deep into the ground; some has been decentralized; some shifted to Korea and Manchuria. Much of Japan's war output comes from the one-family "factories," working as subcontractors. It takes time to bomb them out.

Third, Japan's morale as yet remains solid. If we have Morale learned any lesson in Europe, it is that air blitz does not remains knock peoples out of war. There is no reason to believe solid. the Japanese will be any softer than the British, the Russians, the Germans or the Chinese.

Fourth, Japan now fights in her front yard, while we have to cart all our supplies nearly halfway around Supply the world. Each man we land on Japan's beaches will problems need five to ten tons of supplies in the first month. U.S. Army supply chief figure that a force of 250,000 men, small as invasion forces go, will need in the first thirty days 700,000 different items, from buttons to bridges, for the total weight of 1,900,000 tons. This, too, means time.

of invasion.

Fifth, despite the blockade, Japan has had two years Japan's to accumulate stock piles of supplies she needs to wage stock war. She still probably has enough aluminum and cop-piles. per for a year, gasoline for eighteen months, rubber for five years, and tin for eight.

The Americans whose business it is to weigh all these factors, both material and intangible, are not sanguine over the prospects of a quick knockout.

Maybe this is one reason why Washington, while hoping for fate's favors, soberly girds itself for a war that might not end until the distant spring of 1947.

Allied control of Germany begins.

Osaka, arsenal center of Japan. June 5. The United States, Britain, Russia, and France take control of the Reich. June 6. United States Marines win Naha airfield June 8. B-29's batter Nagoya, Osaka, and Kobe in first triple blow. June 9. Yugoslavia accepts Anglo-American policing of Trieste. June 14. Over 500 Superfortresses smash at Osaka. June 18. Chinese win Wenchow port. June 21. Conquest of Okinawa is completed after costly 82-day campaign. Aparri in North Luzon is won, and 20,000 Japanese are trapped. June 22. Australians capture Seria oil fields in Borneo. June 26. World security parley at San Francisco closes as delegates of the United Nations sign World Charter.]

UNITED NATIONS: LAST CHANCE

(A.D. 1945)

≺HIS week the San Francisco security conference was near enough to its goal to pause for President Truman's message of congratulations on achieving the aims set for the parley by its original sponor the late President Roosevelt.

Weary delegates were hopeful that the last comma and semicolon in the security charter would be in place within a week.

From San Francisco will emerge the formula for a new world organization, dedicated to the proposition that peace is indivisible—or at least that it can be preserved only so long as a coalition of powerful nations ization. remains indivisible.

Formula for a new world organ-

The new organization—to be known as the United Nations—with a Security Council, an Assembly, an International Court of Justice, and an Economic and Social Council, is a contemporary variation of an old themeolder than the balances of power established at West- Variation phalia, Utrecht, Vienna, and Versailles. It is, however, of an

old theme.

Reprinted by permission of Businessweek.

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

No sovereignty sacrificed. a banding together of great and little powers in a more representative—and perhaps more effective—international organization than ever before. And yet it cannot be denied that in creating the United Nations none of the world's effective warmakers has sacrificed—or delegated—an iota of its sovereignty or its strength.

Big Five

The Big Five—the United States, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, China, and the Provisional Government of France—constitute a power bloc in the Security Council. They have agreed upon the principle of unanimity among themselves formulated at the Yalta conference of the Big Three. In so doing they have recognized the unhappy truth that if one of the great powers insists upon the use of force for selfish ends, the Security Council and the rest of the United Nations are helpless to prevent aggression short of military action on a global scale.

It was this principle of unanimity among the Big Five that created or prolonged many of the headlined "crises" at San Francisco.

Most of the crises evolved from discussion of changes wrought in the Dumbarton Oaks document, product of last year's Big Four talks on world security arrangements. And most of these changes originated with the "Little 45" although they were fought to a finish by the Big Five. There were, including approximate duplications, some 700 amendments suggested by participating nations—including the great powers—and the 40-odd im-

"Little 45."

LD. 1945 UNITED NATIONS: LAST CHANCE

portant amendments agreed upon have at least partially fulfilled the aims of some 400 of the original suggestions.

But whether the issues at San Francisco originated among the little nations or arose between the great Fears and powers, they epitomized the fears and jealousies of all jealousies. sovereign states.

Small countries trembled at the obvious, enviable, but necessary concentration of authority in the hands of the great powers, already the repository of the world's strength. Each of the Big Five vigorously defends its individual prerogatives and its assumed "special inter- "Special ests" beyond its borders. Hence the critical battles cen- interests." tered around protection of the sovereignty and hegemony which international organization, to be effective, must attempt to diminish or regulate.

Not all of the crises which impinged upon the discussions at San Francisco arose within the substantive scope of the parley. Some were transported from far away Poland, Syria, and Argentina to be detonated at the conference, and others rattled down the corridors of history echoing the clashes of Versailles and Geneva, where previous attempts to create and preserve peace had failed.

Progress at San Francisco sometimes hinged upon debate over technical details of protocol, or interlingual and definitions of terms, and at other times upon argument argument. over high-sounding aims which cloak fundamental-and probably irreconcilable—conflicts between the left and

right, between the past and the future, and between the ruler and the ruled.

In the opening days of the conference the legalistic approach of the Soviet delegation, and its continuing insistence upon "equality" and "unanimity" among the chief powers were illustrated by the sharp clash on protocol concerning the conference chairmanship.

"Equality" and "unanimity."

There was no election of U. S. Secretary of State Edward R. Stettinius, Jr., by polite acclaim. Foreign Commissar Vyacheslav Molotov of the U.S.S.R. insisted upon and won a rotating chairmanship by the chief delegates of the Big Four sponsoring powers, with the Steering Committee chair relinquished by common agreement to Stettinius.

Rotating chairmanship.

The Soviets were accused of being difficult. Mexico's Foreign Minister Padilla was affronted by Molotov's bluntness. But this decision set the stage for a later argument over whether the Secretary General of the permanent Secretariat of the United Nations shall have five deputy secretaries-general representing the Big Five.

On admission of the Ukrainian and White Russian Soviet Socialist Republics as separate members of the conference and the world organization, the Yalta understanding (that they would be admitted) was upheld—but not without disturbing repercussions. For it was widely charged that the Latin-American nations refused to accept the Yalta decision to admit the Soviet republics unless the United States secure admission of Argentina

Admission of Argentina. 4.D. 1945 UNITED NATIONS: LAST CHANCE

(by hasty recognition, and bloc-voting at the parley)a contingency reported to have been expressly barred at Yalta. Molotov fought the unexpected invitation long and eloquently.

If the United States had been forced to trade admission of the Soviet delegations for Argentine admission, Molotov's protests-which carried an offer to agree if the Polish Provisional Government were admitted—were of the same nature but met with less success. These horsetrading tactics fostered cynicism among both delegates Cynicism and the public at a critical stage in the conference pro- fostered. ceedings.

Argentina's admission to the parley, for which Stettinius virtually apologized later, was promptly thrown into disturbing perspective by events in Buenos Aires, Events where pro-United Nations agitators were arrested and in Buenos thrown into prison by the hundreds, rigid censorship was Aires. imposed on foreign correspondents, and martial law was unofficially in effect.

Detention in the Soviet Union of alleged Polish saboteurs (or democratic leaders, in the words of Stettinius and Britain's Anthony Eden) did not contribute to an atmosphere of mutual trust and optimism at the conference. Despite the tenuous relationship between the Polish Polish question and San Francisco, reopening of three-power question. discussions in Moscow with a view toward creating a Polish Government of National Unity eased the tension.

Trusteeship problems. The concept of trustee arrangements for (1) mandated areas—legacies of the old League of Nations, (2) territories detached from enemy states, and (3) territories voluntarily placed under international supervision by states responsible for them, was not a Dumbarton Oaks creation.

The original British and American version of the trusteeship chapter in the charter would have precluded Soviet participation in settlement of trusteeship problems. The alacrity with which Molotov stymied this gesture and followed up with amendments which if morally unassailable were politically unacceptable (to colonial powers) began another big-power sparring match.

Not only did the Soviets insist on active participation in trusteeship decisions—who gets what, where, when, and how—but they refused to accept self-government alone as an objective toward which dependent areas might aspire. They insisted on adding to "self-government" the phrase "or independence," whichever may be appropriate to the territory and in accord with its people's wishes.

Vetopower The biggest and most bitterly contested issue—finally requiring the intervention of Prime Minister Churchill, President Truman, and Premier Stalin—was that of the veto power.

At Yalta it had been decided that success of the new security organization realistically depended upon unanimity of the Big Five, and none of these—least of all A.D. 1945 UNITED NATIONS: LAST CHANCE

the United States (Congress) or the Soviet Union (Stalin)-would tolerate interference in their national affairs or their international spheres by any combination of outside powers.

Consequently, since power was to rest with those who already possess it, all important decisions of the Security Council were to require a unanimous vote of the Big Five. By the Soviet interpretation, the right of any of these powers to veto action should extend even to a decision as to whether a matter should be discussed by the Security Council. When the U.S.S.R. stuck long and Concession fast to this tenet, conference morale sagged visibly. After by the a week, an appeal to Stalin brought a concession: What shall be discussed in the Security Council will not be subject to veto-though any one of the Big Five may still veto even a formal "investigation" of any matter that gets as far as the "discussion" stage.

U.S.S.R.

Thus, for example, any threatening situation in an area of special interest to any one of the Big Five can be barred from Assembly or Security Council investigation or action by the negative vote of that power.

With this small victory, the "Little 45" led by Aus- Small tralia's indefatigable stormy petrel, Foreign Minister Herbert Vere Evatt, set out to batter down Big Five unanimity—or veto power—even farther, but without success, for this time Britain and the United States backed the Soviet position.

THE WORLD'S GREAT EVENTS

Regional security.

Early in the conference, the role of regional security agreements came up for discussion. Were they to be superseded or invalidated by the world security arrangements? The Soviet Union—linked by mutual assistance pacts (against any future German aggression) with Czechoslovakia, France, Yugoslavia, and the transitory Provisional Government of Poland—maintained that these regional schemes were outside and unaffected by the new world agency. The Latin-American bloc—signatory, with the U. S., to the Chapultepec pact—took an identical position.

Shadowing this discussion was a fear of the emergence of regional blocs with potentially dangerous implications for world security if arrangements within such spheres remained outside the jurisdiction of the world organization.

Bilateral pacts. This issue was resolved by amending the charter to permit the operation of bilateral pacts in the absence of, or prior to, Security Council steps to maintain or restore peace. As a result, the United States has proposed a series of bilateral treaties with Latin-American countries (to supersede the Mexico City multilateral security agreement) to make the Western Hemisphere arrangements parallel those signed by the Soviet Union.

But not all of the victories—or squabbles—were in the Big Five camp.

Use of military forces. On the question of using the military forces of member nations, Canada emerged with a victory for its view that nations whose military forces are to be used to pre-

AD, 1945 UNITED NATIONS: LAST CHANCE

vent or repel aggression should have a vote in the Security Council on such decisions. Thus, it was decided, there will be "no taxation without representation."

The smaller powers also obtained approval for the revision of the charter, at some future date. After ten Charter vears a simple majority of the Assembly, plus any seven revision members of the eleven-member Security Council, can convene a constitutional convention. To accomplish this before that period has elapsed, the Assembly must marshal a two-thirds majority, and the Big Five must unanimously participate in the Security Council majority vote.

ariange-

It was at the insistence of the smaller states that specific references to respect for international law, justice, and the basic human rights were written into the charter at human several important points.

nghts.

The principle that members may be expelled from the world organization was amended to provide "suspension" as a severest penalty (short of the application Penalty of of economic sanctions and punishment) and one believed "suspento be equally serious and less likely to encourage disintegration of the security group than expulsion.

Australia insisted upon and won inclusion of "full "Full employment" in the statement of purposes of the Eco- employnomic and Social Council. With the added support of Ecuador, Egypt, Cuba, and Venezuela, Prime Minister Evatt labored to strengthen this agency of the security organization far beyond the amorphous role it was given in the Dumbarton Oaks charter.

Authors
of charter.

Thus, in the last two months, the formal document which is to guide and circumscribe the activities of the new world organization has taken form—word by word, phrase by phrase, and chapter by chapter. Its authors have been linguists, document technicians, international lawyers, politicians, and diplomats. Merely the preparation of the finished document in the four official languages of the conference is a labor of more than a week.

From San Francisco, however, the charter must travel—after many additional translations—to the capitals of 50 nations, there to be submitted to public discussion and comment, but more importantly, to the critical and sometimes skeptical eye and hand of the members of national legislatures. The charter will become effective only when ratified by all of the Big Five and a majority of the Little 45.

Ratification requirements.

The two key nations in charter ratification are the Soviet Union and the United States. The U.S.S.R. was studiously ignored by the old League until 1934, then accepted into membership only to be expelled in 1939. The United States as studiously held aloof from the League after it was created along patterns laid out by President Wilson.

The charter will probably be approved, in the U.S.S.R., by the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet rather than by the Supreme Soviet itself, and quick approval may be expected in view of the constant referral of questions to

AD, 1945 UNITED NATIONS: LAST CHANCE

Moscow throughout the conference. Presumably all objections have been channeled back to San Francisco.

The prospect for ratification in the United States is excellent. And, there is a bare possibility that the charter may be approved—as requested—before the July meeting of Truman, Churchill, and Stalin. Certainly congressional approval before that date would strengthen the hand of the U. S. President in his first meeting with the other chiefs of state.

Probable early congressional approval.

Day-to-day events of the conference not only have strengthened the prospect of decisive ratification of the charter by the U. S. Senate but also have made it unlikely that there will be any reservations to American membership in the United Nations. This is the judgment of the seven-member United States delegation.

The Senate cannot amend the charter in the process of ratification without such changes being resubmitted Reservations to and approved by the other members of the Big Five or and a majority of the other nations. The Administration will oppose amendments and will be backed by every member of the U. S. delegation, Republican and Democrat alike. Conceivably, there could be Senate reservations —in effect, interpretations of how the U.S. construes certain commitments—and such interpretations would not require charter renegotiation.

The American delegation now believes that no amendments will be successful in the Senate, and that no reservations will be needed, for three reasons:

amendments unlikely.

(1) The political errors of Versailles were not repeated at San Francisco. Even with Congress already slipping from his control, President Wilson did not take with him to Paris any representative of Congress. This time the whole Administration approach has been bipartisan and pro-Congress. President Roosevelt appointed a delegation which, because of the absence of Cordell Hull, has been Republican-dominated, four-to-three. President Truman has given it the fullest latitude and support.

Bıpartısan upproach.

Four of seven delegates from Congress.

- (2) Four of the seven delegates are members of Congress—Senators Connally and Vandenberg, and Representatives Bloom and Eaton. Since the delegation acted as a unit on majority vote, the congressional members had control of the American policy, and no provision went into the charter on which Connally and Vandenberg did not weigh senatorial opinion carefully.
- (3) The one amendment which the middle-road cooperationists, like Vandenberg, considered essential to assure Senate ratification has been adopted by the conference. This is Vandenberg's own proposal that the 50-nation general Assembly be empowered to investigate and recommend corrective measures with respect to "any situations, regardless of their origin, which it deems likely to impair the general welfare." This is assurance that the charter is not designed merely to defend the status quo, but looks toward peaceful change in a dynamic world.

Charter looks to peaceful change.

AD, 1945 UNITED NATIONS: LAST CHANCE

(4) The voting procedure of the Security Council provides that the organization cannot use armed force Consentrewithout the approval of each of the five permanent mem- quired for hers-thus, the United States cannot be voted into war without its consent.

use of armed force.

While ratification may be rapid—with enough signatures to put the new world agency on its feet within six months—there are many immediate tasks which will be taken on by an interim authority.

Adjournment of the official conference is to be followed by a meeting of a proposed interim commission Interim made up of representatives of each of the 50 attending commission. nations. This commission will then appoint an Executive Committee to look after interim business, which will have headquarters in London.

Among the jobs this committee must essay are these:

- (1) Choosing a site for the new world organization's headquarters. The betting is that none of the Big Five will be selected, and that in all probability a "free zone" will be created in some small European country.
- (2) Drawing up of specific techniques for choosing Immediate personnel and working out the mechanics of the new tasks. organization's meetings and operations.
- (3) Fixing the budget of the United Nations and its allocation among member states.
- (4) Arranging a dignified burial for the League of Nations, at the same time picking up the threads of going functions of the old League.

Meanwhile, such groups as the International Labour Office, a part of the League, may meet and propose methods for placing themselves under the Economic and Social Council. The Pan-American Union may make similar arrangements.

At the urging of the Economic and Social Council, the Executive Committee in London may draw plans for. and convene, international conferences on topics which are particularly urgent in the aftermath of war. One of these would be concerned with health, and drawing together of the scattered agencies dealing with narcotics, epidemic diseases, and malarial controls, and setting international health standards.

International health.

policy.

Another, and by far the leading interest of the Economic and Social Council, would be the proposed con Commercial ference on commercial policy—dealing not only with reduction of the barriers to trade envisaged in Article VII of the lend-lease charter and in the United Nations (Atlantic) Charter, but also with cartel policing and study and planning of intergovernment agreements on production, distribution, and pricing of primary commodities.

Provisions of charter.

Thus within the framework of the charter drafted at San Francisco the United Nations have provided mechanisms for preservation of peace through discussion and failing that, through forceful intervention; for studying and recommending measures for increasing human welfare—by economic and other devices; for the adjudica-

3.D. 1945 UNITED NATIONS: LAST CHANCE

tion of legal disputes between nations in the International Court of Justice; and for bringing most other international problems under the watchful eye of an organization with worldwide membership.

The United Nations is, on paper, the hope of the world. It is also nothing more than a hope until the paper work at San Francisco is tested by the clash of national interests that lies inevitably ahead.

United Nations the hope of the world.

[June 28, 1945. Luzon, largest island in the Philippines is liberated. July 29. Four Japanese naval bases are fired by 500 Superfortresses. June 30. American troops occupy Kume Island, 345 miles from the China coast. July 1. Australian troops land at Balik Papan, East Netherlands Borneo oil center. July 2. From 550 to 600 B-29's rain bombs on Honshu and Kyushu cities. July 5. General MacArthur announces liberation of the Philippines. July 10. Australians capture Balik Papan refineries and control of Balik Papan Bay. July 17. President Truman, Marshal Stalin and Prime Minister Churchill open Potsdam Conference. Task Force of British Pacific Fleet joins United States Third Fleet in major action in the Pacific. Superfortress-bombardment of Japan reaches 42nd consecutive day. July 23. United States destroyers smash convoy in Toyko waters. The trial of Marshal Henri Philippe Pétain for treason opens in Paris. July 24. Age-service point system for release of Navy personnel is announced. July 26. The British Labor Party decisively defeats the

Big Three Conference opens at Potsdam. Great Britoin elects a Labor Government, Conservatives in Britain's first general election in ten years. Winston Churchill resigns and Clement R. Attlee becomes Prime Minister at the head of a Labor Government. July 28. The United States Senate ratifics the United Nations Security Charter by a vote of 89 to 2. In New York City a B-25 bomber crashes into the Empire State Building. August 2. Record force of 800 Marianas-based Superfortresses rains 6,000 tons of bombs on Japan. The Potsdam Conference ends. A Joint Declaration is made public outlining the decisions reached by the Big Three. August 6. The first atomic bomb is dropped by a B-29 on the Japanese city of Hiroshima. Sixty per cent of the city is wiped out. August 9. Soviet Russia declares war on Japan. Red Army forces invade Manchuria. Nagasaki, Japan, is the target of a second atomic bomb.]

THE ATOMIC AGE

(A.D. 1945)

HINGS will never be the same again. The trite phrase of optimistic lovers and of the bereaved suddenly became true last week for all the world -in a blinding flash twelve times as bright as the sun. The atomic bomb that wiped out a great part of Hiroshima terrified scores of millions, awed hundreds of millions more, and aroused both fear and awe in the breasts of and awe scientists and statesmen. It was these last who realized aroused. most fully the significance of the bomb of atomic power.

"A weapon has been developed that is potentially destructive beyond the wildest nightmares," said the report of the men who had developed it; "a weapon so ideally suited to sudden unannounced attack that a country's major cities might be destroyed overnight by an ostensibly friendly power."

Sen. Warren G. Magnuson of Washington voiced what promises to be the opinion of many men in government: "It is obvious that the atomic bomb has not only revolutionized warfare, but has blasted all the notions uzed.

Warfare revolution-

Reprinted by permission of Newsweek.

True world democracy or a Third World War. we had only a few weeks ago about peace and security under the United Nations Charter . . . Either we must persuade all other powers . . . to institute true and universal democratic rights, or we must at once begin the race to win the Third World War—the war that would destroy every building above the surface of the earth and put us all into caves. Free people don't want wars. If they know what is going on and have the power, they will make their governments behave."

Back in 1940 when such things could still be freely discussed, a famous scientist explained how atomic power works, in these words:

How atomic power works. "Suppose you have a pile of bricks. You hit an ordinary brick with a hammer, and you'll probably get two or three big pieces of brick. To break the rest of the bricks, you have to hit each separate one with your hammer. That's how ordinary atoms behave.

"But imagine hitting one brick with your hammer, and having it magically produce three or four other hammers which automatically strike the nearby bricks, breaking them. This is the kind of a chainlike reaction produced by U235."

Over Hiroshima on Aug. 6, and three days later over Nagasaki, that is what happened to small quantities of unstable metallic elements—perhaps plutonium (P239) as well as U235. The U235 was contained in a bomblike device equipped to prevent premature explosion, fitted with a primer for triggering off the atomic blast at the

Make-up of atomic bomb.

right moment. It produced an explosion so furious the English language has no words to describe it.

U235 is one of the three physical forms of the element Physical uranium, famous in pre-war days as the parent element forms of of radium. Ordinary metallic uranium is usually a mixnure of the three forms. Most uranium is U238 (the numher means that each atom weighs 238 times as much as a hydrogen atom). The other kinds of uranium are U235 and U234.

manium.

U235 is the form that has the important faculty of solitting when an atomic particle known as a neutron strikes it and lodges within it. Lots of other atoms break Power when struck by neutrons, too, but U235, in breaking, gives off more neutrons, scattering them in all directions to break up more atoms, thus releasing more neutrons. Consequently, a single starting neutron can set off a whole mass of U235 and thus release enormous quantities of power. If the power is released quickly enough, the explosion is something like 2,000,000 times as great as that of a similar amount of TNT.

set off by a neutron.

The problem of the physicists was to separate this U235 out of the metallic uranium. This was no easy task -in fact it cost \$2,000,000,000 to set up the factories needed to do it.

For every atom of U235 in metallic uranium there are U235 140 atoms of ordinary U238. Chemically both kinds of and atoms behave alike. Physically they are almost alike, too. Only the slight difference in weight—a matter of only

one part in 80—provides the "handle" by which the physicists can get hold of the rare U235 atoms and pull them out of the mass in which they are hidden.

"Manhattan Project." How they do it is the No. 1 secret of the war, known to only a few men in the "Manhattan Project." It represents the combined skill and science of thousands of technical men and is one of the great American miracles of wartime cooperation, planning, and production.

The producers of the atomic bomb began their work on a foundation of discovery which, like a complicated jigsaw puzzle, brought together pieces from many countries and many laboratories.

First clue in radium It all began with Marie and Pierre Curie, and their discovery of radium in 1898. This unstable element, which explodes spontaneously, atom by atom, provided the first clue to the structure of the atomic building blocks that make up all the substances in the universe. But it was more than three decades before sizable strides were made in splitting stable atoms.

As long as experimenters were limited to small quantities of radiations given off by radium, they were hampered in smashing atoms on a scale that would yield full knowledge of their structure. Finally, in the '30s, powerful electrical atom smashers were invented by several physicists. They included the electrostatic machine developed by R. J. Van de Graaff at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, the electrostatic generator built at the Carnegie Institution of Washington by Drs. M. A.

Electrical atom smashers. Tuve, L. R. Hafstad, and O. Dahl, and the huge, pearshaped atom smasher at the Westinghouse Laboratories at East Pittsburgh, Pa., used by the Westinghouse physicist, Dr. E. U. Condon, and his associates.

Most powerful of all the atom smashers was the cyclo- 225-ton tron invented by Dr. Ernest O. Lawrence of the University of California at Berkeley. The last in a series of ever-larger Lawrence cyclotrons weighs 225 tons and produces 100,000,000 volts.

cyclotron.

But, despite all the atom splitting that was done with these huge machines, none of the experiments produced a method of splitting one atom in such a way as to cause it to split other atoms. The discovery of the highly important chain reaction of U235 was made in Germany with very modest equipment. In fact, it doesn't require an atom smasher at all to smash U235; it only needs a few slow-moving neutrons, which can be created readily by mixing powdered beryllium with a little radium and passing the beam of high-speed neutrons thus produced through a wafer of paraffin to slow them down.

This discovery was made late in 1938, when two German scientists, Drs. Otto Hahn and F. Strassmann noted that uranium disintegrated when bombarded with slow neutrons. Two associates, Dr. Lise Meitner, an Austrian woman physicist, and Dr. O. Frisch, both of whom later fled Nazi Germany, properly interpreted the action as a splitting splitting (also called "fission") of the U235 atom into of U_{235} .

the simpler elements barium and krypton, with emission of more neutrons and generation of enormous power.

International race for atomic power. Physicists all over the world instantly grasped the significance of this discovery. The international race for the conquest of atomic power was suddenly on—a struggle which, with the nations heading into a catastrophic war, was rightly interpreted as a race for world military domination. For the first country to solve the problem would have a weapon to rule the world—constructively or destructively. The Anglo-Americans won.

August 10, 1945. Japan offers to surrender. August 11 Secretary of State James F. Byrnes, on behalf of the Allied nations, replies to the Japanese surrender offer. August 14. Japan agrees to surrender unconditionally, General Douglas MacArthur is appointed Supreme Allied Commander to receive the Japanese surrender. August 15. Marshal Pétain is found guilty of treason. August 20 Vidkun Quisling, Norway's traitor, goes on trial. Augus 24. The United States terminates Lend-Lease aid to other nations. August 26. A 30-year agreement of alliance and friendship between the U.S.S.R. and the Chinese Republic headed by Chiang Kai-shek is made public. August 28. First United States soldiers, mostly technicians, land in Japan. August 30. General MacArthur and American occupation troops land at Atsugi Airfield. September 2 Formal surrender of Japan takes place aboard the USS Missouri in Tokyo Bay.]

THE "RISING SUN" SETS

(A.D. 1945)

FRANK W. PRICE

7N THE early morning hours of August 10, the news for which America had long been waiting was sent over the air. Japan had offered to surrender. The Japanese flash precipitated innumerable rumors, conjectures, contradictions and premature celebrations. But, as the day grew older, the story began to take a more substantial form. From the White House came official confirmation that the Japanese had decided they had had enough and offered to lay down their arms according to the terms outlined at Potsdam by President Truman, Prime Minister Attlee and Premier Stalin.

surrender offer.

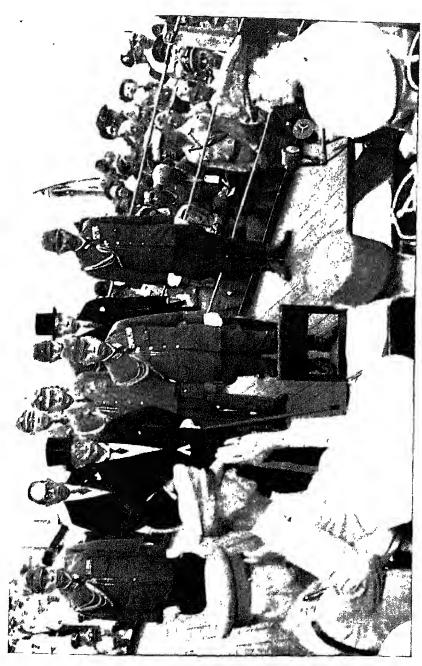
There was only one reservation made by the Japanese Only one Government, and that was the retention of Hirohito as reservation. Emperor. The note, transmitted through the Swiss Government, as intermediary, had much to say about the Emperor's anxiety to "enhance the cause of world peace" and his desire to "bring about a speedy termination of hostilities with a view to saving mankind from the calamities to be imposed upon them by a further con-

Wish to keep Hirohito. tinuation of the war." But the salient point was that the Japanese would quit provided they were permitted to keep Hirohito as ruler.

American reactions. A twenty-four hour pause followed during which Washington was officially silent as the heads of the governments in Britain, Russia and China were consulted A cross section of American public opinion revealed natural reactions. There were those who thought that "unconditional surrender" should mean precisely what that terminology implied and that the Japanese should not be granted any provisos. Others felt even more strongly and classified Hirohito as a war criminal who should be arrested and tried as such. There were the many thousands, with sons and daughters in the service, who be lieved that the granting of the concession was a small price to pay for the lives that would be saved by stopping the war before beachheads had to be established on the shores of Honshu.

Allied reply to Japan. The prayers of the latter group were answered at 10:30 A.M., August 11, when Secretary of State James F. Byrnes made public the reply of the United States, Britain, Russia and China to the Japanese Government. Regarding the controversial point it had this to say:

"With regard to the Japanese Government's message accepting the terms of the Potsdam Proclamation but containing the statement with the understanding that the said declaration does not comprise any demand



E FORMAL SURRENDER OF JAPAN, SFPTI MIR R 2, 1945 (Tokko Time). SCENE ABOARD THE USS MESOCIAI IN TOKNO BAY JUST BLEORE GINERAL DOUGLAS MACARIHUR SIGNI NTHE, SURRENDER DOCUMENTS (Page 414) FROM AN INTIRNATIONAL NIWS PROTOGRAPH

which prejudices the prerogatives of his Majesty as a sovereign ruler,' our position is as follows:

"From the moment of surrender the authority of the Emperor and the Japanese Government to rule the State shall be subject to the Supreme Commander of the Allied Powers, who will take such steps as he deems proper to Supreme effectuate the surrender terms.

Authority of Allied Commander.

"The Emperor will be required to authorize and insure the signature by the Government of Japan and the lapanese Imperial General Headquarters of the surrender terms necessary to carry out the provisions of the Potsdam Declaration, and shall issue his commands to all the Japanese military, naval and air authorities and to all of the forces under their control wherever located to cease active operations and to surrender their arms. and to issue such other orders as the Supreme Commander may require to give effect to the surrender terms."

Simultaneously with the publication of the Allied reply came the announcement that General Douglas MacArthur had been designated as the Supreme Allied General Commander in complete charge of the Japanese capitulation. The selection of MacArthur was acclaimed throughout the nation. Since that day early in 1942 when he had, by a Presidential directive, left the remnants of a defeated army on Corregidor and had flown to Australia, his record had been brilliant. The long trail back through New Guinea, the Solomons, the Gilberts,

Mac Arthur in complete charge.

the Marshalls, the Marianas, the Philippines, and the Ryukyus had been accomplished in record time and without a set-back. General MacArthur's long association with Far Eastern problems and his reputation as a stern disciplinarian made him a logical choice for his latest assignment.

Logical choice.

For three days following the dispatch of the note to Japan, nothing was heard from the enemy. In America impatience was general. There had been a national acceptance of the idea that the war was over and speculation was rife over the possibilities of more Japanese treachery. Then, on August 14, the note came from Japan which announced accord with the terms in the Byrnes message and America knew that the war was over.

Japan accepts terms

General MacArthur and his staff began working out the routine of surrender. As an initial step Japan was to send her surrender envoys to the island of Ie Shima in two planes painted white with green crosses. From Ie Shima they were to be taken to Manila in a U. S. Army transport plane where they were to be told what preparations the homeland was to make prior to American occupation. The Japanese delegation arrived at Ie on August 19 and within a few hours was on its way to Manila. At the Philippine capital they were received with frigid military formality and given the details of the surrender protocol. The Japanese left Manila on August 20 for Tokyo.

First surrender delegation.

Meanwhile, from a military and naval standpoint events were rapidly progressing. To convince his farflung legions that Japan was a defeated nation and that her armies should lay down their arms, Hirohito sent out Reyal special ambassadors. So that the word of the Emperor princes would be obeyed, only men of royal extraction were selected for the purpose. Off to Manchuria, China, the once great bastion of Truk, the Netherlands Indies, Malava, the by-passed islands of the Solomons and the isolated regions of New Guinea went the royal princes with the message that Japan's dream of a great Asiatic Empire was ended.

carry neux of defeat.

Off the Japanese coast Admiral William F. Halsey began assembling the ships of the Third Fleet which had Third contributed so decisively to the crushing of Japan. By Fleet August 26 they had steamed into Sagami Bay, just south assembles. of Tokyo, where they anchored while mine-clearing operations were conducted in Tokyo Bay itself. On August 28 the fleet began its cautious entry into Tokyo Bay. The Missouri, the 55,000-ton super-dreadnaught, and Admiral Halsey's flagship, the Iowa, a sister ship, and the South Dakota, of Guadalcanal fame, led the flotilla. To the Missouri had been delegated the stellar role in the surrender ceremonies. It was aboard her that the Japanese were to sign the articles of surrender. On the same day the first of the occupation troops landed on Atsugi airfield, 14 miles south of Tokyo. These units occupation were composed mostly of officers and technicians whose troops.

assignment was to prepare the landing strips for the coming airborne legions.

The scene at Atsugi on August 28 provided a study in strange contrasts. The Americans were grim, business-like and dressed in work clothes. The Japanese welcoming committee was resplendent in full dress uniforms with clanking Samurai swords. For the harsh realities of defeat they had substituted a festive air. But overhead in the swarms of American fighter planes hovering in protective fashion over the handful of Americans, the beaten enemy had the true answer.

Four days later the final chapter of the Japanese surrender was written aboard the Missouri. At 7:55 P.M. September 1 (8:55 A.M., September 2, Tokyo time), the Japanese surrender delegation, headed by Foreign Minister Mamoru Shigemitsu, boarded the Missouri and was escorted to the veranda deck where General MacArthur and his aides were waiting. After a brief introductory address by MacArthur the signing of the documents was begun.

There were two copies, one bound in gold for the victors, and the other appropriately bound in black for the vanquished. The first to sign were Shigemitsu and General Yoshijiro Umezu of the Imperial General Staff Then MacArthur, using five different pens, affixed his signature on behalf of the Allied Nations. Next in order were Admiral Chester Nimitz for the United States, and representatives for China, the United Kingdom, Russia.

1945

Australia, Canada, France, the Netherlands, and New 7ealand.

The proceedings lasted a mere twenty minutes. General MacArthur made a few concluding remarks, and the Japanese were on their way down the Missouri's ladder carrying the black document to Tokyo. One phase of the signing was as dramatic as it was fitting. At Mac-Arthur's side were Lieutenant General Jonathan M. Liberated Wainright, of Corregidor fame, and British Lieutenant generals General Arthur E. Percival of Singapore. Both of these soldiers had fought the hard fight and surrendered with their troops when their bastions had fallen during the lush days of Japanese victory. MacArthur's finishing touch was to take them from the prison camps in which they had been confined for over three years and place them aboard the Missouri to share the final hour of triumph.

share hour of trittmph.

[September 8, 1945. Formal surrender of Japanese troops in China is signed at Nanking. The Stars and Stripes are officially raised over Tokyo. September 10. In Norway, Vidkun Quisling is found guilty of high treason is judged and is condemned to death.

Ouisling guilty.

The names of authors are printed in CAPITALS, and the titles of chapters in **bold** face type. The contribution of each author represented in the work is given immediately under the author's name.

A

Aschen, 11, 288; Allies take, x, 255 (See also Aix-la-Chapelle) Abarbanel offers ransom for Jews, iii, 288 Abbasides, rise of the, ii, 245 ABBOTT, WILLIS JOHN The Battle of Manila Bay, vii, 235 The Battle of Santiago, vii, 205 A. B. C. Powers, conference of, ix, 4 Abdallah, negotiates for surrender, iii, 279-282 Abdelaziz, conquests of, ii, 237 Abd-el-Aziz, viii, 147, 231 Abdl-el-Kader, vi, 224 Abderrahman, ii, 240-244 Abdul Aziz, viii, 233, 234 Abdul Hamid, Sultan of Turkey, viii, 233, 237, 240, 241 deposed, viii, 243; ix, 205 Abercromby, General, v, 207 Abercromby, Sir Ralph, vi, 86, 90 Abillius, i, 92 Aboukir Bay, vi. 57 Abraham, i, 13, 25 Abrial, Jean Marie Charles, x, 61 Abruzzi, Duke of, vii, 266 Abu Bekr, ii, 210, 214 Abu Talıb, ii, 209 Abyssinia (Ethiopia), Christian Empire of, iii, Italian aggression in, vii, 151-158; ix, 297appeals to League of Nations, ix, 295 (See also Haile Sclassie) Accad, i, 23, 29 Ace, in aviation, ix, 251; x, 281

Achaia, ii, 36, 43 Achean captives, ii, 38 Achean League, i, 331; ii, 36, 37, 40 Acheans, join Rome, ii. 22 break with Rome, ii, 39 Achmet III., vi, 50 Acosta, Bert, ix, 247, 256 Acre, capture of, ii, 349-350 siege of, iii, 2, 74 capture of, iii, 6 capture of, by Mamelukes, iii, 74 the Polos visit, iii, 85 Bonaparte at, vi, 68-69 British defence of, vi, 74-77 besieged by Ibrahim, vi, 230 Acron and Romulus, combat of, i, 93 Act of Uniformity, iv, 207 Actium, battle of, ii, 61-64, 66 ADAMS, FRANCIS OTTIWELL The Opening of Japan, vi, 321 Adams, John Quincy, speech of, vii, 56 views on Pan-Americanism, viii, 212 Adams, Lieut. Sam, in Battle of Midway, x, Adams, Samuel, v, 247, 256 Addıs Ababa, ıx, 258 Adelheid, Queen, ii, 287 Aden, vi, 239 Adenauer, Konrad, ix, 284 Adowa, battle of, vii, 156 Adrian, persecution under, ii, 112 Adrian VI, becomes Pope, iv, 58 Adrianople, Peace of, vi, 209, 210 Aegean Islands, x, 352 Aero Club of America, ix, 244 Aerodynamics, in aviation, ix, 249

Aeronautics, air transport planes, x, 225 Avengers, torpedo planes, x, 258, 266, 286, 294, 295 Arctic airway thought feasible, ix, 229 B-25 bomber hits Empire State Building, x, Blériot crosses Channel, viii, 243 Catalina flying boats, x, 95 commercial aviation, development of, ix, 251 dirigible Hindenburg burns, ix, 343-344 dirigible Macon wrecked, ix, 307 dirigible Norge crosses North Pole, ix, 237 dirigible R-34 crosses Atlantic, ix, 182 dirigible Shenandoah wrecked, ix, 226 endurance record, ix, 256 first airplane loop-the-loop made, ix, 249 first airplane over North Pole, ix, 234, 253 first aviation tournament, viii, 244 first balloon type of aircraft, viii, 356 first gliding flight, viii, 364 first power flight, viii, 369 first Zeppelin flights, viii, 357-358 flight of Acosta and Chamberlin, ix, 256 flight of Balbo's air fleet, ix, 293 flight of Bremen, ix, 256 flight of Graf Zeppelin, ix, 257 flight of Lindbergh, ix, 243 flight of NC-boats, ix, 167 flight of Yankee Clipper, x, 75 gliders in France and Brazil, viii, 369-370 in war, x, 225 Heinkel, German plane, x, 38, 245 Hellcat, Navy fighter plane, x, 258, 267, 270, 280, 286 Helldiver, dive-bombing plane, x, 258, 279, history and development of, viii, 355-374; ix, 167-168, 179-181, 227-242, 243-255 Italy uses dirigibles in war, viii, 311 Kittyhawks, U. S. Army fighter planes, x, 95 Law, Ruth, record of, ix, 11-12 Moissant circles Statue of Liberty, viii, 278 nonstop Atlantic flight, ix, 179, 181, 244 nonstop endurance flight, ix, 256 notable experimenters, viii, 357-370 Paris-Berlin flight, viii, 374 Penaud plans monoplane, viii, 362 postal service, viii, 290

Aeronautics, superfortress, U. S. heavy borner, x, 125, 128, 129, 249, 256, 312, 371, 372, 376, 386, 401, 402 Tomahawks, U. S. Army fighter planes, r. transatlantic flight of Alcock and Brown, u. 178, 179-181, 244 Vedrines wins Paris-Madrid air race, val Wildcat, U. S. Navy fighter plane, x, 205 World War I's impetus to aviation, ix, 250 Wrights, the, viii, 231, 243, 366-369; ix, 243 Zeppelin flights, viii, 231, 243, 263; 11, 227 Zeppelin produces rigid dirigible, viii, 357 Zeros, Japanese fighter planes, x, 97, 118. 120, 122 Actius, bravery and tactics of, ii, 175 Afghanistan, v, 174; vi, 239 invasions of, vii, 130, 144 African campaigns in World War II. (See Abys. sinia, Algeria, Libya, North Africa, Soma liland, Tunisia, World War II) Agadir, German warship at, viii, 290 U. S. landings at, x, 147 Agathias, i, 35 Age and Laws of Justinian, The, ii, 197 Agesilaus, i, 274 Agincourt, battle of, iii, 205, 207 Agordat, battle of, vii, 153 Agrarian laws, i, 235 Agreement of London, ix, 225 Agricola, ii, 130 Agricultural Adjustment Act, declared untoq. stitutional, ix, 308 Agriculture, early, i, 8-9 Agrippa, il, 62, 63, 119 Agrippina, wife of Germanicus, ii, 89 poisons Claudius, ii, 108 Aguilar, Don Alfonso, iii, 347 Ahriman, i, 36 Ahura, i, 37, 38 Aignadel, battle of, iv, 2 Airborne invasion, x, 31 (See also Parachute troops) Airfields, ix, 251 Atsugi, Japan, x, 408, 413, 414 Clark Field, Luzon, x, 313 Fornebö, Norway, x, 30, 31 Ford Island, Hawaii, x, 94, 95-97

Airfields, Hickam Field, Hawaii, x, 94, 95, 96, Kjeller, Norway, x, 38 Le Bourget, France, ix, 246 Naha airfield, Okinawa, x, 386 Roosevelt Field, ix, 245 Wheeler Field, Hawaii, x, 94, 95, 96 (See also Aeronautics) Austulf, attacks Rome, ii, 250 Ax-la-Chapelle, Congress of, vi, 183 Belgians evacuate, ix, 258 (See also Aachen) Ahagi, Japanese carrier, x, 117, 123, 126 Akhar, character of, iv, 111, 115 establishes a new era, iv, 114 conquests of, iv, 187 Alaric, ii, 165 attacks Roman Empire, ii, 168-169 Alaska, purchase of, from Russia, vii, 92 gold discovered in, vii, 204 fight of Norge over, ix, 229, 230 Alaska-Canada-United States Highway, x, 149 Alaska-Yukon-Pacific Exposition, viii, 243 Alba, i, 87 Albania, and Italy, ix, 216, 381 Albanians, ix, 208, 209, 212 Albany, settlement at, iv, 252 Albatross, in Solomon Islands, viii, 278 Alberoni, v, 115 Albert I., King of Belgium, crowned, viii, 255 enters Brussels, ix, 95 death of, ix, 294 Albert, Prince, speech of, vi, 294-297 Albert of Brandenburg, iv, 87 Albert, the Constable d', iii, 202 Albert Edward Nyanza, discovered, vii, 158 Albert J. Grant, destroyer, x, 277, 278, 279 Albert (son of Rodolph), tyranny of, iii, 91 Albigenses, the, iii, 33, 34, 39 Albein, King of the Lombards, ii, 204 Alcibiades, treason of, i, 260 Alcmaonids, the, i, 189 ALCOCK, CAPTAIN JOHN The First Nonstop Flight, ix, 179 Alcock, Captain John, flies across Atlantic, ix, 178, 179-181, 244 Alcolea, battle of, vii, 105 Alemanni, invade Gaul, Spain, and Africa, ii, 142 driven from Gaul, ii, 168

Aleppo occupied by Mamelukes, iii, 74 Aleutian Islands, 1x, 251 Alexander, Harold R. L. G., x, 144, 348 Alexander of Macedon, i, 310 at Arbela, i, 313, 331 crosses the Euphrates, i, 319 death of, i, 331 generalship of, i, 323, 331 Alexander of Servia, vii, 349 Alexander, son of Cleopatra, ii, 55 Alexander the Syrian, ii, 64 Alexander III., Pope, flight of, ii, 350 Alexander V., Pope, iii, 180 Alexander VI., Pope, iii, 308, 309, 327 suspends Savonarola, iii, 331 grants for exploration, iv, 263 Alexander I., czar of Russia, vi, 123, 177, Alexander II., vi, 339; vii, 26 murdered, vii, 144 Alexander I, King of Yugoslavia, assassinated, ix, 294-295 Alexandra, death of, ix, 226 Alexandria (Egypt), i, 311; ii, 45 French fleet at, vi, 57 endangered in World War II, x, 140, 143 Alexandrine War, the, ii, 51 Alexis, ii, 342 Alexius, Prince, iii, 15, 16, 18 Alexius Mourzousle, becomes Emperor, iii, 19 Alfalfa grass, viii, 136 Alfonso XII. of Castile, compiles astronomical tables, iii, 60 Alfonso XII., King of Spain, vii, 107, 129 Alfonso XIII., coronation of, vii, 307 attempted assassination of, viii, 16-17 marriage, viii, 200 forced to flee, ix, 258 Alfred the Great, accession of, ii, 260 King of Wessex, ii, 263 Alfric, Earl of Mercia, ii, 292 Alfric, the traitor, ii, 298 Algeciras Conference, The, viii, 147 Algeria, taken by French, vi, 356 invaded by U. S. forces, x, 135, 148 Algerian piracies, beginning of, iv, 26 Algiers, conquest of, vi, 219-230 Alhambra, surrender of the, iii, 281 Ali, Mohammed's follower, ii, 210

ALISON, SIR ARCHIBALD	Amiens, award of, iii, 65
The Directoire, vi, 29	treaty of, iv, 70
The Battle of Vittoria, vi, 141	peace of, vi, 86
Alleghanies, settlements beyond, v, 177	Amphibious warfare (See Invasions in W.
Allen, Lieut. Colonel Brook, x, 128, 129	War II)
Allen, Ethan, v, 268	Amphictuonia Council al
	Amphictyonic Council, the, i, 297, 301
ALLEN, L. G.	AMUNDSEN, CAPTAIN ROALD
How America Went to War, ix, 15	The Conquest of the Northwest Passage, 1
Allenby, General, ix, 94, 225	49
Alliance of Thebes and Athens, i, 306	Amundsen, discovers South Pole, viii, 311
of Lubeck and Hamburg, iii, 117, 118, 121	attempts air trip to North Pole iv 226
Allied Reparation Committee, ix, 258	flies over North Pole, ix, 227-241
Alma, battle of the, vi, 330	Anabaptists, revolt of the, iv, 87
Almeida discovers Ceylon, iii, 350	Anacreon, i, 185
Almohades, fall of the, iii, 22	Anæsthetics and Antiseptics, vii, 81
Almonte, General, vii, 47	Ananda, i, 108
Alp Arslan, conquests of, ii, 334	Anatolia (Asia Minor), ix, 206, 209, 210, 212
	213, 384
Alphege, ii, 298	
Alphonso II. of Naples, iii, 309, 313	Anderida, fall of fortress of, ii, 189
Alps, Passage of the, vi, 85	Andrassy, Hungarian leader, ix, 82
Alpujarras, rebellion in, iii, 345, 346	André, Major, hanged, v, 294
Alsace-Lorraine, ix, 46, 88, 149, 210	Andree attempts to reach North Pole by ta.
boundaries of, ix, 119	loon, vii, 204; ix, 229
restored to France, ix, 121-123	Andrew, King of Hungary, iii, 53
(See also Elsass, Lorraine)	Andriscus, ii, 39
Altis, the, i, 78	Angel to the Shepherds, chapel, ii, 69
Altmark, incident of the, x, 29, 30	Anghiari, battle of, iii, 226
Alva, iv, 144, 157, 158, 159, 160	Anglo-Japanese treaty, viii, 121, 220-224
Alviano, Bartolomeo d', iv, 2	Anglo-Saxon Chronicle, ii, 295, 298
Al Zegri, conversion of, iii, 343	Angora, ix, 205, 207, 211-213, 215
Amboise, Cardinal, iv, r	(See Ankara)
Ambrose, Archbishop, ii, 166	Angra Mainyu, i, 38
America, transatlantic flight of, ix, 247, 248	Animals, first domestication of, i, 9
America, discovery of, iii, 293-303; iv, 245	Anjou, Duke of, iv, 189
America's Greatest Naval Battle, x, 257	Ankara (formerly Angora), ix, 385, 392
American army, v, 280, 287	Anna Comnena, ii, 267, 337
American congress, first, v, 257, 260	Annam, vii, 150
second, v, 269	Anne of Austria, iv, 309, 312
American Expeditionary Force (World War I)	Anne, Queen of England, v, 73-74, 89
first soldiers of, killed in action, ix, 21	Anne, Czarina of Russia, v, 145
major operations of, in 1918, ix, 23-37	Anachlesa Austro Cormon in ann ann an
defeat Germans at Château-Thierry, ix, 23	Anschluss, Austro-German, ix, 300, 344, 34
	X, I3
advance at Soissons, ix, 24, 26	Ansgar, the Apostle of the North, ii, 263
reduce St. Miliel salient, ix, 29	Antarctic Continent, ix, 308
takes Grandpré, ix, 32	Antarctic exploration, vi, 249
American Operations in France, 1918, ix,	Shackleton's expeditions, viii, 242; ix, 11
23	Scott's expeditions, viii, 16, 46, 263
American republics, conferences of, viii, 211	Amundsen reaches South Pole, viii, 311
at San Francisco Conference, x, 394, 395	Byrd's second expedition, ix, 293-294

Antarctic exploration, Ellsworth's flight over	Arbela, battle of, i, 313-331
Antarctic, ix, 308	Arbitration treaties, viii, 47, 230, 279, 290, 311,
(See also South Pole)	381
Assures sights Japanese submarine, x, 89	Arbues, the Inquisitor, iii, 286
Anti-Corn Law League, vi, 234	Archduke Francis Ferdinand, The, ix, 1
Actioch, battle of, ii, 147	ARCHER, H. G.
capture of, ii, 344-345	The Simplon Tunnel, viii, 73
taken by Mamelukes, iii, 74	Arcot captured, v, 175
Actuochus III., of Syria, ii, 22	Arctic exploration, discovery of North Pole,
And-Semitism, in England, ii, 350	viii, 245-254
in Spain, iii, 285-292	voyages of Peary, viii, 246-247
in Spant, III, 203 292 in Russia, vii, 159, 337-346	Amundsen expedition, ix, 226
in Nazi Germany, ix, 280, 281, 291, 337, 345	Amundsen-Ellsworth-Nobile expedition, ix,
(See also Jews, massacre)	230
(See also Jews, massacre)	Byrd expedition, ix, 227
Antiseptic Surgery, vii, 80, 81, 83	Ardennes bulge, x, 313
Attonias (Cleopatra's galley), ii, 58	Areopagus, the, i, 115
Antonina, wife of Belisarius, ii, 200	Aretes, i, 327
Antony, ii, 51-67	Argentina, centenary of, viii, 263
Antwerp, sack of, iv, 161, 164	admitted to United Nations at all and
taken by Germans, ix, 7	admitted to United Nations, x, 389-391
retaken by Allies, x, 254	Argonaut, U. S. submarine, lost, x, 171
Anzio, beachhead at, x, 214, 325	Argonne, description of, vi, 8
Aellius, i, 92	Argyle, Duke of, executed (1685), iv, 329
Apis, bull, killed by Cambyses, i, 180	Duke of, in Jacobite rebellion, v, 121-131
Apollo, worship of, i, 19	Aristides, i, 217, 230
hymn to, i, 46	Aristogeiton, escape of, i, 187
Apostle of the Indians, iv, 14	Ariston, i, 326
Apparition of St. Peter and St. Paul, ii, 177-178	Aristotle, i, 35
Apparitions at Salamis, i, 229	Arius, banishment of, ii, 158
Appius Claudius, i, 239	Arizona, admitted as 48th State, viii, 310
Appius Herdonius, i, 236	Arizona, American battleship, loss of, x, 99,
Appomattox, Lee's surrender, vii, 80	100, 104, 105, 106, 107
Apulia, Hannibal at, i, 332	Armada, the Spanish, iv, 176
seized, ii, 266	Armadas in World War II, x, 61-62, 135, 139.
Aquileia besieged by Attila, ii, 171, 173	¥47
Aquitaine conquered by Clovis, ii, 195	Armament, added to airplanes, ix, 250
Arab Conquest of Spain, ii, 227	limitation of naval (1922), ix, 191-197
Arab, tactics, ii, 219-220	Armenia, conquered by Turks, ii, 334
Arabi Pasha, vii, 150	conquered by Russia, vi, 217
Arabian caliphs, the, ii, 217	Armenians, massacre of, viii, 243
Arabian Empire in Spain, iii, 279, 283	disappearance of, ix, 207
Arabs, conquest of the, ii, 225, 227-238	Arminius, elopes with Thusnelda, ii, 79
besiege Constantinople, ii, 238	battle-ground of, ii, 82
invade France, ii, 238	tactics of, ii, 84
ubdue Sicily, ii, 259	attacks Varus, ii, 84-85
demand autonomy, ix, 380	Armistead, General, vii, 76
riot with Jews in Palestine, ix, 392	Armistice of 1918, begins, ix, 37
Arago, vi, 274	terms signed, ix, 95
Arbaces the Mede, i, 73-76	Arms embargo, U. S. (See Neutrality Act)

Army of Despair, The, x, 65	Ataturk, Kemal (See Kemal, Mustapha)
Army, Darius's, i, 317	Atelia, French capitulate at, iii, 316
Alexander's, i, 318	Athenian liberty, i, 192
first national standing, iii, 226	army at Marathon, i, 213-214
of the Potomac, vii, 65	commanders, the, i, 213
of the Maes (Meuse), vii, 121	aggression and oppression, i, 254
of the Loire, vii, 124	fleet, i, 259, 300
Arnhem (Holland) trap, x, 254	generals, i, 259-260
Arnold, Benedict, v, 268, 283, 289	army, defeat of, i, 266, 308
ARNOLD, MARGUERITE	Athens, rise of, i, 57
Elegy for Ataturk, ix, 383	insurrection in, i, 109
ARNOLD, THOMAS	factions at, i, 191
Expulsion of the Tarquins, i, 195	revolutions at, i, 192
Arnold of Brescia, iii, 131	makes peace with Sparta, i, 232
. · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	yields to Sparta, i, 244
Arques, battle of, iv, 198	confederacy against, i, 256, 257
Arrabbiati, the, iii, 331	plague at, i, 257
Arrazola, vii, 94	
Arruntius, ii, 64	sends second fleet to Syracuse, i, 263
Artaphernes, i, 193, 211	subdued by Macedonians, i, 331
Artaxerxes, i, 269, 271; ii, 142	taken by Mohammed II, iii, 254
Artillery, first used, iii, 124	(See also Greece)
Aruns of Clusium, i, 285	Atlantic cable, vii, 84
combat with Brutus, i, 202	Atlantic Charter, x, 85, 362, 400
Arzema dethroned, ii, 219	Atlantic first crossed by steamships, vi, 300
Ascalon, attack on Crusaders at, ii, 348	Atlantic wall, x, 216, 217, 225
rebuilt, iii, 7	Atmospheric engine, the, v, 229
Asia, ii, 44; x, 79, 382	Atomic Age, The, x, 403
Asia Minor, ii, 50, 204; ix, 207	Atomic bomb, dropped on Hiroshima, x, 4-1,
conquered by Turks, ii, 334	403, 404
(See also Anatolia)	dropped on Nagasaki, x, 402, 404
Askold, ii, 273	make-up of, 404-406
Aspern, battle of, vi, 117	research for development of the, x, 406.
Asquith, Herbert H., resigns, ix, 12	importance of the, x, 403, 408
Assassination of President McKinley, vii, 281	Attalus III, ii, 44
Assassins, the (of Persia), iii, 60	Attica, invasion of, i, 189
during the Terror, vi, 16, 19	Attila, ii, 166, 171-179
Assembly of the People, ii, 46	invades Gaul and Italy, ii, 169
Asshur-edil-ilani, II., i, 72	besieges Aquileia, ii, 172
Asshurlikhish, i, 73	conquests of, ii, 173
Assize of Jerusalem, ii, 349	unknowingly founds Venice, ii, 174-175
Assouan Dam, vii, 280	receives Roman ambassadors, ii, 177
Assyria, i, 19, 24, 53, 76; ii, 221	marriage and death of, ii, 178
(See also Iraq)	Attlee, Clement R., British Prime Minister,
Assyrian Empire, i, 71, 125, 128	x, 402, 409
Astronomical Tables, iii, 60	Auchinleck, General Claude, x, 142, 144
Astronomy, i, 28	Auerstadt, battle of, vi, 115
Astyages, i, 135, 139	Augsburg, Diet of, iv, 35
At the South Pole, viii, 313	Augury, i, 88
Atahualpa, tale sascinca, iv, 17	Augustin Friars founded, iii, 60
•	

بر المراجعة Augustus, despair of, ii, 89 A-gustus II., King of Poland, v, 165 Augustus III., King of Poland, v, 165 A. .. Postumius, i, 205-208 A-male, Duke of, vi, 229 A.-chan, Emperor of Rome, ii, 117 successes of, ii, 142 attacks Zenobia, ii, 143 takes Palmyra, ii, 147 captures Zenobia, ii, 149 mumph of, ii, 150 Aurungzebe, iv, 329; v, 89 Austerlitz, battle of, vi, 113 Autralia, v, 221; ix, 68, 185, 251 new constitution in, ix, 294 at San Francisco Conference, x, 393, 395 representative at Japanese surrender, x, 415 Australians in World War II, x, 386, 401 A.,tria, ix, 40, 60, 68 invaded by Soliman, iv, 75 House of, iv, 321; vi, 46 overruns Venetia, vi, 52 in Italy, vi, 190 reduces Naples and Sicily, vi, 194 gains Cracow, vi, 258 revolution (1848) in, vi, 278 and Italy, vi, 282; vii, 13 and Piedmont declare war, vii, 11 history of, ix, 80-81 Chancellor Dollfuss assassinated, ix, 294 relations of, and Germany, ix, 315-316, 318, annexed by Germany, ix, 344 Poland's fear of, x, 13 Germans surrender in, x, 347 Austria-Hungary, ix, 21, 95 annexes Bosnia and Herzegovina, viii, 241 declares war on Serbia, ix, 5, 114 declares war on Russia, ix, 6 at war with Rumania, ix, 11 Charles I., succeeds Francis Joseph, ix, 12 start of Dual Monarchy in, ix, 81 and Yugoslavia, ix, 67-73 and Czechoslavia, ix, 80-90, 351 need for break-up of, ix, 72, 73, 85, 86 Austrians invade Bavaria, vi, 108 Austro-Russian Attack on Turkey, The, v, 147

Auto-da-fé, the first, iii, 268
Automobile, The, vii, 301
Avars, the, 1i, 269
Aventine, Mount, i, 88
Aventine, Hill, the, i, 236, 240
Aviation, (See Aeronautes)
Avienus, character of, ii, 176
Avignon, seat of the Papacy, iii, 90
Axis, anti-Comintern, x, 24, 25, 26
Berlin Mutual assistance pact of, x, 75
Aylesford, victory of, ii, 186
Azaña, Manuel, President of Spain, ix, 308, 312
Azores, ix, 112, 169
Aztecs, the, iv, 15

В

Baalcazar, II., i, 53 Babel, i, 29 Baber, founds Empire of Great Moguls, iv, 87 takes Bengal, iv, 87 Babington, Anthony, iv, 174 Babylon, temples of, i, 26, 30 vastness and strength of, i, 163, 170 Daniel interprets writing, i, 165-167 destruction of, i, 171 Alexander enters, i, 330 Badoglio, Pietro, x, 182 Bagration, General, vi, 124, 126 Bahar, conquered by Akbar, iv, 187 Baker, Sir Benjamin, vii, 331 Baku oil fields, German pincers drive toward, X, 140, 142 Bakutis, Commander Frederick E., air search mission of, x, 270 Balaklava, position of, vi, 330 battle of, vi, 333 Balbo, Italo, mass flight of, ix, 293 Balchen, Bernt, on Byrd Expedition, ix, 247 Baldwin, Count of Flanders, iii, 21 Baldwin, Stanley, British Prime Minister, ix. 307 on marriage of Edward VIII, ix, 330, 331 resigns, ix, 344 Balearic Islands, ii, 4 Balfour, resignation of, vii, 127 Balfour Treaty, abrogation of demanded, ix, Balik Papan, Borneo oil center, captured, x, 401

Balkan States, ix, 40, 46-47, 60, 82, 87; x, 147 against Turkey, viii, 321, 374, 379; ix, 203 mutual aid, pact of, viii, 375-378 race groups in, ix, 67, 68 Italy unsuccessful in, ix, 299 German desire to dominate, ix, 314, 315, 340, 353, 354; x, 25 Balkan Wars, viii, 379-381; ix, 3, 70, 71 Ballot, the, vii, 129 Balthasar (Belshazzar), feast of, i, 164-167 Baltic Canal, vii, 179 Baltic States, x, 21 non-aggression pacts with Russia, ix, 294 join Soviet Russia, x, 75 Baltimore, Lord, iv, 293 Baltimore conflagration, viii, 16 Band, the Sacred, i, 308 Bank of England, the, v, 66, 135 Bank Holiday in U. S., ix, 292 Bannerets, the, iii, 135 Bannockburn, iii, 99 Bannockburn, battle of, iii, 99-112 English losses at, iii, 110 Baratieri, General, vii, 154 Barbarians, conversion of the, ii, 166 Attila's, ii, 171, 175 Barbaric invasions of the Fourth Century, ii, Barbarossa, Frederick. (See Frederick Barbarossa) Barbarossa, Hayraddin, iv, 26 Barbary fleet, destruction of the, iv, 316 Barbury Hill, battle at, ii, 191 Barca, vi, 247 Barcelona, bomb at, viii, 121 Barclay, General, vi, 124, 127 Bar-cochba, the impostor, ii, 112 Bar-Giora, ii, 122 BARKER J. ELLIS Revolution in China, viii, 293 Barnabites, the, iv, 101 Barnet, battle of, iii, 254 Baron, the feudal, ii, 327 Barons, the English, meet at Brackley, iii, 47 appear before King John, iii, 47 opposition to Henry, iii, 61 policy of, iii, 67 resistance of the, iii, 72 victory of the, iii, 69

Barons' War and First English Parliament. The, iii, 61 Barrage balloons, x, 228 Barras, General, vi, 39 Barrier Treaty, the, v, 115 BARRY, WILLIAM Leo XIII. A Retrospect, vii, 359 Barthou, Jean Louis, assassination of, ix, 245 Basle, Council of, iii, 198 Bassora, foundation of, ii, 221 Bastille, the plan of, v, 327 storming of the, v, 316, 323-334 fall of, v, 334 Bataan, falls to Japanese, x, 110 Batavia (Java) founded, iv, 259 Batavian Republic, the, vi, 28 Bath, ii, 191 Battenize, Tamerlane arrives in, iii, 182 Battle Abbey, ii, 310 Battle of Actium, ii, 53 Battle of Agincourt, iii, 201 Battle of Arbela, The, i, 313 Battle of Blenheim, The, v, 69 Battle of Crécy, iii, 123 Battle of Elandslaagt, The, vii, 257 Battle of Flodden Field, iv, 19 Battle of Gettysburg, The, vii, 65 Battle of Inkerman, The, vi, 347 Battle of La Hogue, The, v, 55 Battle of Lake Erie, The, vi, 155 Battle of Manila Bay, The, vii, 235 Battle of Marathon, The, i, 211 Battle of Midway, x, 111, 113-132 first phase of, x, 113 Spruance carrier planes locate Jap fleet, x, 114-115 air squadrons attack, x, 116-118 Japanese hit and sink Yorktown, x, 119-120, 123, 130 U. S. planes continue attack, x, 121 Flying Fortresses from Oahu join battle, x, 122, 125, 128, 129 U. S. submarine sinks Soryu, x, 126 carriers pursue fleeing enemy, x, 128, 131 complete U. S. victory, x, 132, 300 Battle of Mukden, viii, 77 Battle of Omdurman, The, vü, 219 Battle of Pultowa, The, v, 91 Battle of St. Quentin; Loss of Calais, iv, 117

Battle of Salamis, The, i, 221	Belgium, invaded in World
Battle of Santiago, The, vii, 205	and Treaty of Peace (19
Battle of the Boyne, v, 29	120-121, 144, 148, 159
Battle of the Metaurus, The, ii, r	occupies Ruhr, ix, 200
Battle of the Nile, The, vi, 57	evacuates Aix-la-Chapelle
Battle of the Sea of Japan, viii, 89	neutrality of, guaranteed
Battle of the Yalu, The, vii, 169	344, 348
Battle of Tours, The, ii, 239	one of Oslo States, x, 25
Battle of Trafalgar, The, vi, 105	invaded in World War II,
Battle of Valmy, The, vi, I	surrender of, by King Le
Battle of Vittoria, The, vi, 141	Belgrade, besieged, iii, 254
Battleship Row, at Pearl Harbor, x, 98,	105 captured, iv, 87; v, 132;
Fattleships, in World War II, x, 228, 23	3 bombarded, ix, 5
Eritish, x, 62	Belisarius, conquests of, ii, i
French, x, 148	treatment of, ii, 201
German, sunk, x, 27, 39-41, 76, 312	Belleau Wood, cleared by A
Japanese, x, 117, 118, 126, 128, 263	3, 265, Bellinger, Lieut, Command
271, 275, 276, 278, 287-292, 295, 29	98, 299 Belshazzar (See Balthasar)
U. S., in action, x, 135, 229, 271, 27.	2, 273, Beltis, i, 27
274, 275, 277, 319	Belus, i, 27
U. S., sunk or damaged at Pearl I	
x, 99-105	Benes, Edouard, resists Ge
U.S., in Tokyo Bay, x, 413, 414, 415	~ · · · · ·
Battle to the Sea, x, 59	resigns as president, ix,
Eavaria, vii, 127; ix, 120, 124; X, 353	Bengal, taken by Baber, iv,
submits to Austrian Emperor, v, 88	wealth of, v, 201
granted a constitution, vi, 180	Bengazi, x, 146
controlled by Nazis, ix, 282, 283	Bennett, Floyd, Byrd's pilot
Nazis surrender in, x, 347, 351	Bennion, Captain Mervyn,
Eavard, Chevalier, iv, 61	104
Bayeux tapestry, ii, 272	BENSON, ARTHUR C.
Eavezid I, ix, 205	King Edward VII., viii, 2
Beaconsfield, Lord, vii, 132, 139, 141	Beotian infantry at Syracuse
Bear of Oakland, Byrd's ship, ix, 293	Berchtesgaden, conference a
Beauharnais, Eugene, vi, 89	taken by U. S. troops, x,
Beck, Colonel, Polish Foreign Minister,	x, 12, Berengar, King of the Lom
15, 16, 17	Berenice, Princess, ii, 126, 1
Becket, Thomas à, murder of, ii, 350	Beresford, Lord, vi, 189
offerings to shrine of, iv, 94	Beresina, passage of the, vi,
Bed of Justice, v, 269	Bergen, iii, 115
Bedeau, General, vi, 315	Berlin, ix, 339; x, 5
"Beggars, The," iv, 156	Academy of, founded, v,
Beginning of Free Trade, The, vi, 23	
Beginning of the French Revolution	
v, 313	center of Nazi influence, i
Beginnings of Russia, The, ii, 269	Reichstag Building in, bu
Belem, Temple of, iii, 320	description of, ix, 333; x,
Belgium, vi, 14, 86; vii, 144; viii, 216	Russian troops enter, x, 3
ix, 77, 198, 328; x, 78	Germans surrender in, x,

d War I, ix, 5 1919), ix, 113, 114, 9, 164 le, ix, 258 ed by Germany, ix, l, x, 64 copold, x, 60 vi, 120; ix, 7 198-200 Americans, ix, 24, 94 der, NC-1, ix, 168 erman pressure on 52, 356; **x**, 19 362 87 ot, ix, 232, 233, 235 at Pearl Harbor, x, 257 e, i, 265 at, ix, 345, 356 351 nbards, ii, 287 128 i, 136 , 67 ix, 215 43 ix, 283 urns, ix, 279, 292 , 35², 354, 355 339 352, 354

Berlin Decrees, the, vi, 115 Berlin-Tokyo Pact, significance of, ix, 349, 350, 366 Bernadotte, Crown Prince of Sweden, vi, 107, 119, 123, 165, 170 Bernadotte, Count Folke, report of, on meeting with Himmler, x, 345, 353 Bernard of Weimar, iv, 280 Bernicia, the kingdom of, ii, 194 Berosus, i, 12, 21 Berry, Duke of, assassinated, vi, 185 Bertha, wife of Henry IV. (Germany), ii, 325 Berthezene, General, vi, 223 Berytus captured by Crusaders, ii, 350 Berzarin, Nikolai, forces of, occupy Berlin, x, 355 Bessarabia, conquered by Russia, v, 240 Moscow's refusal to surrender, x, 13 ceded to Russia, x, 74 Best, Licutenant, in Battle of Midway, x, 117 Bethlehem (Judea), inn at, ii, 71 Bethlehem (Pennsylvania), v, 154 Betica, reduction of, ii, 233 Betio Island (Tarawa Atoll) location of, x, 183 Betio Island location of, x, 183 preinvasion bombardment of, x, 184 landings on, x, 185, 186 beachhead on, x, 187-190 airfield captured, x, 191 Bezetha, seized by the Romans, ii, 122 Beziers, capture of, iii, 36 Bigi, the, iii, 330 Bionville, battle of, vii, 121 BIRCHALL, FREDERICK T. Four Years of Hitlerism, ix, 333 Birmingham, light cruiser, x, 269 Bishops, first General Council of, ii, 158 Bismarck, Count von, vii, 118, 127, 140 and Austria-Hungary, ix, 71-72, 82 Bismarck, town of, viii, 136 Bismarck, German battleship, sunk, x, 76 Bithyas joins Carthaginians, ii, 30 Bizerte, North African naval base, x, 146 Black Death, The, iii, 139 Black Death, iii, 139; iv, 60 march of, iii, 142 in Europe, iii, 144 duration of, iii, 145-146 number of victims, iii, 145

Black Death, effects of the, iii, 146-147 Boccaccio describes, iii, 150-153 Black Guard, the, in, 255 Black Hole of Calcutta, v, 199, 202 Black, Lieut. Joseph C., in naval battle, x, 283 Black Prince, the, at Crécy, iii, 126 at Poitiers, iii, 160 in Spain, iii, 170 Black's theory of latent heat, v, 230 Black Tomb, the, ii, 271 Blanchard, Gen. George Maurice Jean, x, 59 Bleech, Lieut. (j.g.) Otto, v, 265 Blenheim, battle of, v, 69-88 Bleriot, Louis, airplane builder, viii, 373; ir, 248, 251 Blitzkrieg, x, 42 ABC of, x, 56 Block, Captain, iv, 249 Blood, Council of, iv, 157 Blücher, vi, 167, 169, 171 Blucher, German cruiser, sunk, ix, 8 Blücher, sinks in Oslo fjord, x, 39-41 Blum, Leon, French Premier, ix, 308, 319, 320 cabinet falls, ix, 344 Boabdil (See Abdallah) BOAS, FRANZ The Prehistoric World and Primitive Man, i, I Bobadilla, iv, 101 Boccaccio, quotation from, iii, 150-153 Bochica, i, 12 Boers settle in Natal, vi, 231 attack Mafeking, vii, 245 Boer War, vii, 144, 257, 265 Boëthus, Mathias, execution of, ii, 123 Bogan, Gerald F., Rear Admiral, x, 264 Bohemia, iii, 196 in Thirty Years War, iv, 269; ix, 81 invaded by Friedrick the Great, v, 194 revolution in, vi, 280, 282 under the Hapsburgs, ix, 80-81 Bohemians oppose Sigismund, ili, 196 rise of the, iv, 270 besieged by Henry I, ii, 282 Bohemond, ii, 338-346 Bohun, Sir Henry, death of, iii, 105 Boles, Lieut. Roger S., x, 280 Bolivar, Simon, vii, 377

Edivia, Republic of, ix, 113	Bonaparte, Napoleon, crosses Russian frontier, vi, 122
founded, vi, 217 Chato war with Paraguay, ix, 307	leaves Moseow, vi, 132
Rologna, iv, 7, 76; x, 339	campaigns of, vi, 71, 165
Bolo Pasha, executed, ix, 92, 93	abdication of, vi, 171, 174
Eolo Pasha, Caccata, 1112	sent to St. Helena, vi, 174
gain control in Russia, ix, 21	buried at the Invalides, vi, 247
sign Brest-Litovsk Armistice and Treaty, ix,	Bonapartists, massacre of the, vi, 182
	Boniface, Marquis of Montserrat, iii, 13
22, 92	Bonnivet, the Admiral, iv, 61
influence of, ix, 340 Bolshevism, Nazi propaganda about, x, 346,	BONSAL, STEPHEN
	The Panama Canal, viii, 323
347 Bombings, in World War II	Borah, William E., ix, 270, 272
Bombings, in World Wal 12	Bordeaux, flight to, x, 67, 72-74
in Africa, x, 145	Borneo, x, 259
of Berlin, x, 214	oil fields of, captured, x, 386, 401
at Dunkirk, x, 61, 62, 63	Borodino, battle of, vi, 128
of France, x, 72 of Japan, x, 110, 249, 356, 386, 401, 402	Borr, i, 18
	Boscawen, Admiral, v, 175, 206
of London, x, 75	Bosnia, vii, 130, 142; ix, 72
of Norway, x, 38, 50, 52, 53, 54	taken by Matthias, iii, 255
of Pearl Harbor, x, 93, 94	annexed to Austria-Hungary, viii, 241; ix, 68
of Russia, x, 78	69, 71
of ships, x, 122, 312	Bosquet, General, vi, 334, 351
Bonaparte, Joseph, vi, 141-152	Boston (Mass.), founded, iv, 292
Bonaparte, Lucien, vi, 83	
Eonaparte, Napoleon, vi, 39	Port Bill, v, 252, 259
on Charles XII, v, 97	public meeting in, v, 247, 249
invades Italy, vi, 43	Bosworth, battle of, iii, 272, 273
declares war against Venice, vi, 54	Botha, General, viii, 263
goes to Egypt, vi, 55	Bo Tree, the Sacred, i, 104
overthrows the Directoire, vi, 69, 83	Bougainville Island, invaded, x, 182
becomes First Consul, vi, 69, 84	Boulogne, x, 60, 62
in Egypt, vi, 71	Boundaries, Canada-Newfoundland, ix, 256
at Acre, vi, 79, 80	Bourbaki, General, vii, 126
returns to France, vi, 80	Bourbon, Anne de, iv, 307
passage of the Alps, vi, 85	Bourbon, Cardinal of, iv, 199
league against England, vi, 86	Bourbon, Constable of, iv, 61, 67
code of, vi, 87	Bourbon, François de, iv, 73
hostility to England, vi, 88	Bourbons, the, vi, 171
crowned Emperor, vi, 89	league against the, v, 73
becomes King of Italy, vi, 89	Bourchier, Sir Thomas, iii, 271
marches on Austria, vi, 107	Bourmont, General, vi, 221
gives away kingdoms, vi, 114	Bouvines, battle of, iii, 46
captures Vienna, vi, 117	Bowariyeh Mound, the, i, 26
marries Maria Louisa, vi, 118	Bowring, Sir John, vi, 244
empire of, vi, 119	Boxer Movement, The, vii, 267
captures the Pope, vi, 119	Boxers, the, vii, 267-278
re-establishes Poland, vi, 120	Boyne, battle of the, v, 29-41
army of, in 1812, vi, 122	Braavalla, battle of, ii, 262

British Eighth Army, x, 136, 142, 143 Brabo, Gonzales, vii, 95, 98, 103, 105 Montgomery field commander of, x, 144 Braddock, General, character of, v, 178 North African offensive of, x, 133, 144-145 sent to Fort Duquesne, v, 175 British Labor Party, heads government, ix, 224. march and defeat of, v, 179, 182 Braddock's Defeat, v, 177 257; X, 401 loses control, ix, 225, 258 BRADFORD, WILLIAM British Museum, i, 73; v, 175 The Voyage of the Mayflower, iv, 283 British Pacific Fleet, x, 401 Bragadino, cruel treatment of, iv, 148 Britons, Massacre of the, ii, 186 Brandenburg, House of, iv, 271; v, 67, 194 disappearance of, ii, 187, 188 Brauer, Dr., German Minister to Norway, x, 32 Brockman, Lieut. Com. William H., submanne Braybrook, Lieut. William, x, 246 of, sinks Jap ship, x, 126 Brazil, discovered, iii, 349 Brotherhood of the Cross, iii, 148, 149 settled by Portuguese, iv, 109 Brown, Lieut. Col. James Barrett, plastic str. separates from Portugal, vi, 189 geon, x, 301, 302, 303, 305-307 declares independence, vi, 217 Brown, John, execution of, vii, 7 becomes a Republic, vii, 159 BROWNING, OSCAR new constitution of, ix, 344 Execution of Marino Faliero, iii, 155 Bremen, iii, 121 Bruce, Edward, iii, 103, 107, 109 Bremen, airplane, in transatlantic flight, ix, Bruce, Robert, iii, 99-111 256-257 Brennabourg, besieged, ii, 282 Brueys, Admiral, vi, 60, 66 Brenner Pass, ix, 299; x, 351 Bruges, iii, 115, 117 Brunswick, Duke of, v, 320; vi, 11, 14, Brennus, i, 287 Brescia, sack of, iv, 8 Brest-Litovsk, parleys, ix, 39, 41 Brussels, x, 254 Treaty of, ix, 22, 56, 64, 92 Brutus, Marcus Junius, death of, ii, 51 Bretigny, peace of, iii, 170 BRYCE, JAMES The Coronation of Charlemagne, 11, 247 Bretton Woods Conference, x, 249 Bubonic plague, viii, 243 Briand, Aristide, viii, 133 Bucharest, Treaty of, ix, 93 death of, ix, 259 Briand-Kellogg Treaty (See Kellogg-Briand Anti-War Treaty) Budapest, ix, 71, 82 1848 march on, ix, 83 siege of, in World War II, x, 313 Brienne, Archbishop, v, 314 BRIGHT, J. F. Buddha, Gautama, 1, 99 BUELL, RAYMOND LESLIE The Magna Charta, iii, 41 Bright, John, vi, 235 Revolt in Spain, ix, 311 Britain, conquered by Caesar, ii, 51 Bugeaud, General, vi, 227 conquest of, ii, 108 Bukovina, acquired by Austria, v, 269 overrun by Picts and Scots, ii, 180 Bulgaria, vii, 141; ix, 347 calls upon Jutes, ii, 180 Ferdinand becomes the Czar, viii, 241, and the English, ii, 181 antiquity of, ii, 182 declares war on Serbia, ix, 9 conquest of Southern, ii, 188, 190 surrenders, ix, 94 (Sce also England, Great Britain) signs peace treaties, ix, 182, 215 conditions in, ix, 208-209, 226 Britain Must Go to War, x, 1 sympathetic toward the Axis, x, 25 Brithnorth, ii, 292 British Broadcasting Corporation, x, 8 signs armistice, x, 312 British debt to the U.S., commission on, ix, 200 Bulgarians, ii, 269, 201; v, 306 Slavonic origin of, ix, 60 British East African Company, vii, 158

Buller, General, vi, 348; vii, 245 EULWER-LYTTON, SIR EDWARD The Battle of Marathon, i, 211 Bure, i, 18 Burgoyne, General, v, 279 retreat of, v, 288 surrender of, v, 291 Eurgundians, conquered by Clovis, ii, 195 army of, iii, 262 Eurgundy, Duke of, assassinated, iii, 200 refuses taxation, iii, 258 Switzerland and, iii, 91 Burial customs, violation of, i, 250 Burials, Lycurgus's regulations, 1, 69 Burke, Edmund, speech on American colonies, v, 254, 261, 262 Earke, "Thirty-one Knot," x, 285, 286 BURKE, U. R. The Moriscos, iii, 339 Burma, vii, 158 in World War II, x, 110, 313, 330 Burns, J. F., Aviation Radioman, x, 279 Burr, Aaron, vi, 120 Busch, Field Marshal Ernst, x, 349 Byblos, i, 123 Byrd, Richard Evelyn, North Pole expedition of, ix, 227-242, 253 transatlantic flight of, ix, 247-248 South Pole expedition of, ix, 293-294 Byrnes, James F., Secretary of State, x, 408, 410 Byzantium, Philip fails at, i, 300 government removed to, ii, 152

C

Cable, Atlantic, the, vii, 85-92
Canadian-Australian, vii, 280
New York to Havana, viii, 230
Shetland Islands-Iceland, viii, 216
United States to Japan, viii, 215
Cabral, Alvarez de, discovers Brazil, iii, 349
Cadesia, battle of, ii, 219
Czsar, Julius, ii, 51
conquers Gaul and Southern Britain, ii, 51
defeats Pharnaces, ii, 51
assassinated, ii, 51
Czsar, Octavius, accuses Antony, ii, 56
dominions of, ii, 59
fleet of, ii, 59, 61

Cæsar, Sext. Julius, ii, 40 Caillaux, Mme., trial of, ix, 5 Premier, arrest ordered, ix, 92 Cairo, Allied conference at, x, 213 Caius Claudius Nero, ii, 8 Cajetan, 1v, 30 Calabria, seizure of, ii, 266 Calais, iv, 203; x, 62 English lose, iv, 119-122 Calcutta, taken by Surajah Dowlah, v, 199 Black Hole of, v, 199, 202 Caled, conquests of, ii, 218 Calendar, the, i, 120 California, admitted to United States, vi, 259 California, U. S. battleship, at Pearl Harbor, x, 102, 103 in battle for Leyte Gulf, x, 274 Caligula, son of Germanicus, ii, 89 Caliph's empire, extent of the, ii, 239 Calixtines, the, iii, 197 Callet, Guillaume, King of the Jacques, iii, 168 Callicrates, ii, 37 Calligraphy, iii, 249, 250 Callimachus, i, 214 Calneb, i, 23, 27, 29 Calonge, General, vii, 99 Calonne, v. 314 Calvin, John, iv, 27, 36, 38 Calvinists, iii, 199; iv, 156 suppression of, iv, 331-337 Cambacères, vi, 84 Cambrai, ix, 94 in World War II, x, 60 Cambray, treaty of, iv, 75 League of, iv, 1-12; vi, 45 Cambyses, in war against Egypt, i, 173 puts Psammetichus to death, i, 177 policy of, i, 177, 178 invades Napata, i, 179 kills Apis, i, 180 violates tombs, i, 180 death of, i, 181 Camillus, defeats the Gauls, i, 296 Camouflage, ix, 18 Campanile at Venice first stone laid of new, viii, 30 Campbell, Colin, vii, 3 Camperdown, battle of, vi, 43 Campobasso, iii, 262, 265

Campo Formio, Treaty of, vi, 54	Caricatures, v, 142
Canaan, i, 25	of America, v, 264
Canada, vi, 163; ix, 325, 345	Carlists, revolt of, vii, 129
Cape Breton, Isle of, captured by British, v,	Carlist War, end of the, vii, 130
171-174	Carlos, Don, vi, 231; vii, 101
French lose, to the English, v, 206-209	Carlowitz, Treaty of, v, 66; vi, 49
Dominion of, established, vii, 92	CARLYLE, THOMAS
Irish Free State patterned after, ix, 185, 186,	The Austro-Russian Attack on Turkey, v,
198	147
settles boundary dispute, ix, 256	The Taking of the Bastille, v, 323
British King and Queen visit, ix, 392	Carmagnoles, the, vi, 3
troops of, in World War II, x, 133, 171, 172	Carmelities, founded, ii, 350
at San Francisco Conference, x, 394	Carnegie, Andrew, viii, 278
represented at Japanese surrender, x, 415	Carney, Rear Admiral "Mick", x, 258
Canadian Pacific Railway, vii, 158	Carnot, President, murdered, vii, 168
Candahar, march to, vii, 144	Carol, of Rumania, renounces throne, ix, 256
Candles vi and	recalled as King, ix, 258
Candles, vi, 214	abdicates, x, 75
Canidius, ii, 56, 62, 66	Carolina, Colony of, founded, iv, 316
Cannæ, battle of, i, 332	divided, v, 144
Canning, vi, 196, 198, 205 Cannon, Captain Bradford, plastic surgeon, x,	Carpathia, rescues Titanie survivors, viii, 311
304	Carpet, the wonderful Persian, ii, 223
Canossa, ii, 325	Carpini, Friar, iii, 84
Henry IV. (Germany) at, ii, 325	Carthage, i, 53-56
Canovas del Castillo, vii, 94, 96, 100	importance of, il, 1, 2
Canrobert, General, vi, 340, 355	colonies of, ii, 2-3
CANT, GILBERT	trade of, ii, 2, 23
Pearl Harbor, x, 87	employs mercenaries, ii, 5
Canterbury, burned by Danes, ii, 298	submission of, ii, 25-26 disarms, ii, 27
Cantigny, taken by 1st Division, U. S. A., ix, 23	prepares for resistance, ii, 28
Canton, bombarded by English, vi, 356	attacks on, ii, 33, 34-35
in Civil war, ix, 199, 327	sack of, ii, 35
Canute, King of England, ii, 300, 303	Carthaginians unwarlike, ii, 4
makes a pilgrimage to Rome, ii, 303	Casa-Bianca, vi, 67
dcath of, ii, 304	Casablanca, U. S. troops land at, x, 147
Cape Breton, v, 206	French naval action at, x, 148
Isle of, surrenders to England, v, 173	surrender of, x, 149
Cape of Good Hope, iii, 317, 320, 325; vi, 241;	Roosevelt and Churchill confer at, x,
vii, 114	149
captured by the British, vi, 28	Casalecchio, battle of, iv, 7
Capodistrias, Count, vi, 211	Casas, Bartolomé de las, iv, 14
Cappadocia, massacres in, ii, 115	Casement, Sir Roger, captured, ix, 10
Caprera, Garibaldi retires to, vii, 21	Cashmere conquered by Akbar, iv, 187
Captives, employment of, i, 27	Cassel, Sir Ernest, vii, 330
Capture of Cape Breton, The, v, 171	Cassin, U. S. destroyer, wrecked at Pearl Har-
Carassa, Cardinal, iv, 104	bor, x, 106
Carbonari, vi, 68	Cassino, x, 303; captured, x, 214
Carcassonne besieged, iii, 36	Cassiodorus, ii, 197
-	

Cassius, ii, 51	Cerdic, ii, 190
Dion, quotation from, ii, 87-88	Cervera, Admiral, vii, 207, 210, 215
oursign vii. 95, 100, 129	Cesario, son of Cleopatra and Julius Cæsar, ii,
Castelletto, taken by Doria, iv, 74	55
a and Polliix, 1, 207	Cespedes, Carlos Manuel de, Cuba's provisional
Major General Childen B., commander	President, ix, 293
of the Fourth Marines on Iwo, x, 326-327	Ceuta, fortress of, ii, 227
amby Robert, iv. 234	Ceylon, discovered, iii, 350
Catherine II. (Russia), v, 211, 340; vii, 26	captured by the English, vi, 43
magnificence of, v, 238	Chaco War, The, ix, 307
trip to Turkey, v, 303	Chagres River, in construction of Panama
Lieite Crimea, V. 302	Canal, viii, 323
Catholic League (Holy League), iv, 189-203,	Chairôneia, battle of, ii, 50. (See Cheronea)
270	Chaldea, importance of, i, 28
Catholics, iv, 189, 331	temples and cities of, i, 26, 30
escape of, in Spain, ii, 233	empire, expansion of, i, 31
fanaticism of, iv, 167	Chaldean history, beginning of, i, 22
persecution of, in England, iv, 173	Chaideans, the, i, 13, 28
Holy League of, iv, 189	Châlons, battle of, ii, 169
in "gunpowder plot," iv, 233	CHAMBERLAIN, NEVILLE
new order for, in France, vii, 361-362; viii,	Britain Must Go to War, x, 1
129-133	Chamberlain, Neville, ix, 392; x, 26
Catiline, conspiracy of, ii, 51	becomes Prime Minister, ix, 344
Cato, demands destruction of Carthage, ii, 24	at Berchtesgaden and Godesberg, ix, 345, 356
death of, ii, 30	confers with Hitler at Munich, ix, 355, 358,
praises Scipio, ii, 31	359; x, 17-18
and Achean captives, ii, 37	War Message of, x, 1-10
Caucasus, German drive toward, x, 140, 141	pledges assistance to Poland, x, 17
Cava, the story of, ii, 228	pledges cooperation with France, x, 19
Cavaignac, vi, 274, 311, 315	Russia distrustful of, x, 21-23
Cavaliers, iv, 295-297, 299	Churchill succeeds, as Prime Minister, x, 64
Cavalry, combat of, at Arbela, i, 325	Chamberlin, Clarence D., makes endurance
Cavell, Edith, shot, ix, 9	record, ix, 256
Cavour, Count, vi, 338, 340, 345; vii, 9, 11, 12,	transatlantic flight of, ix, 246, 253
19, 20	CHAMBERLIN, WILLIAM HENRY
Ceawlin, ii, 192	Japan Goes Fishing, ix, 363
Cecil, Robert, (See Salisbury, Earl of)	Chambord, Comte de, vii, 129
Cedicius, i, 294	Champagne, Count of, iii, 12
Celebes, x, 259	Changarnier, General, vi, 314
Celesyria, ii, 51	Changchun-Kanei railroad, ix, 265
Celius, ii, 62	Chang Tso-lin, ix, 263
Censorinus, ii, 26	Channel Islands, x, 75, 352
Central American Peace Treaty, viii, 207	Chantier, Byrd sails on the, ix, 231
Peace Conference, viii, 230	Chanzy, General, vii, 125
Central Powers, ix, 39, 40, 42, 63	Chapultepec pact, x, 394
make peace with Russia, ix, 22, 92, 93	Chares, i, 300
Centrists, in Germany, ix, 281, 289	Charge of the Light Brigade, vi, 333
Cerda, Chevalier de la, iv, 143	Chariot races, ii, 108
death of iv. 144	Chariots, scythe-armed, i, 320, 323, 326

6.11 - 40	Charles XII., besieges Pultowa, v, 99
Charlemagne, ambitions of, ii, 252	death of, v, 131
crowned Emperor of Rome and of the West,	Charles the Bold. (See Charles, Duke of
ii, 246	Burgundy)
conquers Lombardy, ii, 246, 251	Charles, Duke of Burgundy, at Salins, m, 257
enters Rome, ii, 251	at Joux, iii, 259
and Pope Hadrian, ii, 252	cruelty of, iii, 262
and Leo III., ii, 254	repulse of, iii, 263
reasons for making Emperor, ii, 257	defeated by the Swiss, iii, 264
in Rome, ii, 258	killed, iii, 265
coronation of, ii, 259	interment of, iii, 266
forebodings of, ii, 261	unbelief in his death, iii, 267
Charles V. Conquers Italy, iv, 57	Charles Albert, vi, 282
Charles V., becomes Roman Emperor, iv, 57	of Carignano, vi, 195
meeting with Henry VIII., iv, 51, 54	Elector of Bavaria, v, 166
takes Milan, iv, 76	Emperor of Germany, v, 168
crowned by the Pope, iv, 77	Charles Edward Stuart, Young Pretender, v.
grants peace to the Venetians, iv, 76	169
takes Tunis, iv, 87	Charles Francis Joseph, Archduke, succeeds to
and Council of Trent, iv, 104	throne, ix, 12
the Netherlands under, iv, 151	Charles Martel, ii, 240, 249
Charles I. (England), execution of, iv, 316	Charles of Denmark, viii, 98, 203
Charles II. (England), death of, 17, 329	Charmion, ii, 58
Charles III., the Simple, ii, 264	Charter, the Great, ii, 300; iii, 41. (See also
Charles VII., of France, and Joan of Arc, iii,	Magna Charta)
217-218	Charter of Frederick II., iii, 57
erowned at Rheims, iii, 225	CHASE, I.
Charles VIII. Invades Italy, iii, 305	The Great Earthquake at Lisbon, v, 185
Charles VIII., King of France, iii, 306	Château-Thierry, American troops defeat Ger-
enters Italy, iii, 310	mans, ix, 23, 24
enters Florence, iii, 312	Chatham, Earl of, on the First American Con
enters Rome, iii, 313	gress, v, 257
capitulates, iii, 316	opposition to Boston Port Bill, v, 252
favors Earl of Richmond, iii, 269	Chautemps, Camille, French Premier, ix,
Charles IX., of France, iv, 184	344
death of, iv, 187	Chedorlaomer, i, 29
Charles X., vi, 204 Charles I., of Anjou, becomes Senator of Rome,	Chelsea conflagration, viii, 230
Charles I., of Anjou, becomes bermies	Chen Chiung Ming, General, ix, 199
iii, 75-76	Cherbourg, x, 227, 228
power of, iii, 75 prepares to attack the Greeks, iii, 78	captured, x, 249
prepares to attack the Greats, and	Cheronea, battle of, i, 297, 299-310
selects a Pope, iii, 79 Charles II., of Navarre, and the Jacques, iii,	Chester, ii, 192
168-169	kidnapped, ix, 331, 332
Charles II. (Spain), will of, v, 72	aided by Russia, x, 24
Charles XI. (Sweden), iv, 320; v, 66 Charles XII. (Sweden), becomes King, v, 66	at Cairo Conference, x, 213
Charles All. (Sweden), occount and a	Chiang Kai-shek, Madame, x, 213
invades Poland, v, 67	Chichester, Sir Arthur, iv, 210
invades Russia, v. 89	Chighitta, Heroes of, iii, 185
character of, v, 95	

Children, disposition of, i, 65 training of Spartan, i, 66 Chile, vii, 80 and Peru, arbitrate, ix, 198, 199 China, ix, 8, 95, 184; x, 80, 356, 386, 410, 414 invaded by Zingis Khan, iii, 26-27 first revealed by Marco Polo, iii, 80 plague in, iii, 140 opened to European trade, vi, 241; vii, 7 first war with Great Britain, vi, 243 opium war of, with Britain and France, vi 244-247 treatics of, with other nations, vi, 245, 246 interests of, aided by Suez Canal, vii, 114 feet of, defeated by Japanese, vii, 169-179 Boxer Rebellion in, vii, 267-274 rise of national sentiment in, vii, 275-279 Empress Dowager of, vii, 267; viii, 242 first senate opened, viii, 263 Imperial Parliament summoned, viii, 278 revolution in, viii, 291, 293 Dr. Sun Yat Sen leads revolt, viii, 294-295 Conditions prior to revolt, viii, 296-310 and Treaty of Peace (1919), ix, 113, 131-132, 153 civil war in, ix, 198, 199, 225, 327 Japan invades Manchurian province of, ix, Japan's policy toward, ix, 262-266 League of Nations report on, ix, 267-270 relations of, with foreign powers, ix, 271-275 resistance methods of, ix, 276-277 resumes relations with Persia, ix, 294 war with Japan starts, ix, 363 affected by European conditions, ix, 365, 366; x, 24 Japanese intentions in, ix, 368-372 defenses of, against Japan, ix, 372-379 declares war on Germany, Italy, Japan, x, 110 Lido-Burma Road to, is opened, x, 313 one of United Nations, x, 388 30-year Treaty of, with Russia, x, 408 formal Japanese surrender to, x, 415 China Clipper, first Pacific flight of, ix, 307 Chinchow, Manchuria, attacked, ix, 259, 263 Chinese, engineers, iii, 29 Revolution of 1911, viii, 293-310 Chios, massacre of, vi, 203 Choiseul, v, 237

Chomasbêlus, i, 21 Chosroes, murder of, ii, 204 conquests of, ii, 204 Chreocopiæ, the, i, 113 Christ, birth of Jesus, ii, 67, 75 crucifixion of, ii, 89, 101 sufferings of, ii, 104 last words of, ii, 107 Christendom, safety of, ii, 245 Christian II. (Denmark), iv, 87 Christian IV. (Denmark), Tilly defeats, iv., 272 Christian IX. (Denmark), death of, visi, 154 Christian chivalry, iii, 277 Christian Church at Smyrna, ii, 113 Christian kings of Spain, unite, iii, o · Christianity, birth of Latin, ii, 164 Christians, eleven persecutions, ii, 109 first persecution of the, ii, 100 second persecution of the, ii, 110 third persecution of the, ii, 111 fourth persecution of the, ii, 112 fifth persecution of the, ii, 113 sixth persecution of the, ii, 114 seventh persecution of the, ü, 114 eighth persecution of the, ü, 115 ninth persecution of the, ii, 116 tenth persecution of the, ii, 116 eleventh persecution of the, ü, 117 forty years of peace, ii, 117 persecuted, ii, 109-113 permitted to worship, ii, 118 join Arabs, ii, 230 attacked by Mamelukes, iii, 74 the New, iii, 285 Christian Science founded, vii, 130 Church and State, ii, 256-257 separation of, viii, 129 causes of separation, viii, 130 Napoleon's attitude on, viii, 131 Churches, profanation of, ii, 238 CHURCHILL, WINSTON The Invasion of Russia, x, 77 Churchill, Winston, ix, 190; x, 21, 392 becomes Prime Minister, x, 64 broadcast of, on invasion of Russia, x, 77-85 and Roosevelt, conclude Atlantic Charter, x, 85 confers with Roosevelt in Washington, x,

137, 138-139

Churchill, Winston, visits Stalin in Moscow, x, 141 visits Egypt and Eighth Army, x, 142, 144 report of, on U. S. arms shipments, x, 143 confers with Roosevelt at Casablanca, x, 149	Clement II., Pope, ii, 313 Clement IV., Pope, ii, 75, 85 Clement V., Pope, abolishes the Knights Templars, iii, 98 Clement VI. celebrates jubilee, iii, 146
meets Roosevelt at Quebec to plan invasion,	Clement VII. becomes Pope, iv, 60
x, 172, 215	Clement, James, assassinates Henry III., iv, 135
at Cairo and Teheran Conferences, x, 213	Cleomenes, 1, 191
and French invasion, x, 219-220	Cleopatra, Antony and, ii, 52, 54, 56, 57, 60, 64,
announces German surrender, x, 342	65, 67
at Potsdam Conference, x, 401	Cæsar and, ii, 55, 57
resigns as Prime Minister, x, 402	children of, ii, 55
Cimbri, the, ii, 44, 48	flight of, ii, 64
Cimon, i, 232	death of, ii, 67
Cincinnatus, i, 236	Clergy, rage of the English against the, ii, 185
Cinematograph, in Antarctic exploration, viii,	Clermont, Council of, ii, 335, 339
316	Clinchant, General, vii, 126
Cinq-Mars, execution of, iv, 293	Clinton, Sir Henry, v, 285
Circumnavigation of the globe, first, iv, 47	Clive, v, 220, 337; ix, 297
Circus, factions of the, ii, 195	captures Arcot, v, 175
Blue and Green factions of, ii, 203	captures Trichinopoly, v, 175
Cirencester, ii, 191	conquers Bengal, v, 201
Cirrha, i, 43	Cloelia swims the Tiber, i, 204
Cisalpine Gaul, i, 332	Close-Up at Stalingrad, A, x, 151
Citadel at Rome, attacked, i, 293	Clothing, first use of, i, 6
geese save the, i, 295	Clovis, conquers the Burgundians, ii, 195
Citadel of Plebeians, i, 237	King of the Franks, ii, 195
City of Flint, x, 41	converted to Christianity, ii, 195
Civil Service Act (United States), vii, 150	conquers the Goths, ii, 195
Civil War, United States, vii, 24, 80	established in Gaul, ii, 195
China, ix, 198, 199, 225, 327	conquers Aquitaine, ii, 195
Spain, ix, 311, 327, 328, 343, 380	becomes a Christian, ii, 198
Clairfayt, vi, g	death of, ii, 198
Clark, Maj. Gen. Mark Wayne, x, 182	Clusium, siege of, i, 285
on pre-invasion mission in Africa, x, 139	Cobden, Richard, vi, 235
Claudel, Henri, ix, 267	Coblenz, Allies take, x, 330
Claudius, ii, 142	Cochin China ceded to France, vii, 30
Claudius, Emperor of Rome, ii, 89	Code of Justinian, ii, 202
poisoned, ii, 108 Claudius Nero, ii, 11	Code Napoléon, the, vi, 87
Clausel, General, vi, 222, 226	Codrington, Admiral, vi, 206 Colenso, vii, 245
Cleander, i, 326	Coli and Nungesser, ix, 245
Clearchus, i, 270	Coligny, Admiral, of France, defends St.
Cleisthenes, i, 191, 209	Quentin, iv, 118
Clemenceau, Georges, becomes premier, ix, 21	COLLIER, WILLIAM FRANCIS
orders arrest of Caillaux, ix, 92	The Age and Laws of Justinian, ii, 197
wounded by anarchists, ix, 111	The Beginning of the French Revolution, s
in New York, ix, 200	313
death of, ix, 257-258	Crusade Against the Albigenses, iii, 33
	_

COLLIER, WILLIAM FRANCIS	Communists, ix, 324
mb First Consul, VI, 03	American, ix, 221
Equating of Constantinopie, 11, 153	Chinese, ix, 369
Creat Triumphs of Napoleon, VI, 113	Russian, fear attack by Japan and Germany,
mi. Crowth of the Papacy, 11, 103	ix, 320
The Normans in France and Italy, ii, 261	Comonfort, General, vii, 48, 49
Persecutions of the Christians, ii, 109	Compiègne Forest, x, 343
The Reformation, iv, 27	armistice of 1940 signed in, x, 64
The Seven Years' War, v, 193	Compromise, the, anti-Inquisition league, iv,
The Thirty Years' War, iv, 269	156
Cologne, early importance of, iii, 115	
Cathedral finished, vii, 144	Concentration camps, Santo Tomas, x, 313 German, x, 358, 366, 367
Cathedral Hillshed, vii, 144	Concha, Manuel, vii, 105
Allies take, x, 313	Concord, skirmish at, v, 265
Colombia, Republic of, founded, vi, 199	Concordst of Presses and the Character of
United States of, vii, 378	Concordat, of France and the Church, viii, 130 Condé, iv, 183
conflict with Peru, ix, 292	Drings de la company
Colonial America, Congress of, v, 219	Prince de, iv, 307, 309, 311, 314
Colonial Tories, v, 256	Princesse de, iv, 311
Cornwallis aids in escape of, iv, 298	Condon, Dr. E. U., atom smasher, x, 407
Colonization of Virginia, The, iv, 213	Confederation of the Rhine, vi, 114, 119
Colonna, Prospero, iv, 59, 61, 66	Conference, Peace (1919), ix, 95
Colorado, battleship, absent from Pearl Harbor,	Naval Armament, ix, 184
x, 88, 105	Disarmament, ix, 259
Colosseum, the, ii, 130	Reparations, ix, 260
Columbus, Christopher, ships of, iii, 293	Inter-American, ix, 331
companions of, iii, 294	Palestine, ix, 380
embarks, üi, 295	Conferences in World War II, Atlantic Charter,
diary of, iii, 295	x, 85
beholds the New World, iii, 298, 301	Bretton Woods, x, 249
returns to Spain, iii, 303	Cairo, x, 213
received by Ferdinand and Isabella, iii, 303	Casablanca, x, 149
Columbus, New Mexico, attacked by Mexican	Dumbarton Oaks, x, 254
brigands, ix, 10	Moscow, x, 182
Columbus of the Air, ix, 243	Potsdam, x, 401, 402
Comitium, i, 97	Quebec, x, 172
Commandos, raid Dieppe, x, 133	San Francisco, x, 386
pave way for Normandy landing, x, 231	Teheran, x, 213
invade Walcheren Island, x, 312	Washington, x, 137, 138-139
Commercial aviation, development of, ix, 251	Yalta, x, 313
Communism, vi, 278	Confucianism, prevailing doctrine in China,
Lenin a god to, ix, 219	viii, 299-300
versus Fascism and Naziism, ix, 283, 311,	Confucius, i, 141
312, 313, 317, 320; x, 24	Confucius, education of, i, 143
Axis pact against, ix, 349, 350, 364, 366	marriage of, i, 143
worst features of, like Naziism, x, 80	begins to teach, i, 143
Communist Third International (Comintern),	disciples of, i, 144
ix, 273, 350	wanderings of, i, 145
propaganda of, resented in Poland, x, 14	death of, i, 146
dissolved, x, T7T	tomb of, i, 147

Confueius, descendants of, i, 148 teachings of, i, 149	Constantine, becomes Emperor of the West, 11,
Golden Rule of, i, 149	becomes master of the Day on
	becomes master of the Roman Empire, u, 157
philosophy of, i, 150	tavors Omistianny, 11, 157
Congo, Upper, discovered, vii, 129	selects new capital, ii, 158
Congo Free State, vii, 144	policy of, ii, 159
Congo Independent State, viii, 216	death of, îi, 160
Congress Declares a State of War With	Constantine, King of Greece, viii, 380; ix, 23,
Japan, x, 109	199
Congress, of Aix-la-Chapelle, vi, 183	policy of, ix, 209
of Berlin, v ii, 131, 140	Constantine Paleologus, bravery of, iii, 228, 240
of Mantua, iv, 10	death of, iii, 245
of Paris, vi, 343	Constantinople, founding of, ii, 159
of Vienna, the, vi, 172	besieged by the Arabs, ii, 238
the Colonial (America), v, 219	besieged by the Varangians, ii, 274
Congress of Berlin, The, vii, 131	splendors of, ii, 341
Connally, James, executed, ix, 10	Greeks and Latins in, iii, 16
Conqueror, character of the Oriental, i, 31	gained by Venetians, iii, 17-18
	pillaged by Consenders, 111, 17-18
Conquest of Algeria, The, vi, 219	pillaged by Crusaders, iii, 20
Conquest of Egypt by Cambyses, i, 173	capture of, iii, 20
Conquest of Granada, The, iii, 275	Latin Empire of, iii, 20
Conquest of Ireland and Colonization of	regained by Paleologus, iii, 60
Ulster, The, iv, 205	defences of (1453), iii, 227
Conquest of Lydia, The, i, 153	siege of (1453), iii, 229
Conquest of Mysore, The, v, 335	Mustafa retires to, iv, 145, 148
Conquest of Persia, The, ii, 217	under Turkish Nationalists, ix, 200
Conquest of the Air, The, viii, 355	Greeks at, ix, 211
Conquest of the Northwest Passage, The,	Constantius Chlorus, ii, 153
viii, 49	Convoys, x, 135, 142, 143
Conquests of Bengal and Canada, The, v,	Cook, Dr. Frederick A., claims discovery of
201	North Pole, viii, 253
Conquests of Mexico and Peru, iv, 13	Cook, Captain James, v, 210, 221, 269
Conquests of Zingis Khan, iii, 23	first voyage to Australia, v, 222
Consolidation of Germany by Henry I., ii,	discovers New Caledonia, v, 245
	Cook's Australian Discoveries, v, 221
279	
Conspiracy, against Peisistratæ, i, 187	Coolidge, Calvin, ix, 183, 224
of Catiline, ii, 51	President of the U.S., ix, 216, 225
in Italy, iii, 76	death of, ix, 291
of Tiepolo, iii, 90	Coomassie, eapture of, vii, 129
of Marino Faliero, iii, 156, 158	COOPER, JAMES FENIMORE
of the Pazzi, iii, 268	The Battle of Lake Erie, vi, 155
of the Gunpowder Plot, iv, 232	Copenhagen, taken by Christian III., iv, 88
against Venetian Republic, vi, 47	Nelson at, vi, 86
Constance, Council of, iii, 173, 193	Copernieus, at University of Craeow, ix, 52
elose of the Council of, iii, 198-199	Coral Sea, Battle of, x, 111
Constantine, birth of, ii, 153	Corculum, ii, 24
the first Christian Emperor, ii, 152	Cordova, fall of, ii, 233
proclaimed Emperor, ii, 154	Cordova, Gonsalvo de, iii, 340, 345, 349
vision of, ii, 155	Corea, vii, 168, 179
11010th 02, 11, 12,	

Cerfu, Declaration of, ix, 73, 75	Cracow, annexed to Austria, vi, 258
i harded by Italians, ix, 210	university founded, ix, 52
Counth, prepares for defence, ii, 41	CRANE, FERGUS
sack of, ii, 36, 42-43	The Pan-American Congress, viii, 200
Corn Law, vi, 237	Crapser, Lieut. Stuart, Helldiver pilot, x, 279
Cornwallis, Lord, v, 294	Crassus, ii, 51
surrender of, v, 295	CRAWFORD, ROBERT
· Marche War. V. 335	The Automobile, vii, 301
Amongtion of Altonso Alli., The, vii, 307	CREASY, E. S.
congriga of Charlemagne, Inc. 11, 247	The Battle of Arbela, i, 313
Coronation of King Edward VII., The, vii,	The Battle of Blenheim, v, 69
313	The Battle of Pultowa, v, 91
Corregidor, x, 411, 415	The Battle of the Metaurus, ii, 1
yields to Japanese, x, 110	The Battle of Tours, ii, 239
recaptured, x, 313	The Battle of Valmy, vi, 1
Corsica, i, 332; v, 220	Joan of Arc at Orleans, iii, 211
Sold to France, v, 237	Siege of Syracuse, i, 253
Corstiaensen, Hendrick, iv, 248, 250	Surrender of Burgoyne at Saratoga, v, 279
roctés, Fernando, iv. 14-15	Victory of Arminius, ii, 79
Cortes, the Spanish Parliament, vi, 186; vii, 93;	Crécy, Battle of, iii, 123-130
ix, 259	Crete, subdued by the Arabs, ii, 259
Cosgrave, William T., ix, 199	captured by Turks, iv, 316
Cosgrove, Lieut. Robert, x, 265	revolt in, vii, 84
Cosmo de Medici, iii, 171	united to Greece, viii, 242, 381
Consek, H.M.S., in Altmark incident, x, 30	won by Germans, x, 76
Costa Rica, vi, 217	Crevant, taken by Bedford, iii, 209
Cotton, Egyptian, vii, 329	CRICHTON, KYLE
COUBERTIN, PIERRE DE	Military Surgery, x, 301
Why I Revived the Olympic Games, viii, 187	Crimea, the, taken by Venetians, iii, 255
Council of Basle, iii, 197	Russian conquest of, v, 303-312
Council of Blood, iv, 157	invaded by British and French, vi, 329-330
Council of Clermont, ii; 339	Yalta Conference in, x, 313
Council of Constance and the Hussite War,	Crimean War, The, vi, 329
ili, 19I	Crispi, Francesco, vii, 152
Council of Constance, iii, 173, 193	Crispus, son of Constantine, ii, 157
dose of the, iii, 198-199	Crissa, i, 43
Council of League of Nations, ix, 97, 115	Cristina, Regent of Spain, vi, 231
Council of Pisa, iii, 189; iv, 7	Critolaus, ii, 40
Council of Sardica, ii, 164	Croats, history of the, ix, 68-69
Council of Ten, iii, 90, 157; vi, 48	desire of, for freedom, ix, 73-75
Council of the Indies, iii, 350	union with Serbs and Slovenes, ix, 76-78, 85
Council of Trent, iv, 104, 108	208
Counter-Reformation, The, iv, 99	Crossus, conquests of, i, 153
Counter-Reformation in Italy, iv, 99-109	sends to allies for aid, i, 156
Court of God, iii, 2	on funeral pyre, i, 158
Covenant of The League of Nations, ix, 97	Cromlechs in Britain, ii, 185
Covenant of the League of Nations, Articles of,	Cromwell, Oliver, iv, 300
ix, 97-111	reorganizes the army, iv, 302
Section I. of Peace Treaty, ix, 114	invades Ireland, iv, 316

Cronje, General, surrender of, vii, 265
Crookes, Sir William, viii, 3
Cross, the, ii, 92
inscription on the, ii, 98
Crotona, i, 209
Corner Maior Hanny D. at Tarange v. 182
Crowe, Major Henry P., at Tarawa, x, 187
Crown Point captured, v, 268, 281
Crucifixion, The, ii, 91
Crucifixion, customs regarding, ii, 95, 96
darkness during the, ii, 104
the central point in the world's history, ii, 108
Crusade, First, ii, 335-349
Second, ii, 350
Third, iii, 1-9
Fourth, preached, iii, 11-13
Fifth, begun, iii, 53-60
Sixth, iii, 60
Eighth, in, 74
Crusade Against the Albigenses, iii, 33
Crusaders, first, ii, 336, 339-340
arrive in Constantinople, ii, 340
arrive in Asia, ii, 343
make terms with Alexis, ii, 343
capture Antioch, ii, 344-345
worship Tomb of Christ, ii, 347
take Jerusalem, ii, 347
German, return home, ili, 3
capture Constantinople, iii, 19-20
Crystal Palace, vii, 375
Ctesiphon, sack of, ii, 223
Cuba, colonized by Spain, iv, 13
battle of Santiago at, vii, 205-218
Spaniards evacuate, vii, 204
Constitutional Convention of, vii, 266
first congress meets, vii, 279
U. S. troops evacuate, viii, 16
insurrection in, viii, 216
Gomez elected President of, viii, 242
C. D. Torriente of, heads League Assembly,
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
ix, 216
revolt of Army of, ix, 293
among "Little 45" at San Francisco, x, 395
Culebra Cut, viii, 333-342
Culloden, battle of, v, 169
Cunaxa, battle of, i, 271-272
Curação, Dutch take, iv, 293
Cures, i, 97
Curie, Marie and Pierre, radium discoveries of,
viii, 1, 2, 5; x, 406

Curtis, Charles, ix, 257, 278 Curtiss, Glenn, viii, 370, 373; ix, 248, 249 Curules, conduct of the, i, 291 Cushite Kingdom, i. 21 Cuthwulf, march of, ii, 191 Cuzco, iv, 17 Cyclotron, atom smasher, x, 407 Cynegirus, i, 218 Cynocephalæ, ii, 22 Cynric, conquest of, ii, 191 Cyprian, execution of, ii, 116 Cyprus, earthquake in, iii, 141 won by the Turks, iv, 147-150 acquired by Great Britain, vii, 130 Cyrus, at Median Court, i, 133 rebellion of, i, 134 King of Media and Persia, i, 139 marches against Cræsus, i, 153 plans to turn the Euphrates, i, 164 Cyrus, the Younger, i, 269-272 decides to seize throne, i, 260 death of, i, 272 Cyrus Founds Persia, i, 133 Czechoslovakia (Czecho-Slovakia), ix, 113, 32. land and people of, ix, 73, 80, 90, 347 conditions under Austrian rule, vi, 280, II. 80-83, 87, 88 right to autonomy, ix, 72, 84 National Council formed, ix, 85, 89 rise of new state of, ix, 90-91 independence of, recognized, ix, 84, 126 Nazi moves against, ix, 349-354, 357 betrayal of, at Munich, ix, 355-362; x, 18, 19 seized by Germany, ix, 362, 380 relations with Poland, x, 13 claims against, x, 14, 16 Russians battle Nazis in, x, 356 mutual assistance pact with Russia, x, 394 Czecho-Slovak Nation, The, 1x, 70 Czecho-Slovak Revolutionary Committee, ix, 91 Czolgosz, vii, 283

Dachau, Nazi concentration camp, x, 358
Dacia becomes a Roman province, ii, 141
Daguerre, vii, 196
Daguerreotype, vii, 196

pahl, Dr. O., physicist, x, 407 pall Eireann, ix, 185, 199, 259, 292 pakar, x, 147 paladier, Edouard, at Munich, ix, 355, 356, 358, 359, 360; x, 17 receives dictatorial powers, ix, 380-381 pale, Sir Thomas, iv, 225 paleminziens subdued by Henry I., ii, 282 palmatia, ii, 350 palny, Japanese lease of, ix, 8 pamascus occupied by Mamelukes, iii, 74	Datis, i, 211 Daugherty, resignation asked, ix, 224 Daun, Count, v, 194, 196, 204 Dauphin, death of the, vi, 28 Davis, Sir John, iv, 255 DAVIS, RICHARD HARDING The Coronation of Alfonso XIII., vii, 307 DAVIS, WILLIAM STEARNS The Near East after Lausanne, ix, 203 Davison, Ralph, Rear Admiral, x, 264 Davout, vi, 167
Damaskinos, Archbishop, Regent of Greece, x,	Dawes, Charles G., ix, 225 on Reparations Commission, ix, 217
Damiani, opinion of Gregory VII., ii, 318	Dawes Plan, ix, 225, 290
Damietta, iii, 53, 60	"Day of the ass-drivers," iv, 7
Damrémont, General, vi, 227	Death of Socrates, i, 275
Dandolo, Doge of Venice, iii, 13	DEBSKI, ALEXANDER H.
statecraft of, iii, 16	Poland Reborn, ix, 51
Andrea, the Doge, rule of, iii, 155	Debt-funding, British-American, ix, 200
Dane-geld, the, ii, 292, 294	French-American, ix, 242
Danes, the, ii, 283, 287	Debts, discharge of, i, 111
attack England, ii, 259, 292	Decemviri, the, i, 233
in England, position of the, ii, 296	Decemvirs, i, 238
burn Canterbury, ii, 298 Danican, General, vi, 40	Decian Storm, the, ii, 116
Daniel interprets writing on the wall, i, 165-167	Declaration of Confering and slain, ii, 142
Danish Conquest of England, ii, 291	Declaration of Corfu, ix, 73-75
Danish kings, dues exacted by, iii, 117	Declaration of Frankfort, vi, 171 Declaration of Independence, The, v, 271
Dannenberg, General, vi, 348, 353	Declaration of Indulgence, v, 16, 20
Danton, v, 321	Declaration of London, viii, 242
Danzig, ix, 120, 127, 392	Declaration of Rights, v, 27
siege of (1813), viii, 70	Decline and Fall of Venice, The, vi, 45
port of, needed by Poland, ix, 56	Decoutries, vi, 274
made a Free City, ix, 114, 128	Dedeagatch, concession of, to Turkey, ix, 209
Nazi policy toward, ix, 315, 316, 353	Defeat of the Spanish Armada, iv, 167
Russian siege of, x, 313	De Gaulle, Gen. Charles, x, 222
Danubian principalities, vi, 345	Deiri, kingdom of the, ii, 194
Dardanelles, vii, 136, 137; x, 26	Delaney, John F., Yorktown's Engineer Officer,
warships barred from, in peacetime, vi, 344	x, 120, 123
Turkish right to fortify, ix, 327	De Launay, v, 329
Darius, i, 211 army of, at Arbela, i, 316, 317	De Lesseps, Ferdinand, vi, 355; vii, 111, 379
death of, i, 330	Delfts-Haven, Pilgrims embark from, iv, 284
Darlan, Admiral signs armistice in North	Delhi, Tamerlane arrives in, iii, 184 Sultan flees from, iii, 185-186
Africa, x, 136, 148	surrenders to Tamerlane, iii, 186
assassinated, x, 149	pillage of, iii, 186
DARMESTETER, JAMES	massacre of Moguls in, iii, 187
Zoroaster, i, 33	Delphi, temple at, i, 45
Dasturs, the, i, 41	change of divinities at, i, 45

Delphi, wealth of, i, 48
the Bank of Greece in, i, 49
Oracle of, i, 19, 43
Delphic Oracle, The, i, 43
Deluge, The, i, 11
Deluge, the, i, 11
Celtic legends of, i, 17
Chaldean tradition of, i, 12
Chinese tradition of, i, 11
Greek traditions of, i, x7
Lithuanian tradition of, i, x8
Mexican legend of, i, 14-15
the Phrygian tradition of, i, 14
Scandinavian legend of, i, 18
South American tradition of, i, 12
Delyanni assassinated, viii, 105
Demetrius, ii, 39
Demosthenes, i, 263, 297, 302-309
Athens gives golden crown to, i, 306
flight of, i, 309
Denain, battle of, v, rro
Denby, Secretary of the Navy, ix, 224
Denmark, iv, 272; vi, 119; vii, 80; ix, 11; x,
34, 78
Reformation in, iv, 88
long union of, with Norway, viii, 99, 204
deprived of Norwegian crown, viii, 100
Prince of, becomes King of Norway, viii,
203 Christian X. becomes King of, viii, 311
one of Oslo states, x, 25 invaded by Germany, x, 27
Germans surrender in, x, 346, 347
Dentatus, i, 237, 239 Deorham, Saxon victory at, ii, 191
Derby, Earl, institutes Blue Ribbon of the Turf,
•
v, 294 Derby, Lord, vii, 131, 137, 139
De Rivera, Primo, ix, 226
Derkyllidas, i, 273
Derry, colonization of, iv, 212
Dervishes, vii, 145, 204, 221
Descartes, iv, 293
Desiderius, King, seized by Charlemagne, ii, 251
Desmond, Earl of, iv, 208
De Soto, iv, 88
D'ESTERRE-KEELING, ELEONORE
The Peace Conference, vii, 247
Destroying Prince, the, iii, 185
, , , , ,

Destruction of St. Pierre, The, vii, 280 Destruction of Tea in Boston Harbor, v, 24-Detroit, English evacuate, vi, 163 capital of war production, x, 205 Deucalion, i, 17 Deutschland, makes second trip to U. S., II. II De Valera, Eamon, ix, 197 elected President of Executive Council of Irish Free State, ix, 259, 292 Devers, Gen. Jacob L., Germans surrender to x, 351 Dewey, Admiral George, vii, 235 De Witte, viii, 108 De Witts, murder of the, iv, 316 Deza, the Grand Inquisitor, iii, 348 Diadochi, wars of the, i, 331 Dias, Bartolomeu, iii, 317, 319 Diaz, Porfirio, vii, 50, 53; viii, 279 career of, viii, 281-290 Diaz: The Maker of Modern Mexico, v. 28 t Dickinson, Lieut. Clarence E., witnesses Pez-Harbor attack, x, 100 in Battle of Midway, x, 115, 118 Dictum de Kenilworth, iii, 73 Dido, i, 55 Diebitsch, General, vi, 208 Dieppe, commando raid on, x, 133, 218 Diet of Augsburg, iv, 35 Diet of Erfurt, ii, 285 Diet of Hansa, last meeting of, iv, 316 Diet of Poland, v, 242 Diet of Pressburg, vi, 278 Diet of Ratisbon, iv, 100 Diet of Spires, iv, 35 Diet of Worms, iii, 11; iv, 32 Dicus, ii, 38 Digby, Sir Everard, iv, 233, 240 Digest of Justinian, ii, 202 DILLON, E. I. The Portuguese Revolution, viii, 265 Diocletian, division of the Empire under, ii, 151 persecutes Christians, ii, 117 and Maximian, abdication of, ii, 118 Dir, ii, 273 Directoire, The, vi, 29 Directoire, the, vi, 29-43, 69, 83 Dirigibles, in polar exploration, ix, 227-242 Disarmament Conference, World, ix, 259, 278

Discovery and Settlement of Manhattan Island, The, iv, 245 Discovery of America, The, iii, 293 Discovery of Gold in California, The, vi. Discovery of the Northwest Passage, The, Discovery of the X-Rays, vii, 181 . Disraeli, vi, 237; vii, 129 (See Beaconsfield, Lord) Doenitz, Grand Admiral, x, 359 surrenders Nazi Germany, x, 343, 344 broadcast of, to German soldiers, x, 345 efforts of, to split the Allies, x, 346, 347 Dogger Bank and After, The, viii, 41 Dorger Bank disaster, viii, 41-46 Deheny, Edward L., ix, 256 Dollfuss, Dr. Engelbert, assassinated, ix, 294 Dembrowski, Henry, ix, 54 Dominion of Canada, established, vii, 92 Dumitian, Emperor of Rome, ii, 141 persecutes Christians, ii, 110 assassination of, ii, 141 Doolittle, James H., leads raid on Japan, x, 110 fiers executed by Japanese, x, 171 Doomsday Book, ii, 349 Doria, Andrea, iv, 74, 76 address of, iv, 79 honors to, iv, 83 influence of, iv, 86 Dona, Filippino, iv, 72, 74, 81 Donan migrations, i, 56 Dorian confederacy, i, 243 Dormer, Sir Cecil, x, 35, 36, 42, 45 Dost Mohammed, vi, 239 Douai, surrender of, v, III Douglas, the Steward, knighted, iii, 107 Doumer, Paul, President of France, ix, 259-260 Dowlah, Surajah, v, 199, 202 Downfall of Napoleon, The, vi, 165 Downes, destroyer, at Pearl Harbor, x, 106 Draco, laws of, i, 109, 113 Draga, Queen, vii, 349 Dragonade, the, iv, 332 Drainage, improvements in, vi, 308 Drake, Francis, voyage around the world, iv, 170 on Spanish Main, iv, 172 attacks Spain, iv, 176

"Drang nach Osten," ix, 82, 87, 348 Dreadnoughts, viii, 155 Dred Scott decision, vi, 356; vii, 84 Dresden, surrender of, v, 204 battle of, vi, 166 Drevlians murder Igor, ü, 276 Dreyfus, vii, 168, 245; viii, 207 Drusus leads armies to Weser, ii, 67 Dublin, ix, 206, 257 revolt in, ix, 10 "Four Courts" surrender, ix, 199 Duce, Il. (See Mussolini) Ducos, vi, 84 Ducrot, General, vii, 124 Duhoux, General, vi, 40 Duma, viii, 195 Dumbarton Oaks Conference, x, 254 Dumblane, battle of, v, 126 Dumouriez, General, v, 320; vi, 4, 8, 14 DUNCKER, MAX The Olympic Games, i, 77 Dunkirk (Dunkerque), iv, 176; x, 144, 145, 215 German trap at, x, 59 retreat to, of British and French, x, 60-61 rescue ships at, x, 61-62 troops evacuated, 63-64 Duperré, Admiral, vi, 221 Duquesne seizes Fort Duquesne, v, 175 Durazzo, battle of, ii, 267 Dutch Republic, founded, iv, 163 Dwyfan and Dwyfach, i, 18

Ŧ

Earth, bones of the, i, 18
the goddess, i, 44
Earth-inductor compass, used by Lindbergh, ix,
252
Earthquake, ii, 115-116
in Cyprus, iii, 141
at Lisbon, v, 185
in Transcaucasia, vü, 279
at San Francisco, viii, 175-185
in Messina, viii, 242
Eastern Empire, ii, 256
Eastern Europe, Fourth Century, ii, 269
East India Company, iv, 256, 293; vi, 242; vii, 6
rival, founded by German Emperor, v, 144
abolished, vii, 7

EASTLAKE AND YOSHI-AKI The Battle of the Yalu, vii, 169 East Prussia, Russians defeated in, ix, 8 boundaries of, after World War I, ix, 120, 126-128 East River Tunnel, ends joined, viii, 216 Ebbsfleet, ii, 182 Ebert, Friedrich, German president, ix, 96 dies, ix, 225 Echatana, i, 133 Eckener, Hugo, and Graf Zeppelin, ix, 257 Eclipse of sun, i, 73 Ecuador, one of United Nations, x, 395 Eddystone lighthouse built, v, 66 Eden, Anthony, ix, 307; x, 21, 26, 391 discusses Abyssinia question with Mussolini, against appeasement of Germany, ix, 359 at Moscow Conference, x, 182 Ederle, Gertrude, swims Channel, ix, 242 Edessa captured by Turks, ii, 350 Edgar the Atheling, chosen King, ii, 311 Edict of Nantes, iv. 203 revocation of the, iv, 331-337 Edmund Ironside, ii, 300 Edric, ii, 300-301 the traitor, ii, 298 treason of, ii, 301 Edward, the Confessor, ii, 304 Edward I. (England), iii, 64 takes the cross, iii, 73 raises siege of Acre, iii, 74 Edward II. (England), prepares for war with Scotland, iii, 100 flees to Stirling, iii, 110 luxury of, iii, 111 Edward III. (England), claims France, iii, 112 at Crécy, iii, 123 genius of, at Crécy, iii, 124 praises the Black Prince, iii, 128 prudence of, iii, 130 goes to Calais, iii, 130 Edward VII, coronation of, vii, 313 death of, viii, 255 EDWARD VIII Farewell Broadcast, ix, 329 Edward VIII, accession of, ix, 308 renounces throne, ix, 329-331 Egalité, Philip, v, 315

Egbert, King of Wessex, ii, 259 Egmont, Count, iv, 153, 157 and Horn, execution of, iv, 158 Egypt, Empire of, i, 19 natural defences of, i, 174 subjugation of, i, 176 wealth of, ii, 45 becomes a Roman province, ii, 67 conquered by Chosroes, ii, 204 attacked by Arabs, ii, 225 Fatimites in, ii, 346 first entered by Turks, ii, 350 taken by the Mamelukes, iii, 60 English-French battle of the Nile, vi, 57-68 restored to Turkey, vi, 90 becomes possession of Mehemet, vi, 231, 23; building of Suez Canal in, vii, 109-114 defense of, vii, 148, 149, 150 Nile Dam built in, vii, 327-334 British Protectorate over, ix, 133-134, 198 General Stack killed in, ix, 225 endangered in World War II, x, 140, 142 Germans driven from, x, 136, 144-146 supports Australia at San Francisco, x, 395 Egyptian, Anglo-, victories, vii, 148, 204 Eiffel Tower built, vii, 159 Eighteenth Amendment, goes into effect, it, 18. repealed, ix, 292, 294 Eisenhower, Gen. Dwight D, commands African invasion, x, 135 signs armistice with Darlan, x, 148 made head of North African operations, 1 171 announces Italy's surrender, x, 174 commands invasion of France, x, 216, 219 225 D.Days compared by, x, 226 Nazis surrender at headquarters of, x, 342 El Agheila, x, 146 El Alamein, British retreat to, x, 132, 140, 14 British drive from, x, 145 Elandslaagte, battle of, vii, 257-265 Elba, Napoleon sent to, vi, 171 Napoleon escapes from, vi, 172 Eleanor, Queen, arrives in Naples, iii, 6 Electric lighting, vi, 215; vii, 130 Elegy for Ataturk, ix, 383 Eleonore, Empress of Austria, iv, 322

	Elephants, in war, i, 323; ii, 7, 25; iii, 185	England first Date
	plimar, the trattor, 11, 298	England, first Parliament of, iii, 61-63, 70 Barons' War in, iii, 64-6-
	Elgin marbles, vi, 198	Barons' War in, iii, 64-69
	Elis, i, 78	Wars of, with Scotland, iii, 99-112; iv, 19-26
	Elissar, i, 54	French crown claimed by, iii, 112, 199, 305 Battle of Crécy won by iii 228
	Flizabeth, Queen of England, iv, 127	Battle of Crécy won by, iii, 128-130
	protects Mary Stuart, iv, 133	
	recognizes James, iv, 137	Battle of Agincourt won by, iii, 201-209 and Joan of Arc. iii 210 220
	diplomacy of, iv, 168	and Joan of Arc, iii, 219-225
	siens Mary Stuart's death warrant, iv, 174	The August In th
	aids Henry IV. of France, iv, 199	of Gold" meeting of in
	Elzabeth of Russia, death of, v, 198	
	E.la, ii, 262	monasteries suppressed in, iv, 89-97
	F 25ar, i, 26	
i	Eiliott, Sir Henry, vii, 132, 135	167-181, 205-212
,	Eilsworth Land, ix, 241	Ireland conquered by, iv, 210-212
	Elsworth, Lincoln, Norge flight of, to North	
	Pole, ix, 227, 230-237	Toyanst-Farnament was in it.
	Antarctic flight of, ix, 308	
	El Medinah, ii, 211	TABLES COPPRE BILL Dorond :- !
	Elmet, forest of, ii, 193	
	Els255, iv, 281; vii, 123, 127, 128	
	(See also Alsace-Lorraine)	Declaration of Rights by, v, 27-28
	Elenum, Norway, evacuation to, x, 42-46, 50,	Totals IIISA Army at Boune at an in
	51	THE CLY LOUTINEED. V. DA
	destruction of, x, 52-53	and Allies, make war on France, v, 75-88
	El, Isle of, iii, 73	Scotland unites with, v, 89 tired of war, v, 105
	Emancipation of the Serfs, The, vii, 25	signs Pease of Yr.
	Emancipation of the Slaves, The, vii, 55	signs Peace of Utrecht, v, 112
	Emanuel Philibert, Duke of Savoy, iv, 117	Scotland rebels against, v, 117-131
	Enden, German cruiser, crippled, x, 41	religious revival in, v, 156
	Emesa, battle of, ii, 147	Captures Cape Breton Isle, v, 171-174
	Emigrés, return of the, vi, 86	American expeditions of, v, 206
	Empire vs. Papacy: Henry IV. at Canossa,	allied with Prussia in 7-years war, v, 193
	ii, 315	verigicis acugal, India. V 202
	Encyclopédie, v, 175	wins Canada from the French, v, 206-209 rise to empire of, v, 210
	End of the Peloponnesian War: Battle of	(See also Britain, Great Britain)
	Cheronea, i, 299	Engle, the, ii, 189
	End of the Pope's Temporal Power and	English the ii ver -ooc o
	Unification of Italy, vii, 17	English, the, ii, 181, 182, 186-189 adventurers, iv, 169, 266
	End of Wars of the Roses, iii, 269	archers, iii, 106, 202
	inghien, execution of the Duke d', vi, 89	army, iii, 100-101; iv, 21
	England, iii, 305	army, power of the, iv, 304
	land of Englishmen, ii, 187	artillery, iii, 124
	Danish conquest of, ii, 259, 291-304	conquests of the, ii, 183
	Norman conquest of, ii, 305-312	expelled from France, iii, 226
	leudalism in, ii, 331-333, 349	explorers, iv, 255-258; v, 210
	insurrection in, iii, 42, 46-47	fleet, iii, 44; iv, 51-52, 178; v, 55, 61
	Great Charter of, ii, 331; iii, 47-52, 62	national debt, v, 133
	· · · · ·	

English, peasant rebellion under Wat Tyler, iii,

Etruria, Gauls invade, i, 285 Etruscans send to Rome for aid, i, 285 throne, claimants to the, ii, 302 Eudo, Count, ii, 241 Eugene, Prince, iv, 327; v, 110, 113 victory at La Hogue, v, 64-65 Enterprise, carrier, misses attack on Pearl Hardefeats the Turks, v, 66 bor, x, 88 captures Belgrade, v, 131 fliers from the, join Pearl Harbor defense, x, meeting of, with Marlborough, v, 80 96, 100 meeting of, with Villars, v, 113 at Battle of Midway, x, 114 advance of, v, 100 Eugénie di Montijo, vi, 318 in Philippine Sca battle, x, 257 Entertainments, laws regarding, i, 120 Eugenius IV., iii, 136, 108 Euphrates, Cyrus plans to turn the, i, 164 Epaminondas, quotation from, i, 63 Eure, Dupont de l', vi, 273 Ephesus, Antony goes to, ii, 56 Europe, last pagans in, baptized, iii, 170 Ephors, the, i, 270 groundwork for modern, laid, iv, 281 Epirus, ii, 44, 51; ix, 209, 210 revolutionary movements in, vi, 175, 193 conquest of, ii, 22 Epp, Franz Ritter von, ix, 282 colonial development by, vii, 151 balance of power in, ix, 306 Equality, personal, i, 243 Erech, i, 23, 29 Europe Completes a Cycle, x, 11 Eretria, fall of, i, 211 Eurybiades, i, 224 Eurycles, the Lacedemonian, ii, 65 Erfurt, Diet of, ii, 285 Eurymedon, battle of, i, 232 Ericsson, John, vii, 42 Evatt, Herbert Vere, Australian Foreign Mia-Erik the Red discovers Greenland, ii, 260 ister at San Francisco, x, 393, 395 Erlon, Drouet d', General, vi, 226 Evesham, battle of, iii, 70, 72 Eruption of Mont Pelée, vii, 279, 280, 289-300 Ewa, air base at, x, 93, 94 Eruption of Mount Vesuvius, ii, 131 Ewell, General, vii, 68, 69, 72 Eruption of Vesuvius, The, viii, 165 Exclusion Bill, iv, 317 Erytrea, colony of, vii, 150, 154 Exclusion Bill and Habeas Corpus Act, Eschines, i, 301, 305 The, iv, 317 Eschylus at Marathon, i, 218 Execution of Marino Faliero, iii, 155 Eskimos, culture of, i, 7, 10 Execution of Savonarola, The, iii, 327 Espartero, vii, 95, 100 Exhibition of 1851, vi, 289-296 Esperance, Cape, sea battle off, x, 133 Exhibitions, French, vi, 290 Essen, occupation proclaimed at, ix, 200 American, viii, 141 Essex, carrier in Philippine Sea battle, x, 257 Exmouth, Lord, vi, 198, 219 Essex, Earl of, iv, 297, 300 Expedition of the Ten Thousand, i, 269 Estates, citizens', i, 114 Exploration, voyages of, Columbus, iii, 293-303 Este, Alphonso d', iv, 76 by Vasco da Gama, iii, 317-326 Estonia, pact with Russia, ix, 294 by Magellan, iv, 39-48 becomes part of Soviet Union, x, 75 by Henry Hudson, iv, 246-247, 255-258 Ethbaal, i, 125 by Sir Walter Raleigh, iv, 264 Ethelred, ii, 296 by Captain James Cook, v, 221-225 flight and recall, ii, 299-300 by Sir John Franklin, vi, 251-257 goes to Normandy, ii, 305 (See also Antarctic Exploration; North Pole) Ethelric, King of Bernicia, ii, 194 Expulsion of Queen Isabella, The, vii, 93 Ethiopia. (See Abyssinia) Expulsion of the Peisistratæ, i, 183 Etna, eruption of, v, 65 Expulsion of the Tarquins, i, 195 Etolian League, i, 331 Eylau, battle of, vi, 116 Etolians join Romans, ii, 22

F

Faber, Peter, iv, 101 Fabianus, martyrdom of, ii, 116 Fabri, the, i, 285 Fabius, i, 237 Faidherbe, General, vii, 124, 125 Fairfax, iv, 302 Faliero, iii, 155-160 Falkenhayn, General von, ix, 11 Falkirk, battle of, v, 169 Fall, Albert B., in oil lease cases, ix, 256 Fall of Babylon, The, i, 163 Fall of Carthage, The, ii, 23 Fall of Constantinople, iii, 227 Fall of Greece, The, ii, 37 Fall of The Decemvirate, i, 235 Fall of Tyre and the Siege of Jerusalem. Fall of Zenobia and Palmyra, ii, 143 Fallières, viii, 154 Family Compact, the, v, 198 Famine, army crusaders', ii, 345 Fanshaw Bay, Admiral Sprague's flagship, x, 292 Farel, iv, 28 Farewell Broadcast of Edward VIII., The, Farewell Pilgrimage and Mecca, ii, 213 Farewell to F.D.R., x, 333 Farnese, Alexander, iv, 163 Farouk I, of Egypt, ix, 308 Farragut, vii, 30 FARRAR, FREDERIC W. The Crucifixion, ii, 91 The Nativity of Christ, ii, 69 Fascism, Italian, causes of, ix, 298-299 expansion policies of, ix, 301, 317 backs Franco regime in Spain, ix, 312, 313, 318 Powers opposed to, ix, 319-321, 356 and the United States, ix, 323-327 democracy against, ix, 356; x, 26-27 (See also Mussolini) Fascist, uprisings in Italy, ix, 199 Premier Mussolini comes to power, ix, 200 propaganda, a problem, ix, 315 salute, x, 181 symbols, x, 348

Father, power of the, i, 242 Fatimites, the, defend Jerusalem, ii, 346 Fatrah, the, ii, 208 Favre, vii, 127 Fawkes, Guy (Guido), iv, 235-240 FAY, SIDNEY B. The Hitler Dictatorship, ix, 279 The First "Second Front," x, 135 FAYANT, FRANK The Nile Dam at Assouan, vii, 327 Fazl, Abdul, on persecution, iv, 115 Fealty, ii, 329 Feisal II., King of Iraq, ix, 381 Fen Country, the, ii, 193 Fengtien, province of, ix, 262 Feng Yu-hsiang, takes Peking, ix, 225 Fenian rising in Great Britain, vii, 92 Fenians, vii, 84 Feodor, ii, 266 Ferdinand (Emperor), death of, iv, 280 Ferdinand of Aragon, iii, 268 musters troops, iii, 275 suppresses the Moors, iii, 348 Ferdinand of Aragon, and Isabella receive keys of the Alhambra, iii, 280-281 Ferdinand I. of Naples, vi, 194 Ferdinand II. of Naples, vii, 17 Ferdinand I. of Roumania, dies, ix, 256 Ferdinand VII. of Spain, vi, 186 Ferdinand, Duke of Styria, emperor, iv, 269 Ferdinand of Talavera, iii, 339 FERISHTA, MAHUMMUD CASIM The Invasion of Tamerlane, iii, 179 Feudal baron, the, ii, 327; iii, 49 Feudal system, origin of, ii, 327 established in England, ii, 349 tenure, ii, 329-331 principles, universality of, ii, 332 in South of France, iii, 39 abolished in Japan, vii, 108 Feuillants, the, v, 319; vi, 15 Field, Cyrus, vii, 88 Field of the Cloth of Gold, iv, 49 Field of the Cloth of Gold, iv, 54 Fifth Column, in Norway, x, 39 at Pearl Harbor, x, 94 Fifty Years' War, i, 257 Fight Between the "Monitor" and the "Merrimac," The, vii, 41

Finland, province of Sweden, v, 93	Charles VIII. of France in, iii, 312
privileges of, under Russian rule, vii, 39	reformation of, by Savonarola, iii, 328-323
Constitution granted to, viii, 127	a refuge for liberalism, vi, 190
Russia agrees to evacuate, ix, 92	Florey, Dr. penicillin assembly
pact of, with Oslo States, x, 25	Florey, Dr., penicillin growth developed by, 1
at war with Russia, x, 27	
• • •	use of penicillin described by, x, 198-199
Russian war of, studied in Norway, x, 29, 34,	I IUI IUA FUI CII asc. VI. TX7
37, 44	Flying Fortress, in Battle of Midway, x, 122
joins Nazis in World War II, x, 85	123, 120, 120
declares war on Germany, x, 313	Foch, Ferdinand, Allied Commander in Crass
FINNEY, BURNHAM	m world war I., ix, oa-oa
The Miracle of American Production, x, 203	receives armistice delegates, ix, 95; x, 343
Fire, first use of, i, 4-5	ucam or, 1x, 257
Fire-worship, i, 33	Foertsch, Lieut. Gen. Hermann, surrender of,
First Consul, The, vi, 83	x, 351
First Crusade, The, ii, 335	Fonck, René, ix, 245
First Destruction of Nineveh, i, 71	Food, preparation of, by fire, i, 5
First Jacobite Rebellion, The, v, 117	Food Bill, Pure, viii, 16, 162
First Nonstop Flight, The, ix, 179	Force Laws, vii, 92
First Russian Parliament, The, viii, 195	Ford Castle demolished, iv, 19
First "Second Front," The, x, 135	Ford Island as a second street, 19, 19
	Ford Island, x, 103
First Voyage Around the World, iv, 39	Navy airfield on, attacked by Japanese, x,
Fismes, taken by Americans, ix, 26	94, 95-96, 97
Fitzmaurice, James E., transatlantic flight of,	Formosa Island, closed to foreign ships, viii, \$7
ix, 256	colony of Japan, ix, 276; x, 259
Fiume, ix, 111, 161, 183	Forrestal, Secretary of the Navy, on 2d Battle
acquired by Italy, ix, 182, 224	of the Philippines, x, 300
Five-Year Plan, Russia's, ix, 274	Fort Duquesne, built by French, v, 177
Flagellants, the, iii, 148	Braddock defeated near, v, 181-183
Flamen Quirinalis, i, 289, 291	captured by Washington, v, 207
Flame-throwers, x, 187, 329	Fort Edward, v, 282, 284
Flanders, joins Crusade, iii, 13	Fort Niagara captured, v, 207
invaded by the French, vi, 4	Fort St. Elmo, attacked, iv, 142
Fleming, Dr. A., penicillin discovered by, x,	falls, iv, 144
194-196	Forth Bridge, vii, 159
Fleming, Captain Richard, damages Jap cruiser	Forum, the, i, 283, 291, 292
in Battle of Midway, x, 128, 129	Foscari deposed, iii, 254-255
Flemish refugees in England, iv, 155-156	Fouché, vi, 182
Fleurus, battle of, v, 41	
Flight of the NC-Boats, ix, 167	Founding of Carthage, The, i, 53
Flint implements, early use of, i, 8	Founding of Chaldea, The, i, 21
The state of the s	Founding of Constantinople, The,
Flodden Field, battle of, iv, 19-26	ü, 153
Flodden Ridge, iv, 19	Founding of Rome, The, i, 87
Floods, in Mississippi Valley, viii, 317	Four-Power Treaty, ix, 197
Florence, Republic of, Black Plague in, iii, 144,	Fourteen Points, The, ix, 39
145; iv, 60	Fourth Crusade, The, iii, 11
influence of the Medici on, iii, 175-176, 308,	
310; iv, 10-12, 58	Four Years of Hitlerism, ix, 333
loses Pisa, iii, 311	Fram, in Antarctic exploration, viii, 319

France, invaded by the Arabs, ii, 238 Arabs defeated in, ii, 242-245 the Albigenses crushed in Southern, iii, 33-39 John of England in, iu, 45-46 invaded by the English, iii, 170, 202 daimed by Henry V. of England, iii, 190 condition of, iii, 211 Joan of Arc saves, from the English, iii, 225 Kingdom of, united, iii, 305-306 Charles VIII. of, invades Italy, iii, 307 declares war against Venice, iv, 2 campaigns of, in Italy, iv, 8-9, 59-62, 72-74 "Field of the Cloth of Gold" in, iv, 49-55 abandons Italy to Spain, iv, 75 religious wars in, iv, 183-184, 189-203 Huguenot massacre in, iv, 185-187 part of, in 30 years' war, iv, 280 Protestants persecuted in, iv, 334-337 ambitions of Louis XIV. for, v, 71-72 succession crisis in, v, 106-107 declares war on England and Austria, v, 169 loses Cape Breton to the English, v, 173, 206 in Seven Years' War, v, 193, 195, 196 Canada lost by, v, 209 recognizes the United States, v, 293 debt of, v, 313 iall of the Bastille in, v, 323-334 becomes a Republic, vi, i invades Flanders, vi, 4 invaded by Allied armies, vi, 6-7 wins battle of Valmy, vi, 14 reign of terror in, vi, 15-28 the Directoire formed in, vi, 29-31 Napopeon First Consul of, vi, 84, 87 First Empire of, vi, 89, 119 loses Napoleonic Conquests, vi, 171, 175 under Louis XVIII., vi, 179, 181, 184, 186 revolution of 1848 in, vi, 269-273 Second Republic of, vi, 274-275, 311-316 Second Empire of, vi, 317-320 and England in war against Russia, vi, 329-356 alliance of, with Piedmont, vii, 9 attempts of, to found Mexican Empire, vii, 47-53 declares war on Prussia, vii, 118 invaded by German armies, vii, 120-121 surrenders Paris to the Germans (1871), vii, 127

France, Third Republic of, vii, 129 separation of Church and State in, viii, 129enters World War I, ix, 5 Czechoslovakia recognized by, ix, 79 regains Alsace-Lorraine and the Sarre, ix, 121-123 postwar treaties signed by, ix, 215, 216, 260, 278, 308, 344 Manchurian policy of, ix, 274-275, 365, 374, 376 policy of, toward Italy, ix, 301-302, 305, 319; X, 20 during Spanish civil war, ix, 313, 319-320 relations of, with Nazi Germany, ix, 340,349 betrayal of Czechoslovakia by, ix, 355, 362 and Poland, x, 6-7, 12, 16, 17 Russian pacts of, x, 12, 394 alliance of, with Britain, x, 19-20 forces of, trapped at Dunkirk, x, 59, 61 signs armistice with Germany, x, 64 evacuation of Paris, x, 65-74 government of, moves to Vichy, x, 75 invasion of, by the Allies, x, 215-248 Southern, invaded, x, 249 V-Day in Paris, x, 251-254 joins the United Nations, x, 312 German surrender signed in, x, 342-344 joins in control of Germany, x, 386 (See also French) Franche-Comté, iii, 257, 263 Francis I., of Lorraine, v, 166, 169 Francis I., takes Milan, iv, 61 at Field of the Cloth of Gold, iv, 53, 54 Titian's portrait of, iv, 53 persecutes the Vaudois, iv, 109 Francis Ferdinand, assassinated, viii, 382 life and character of, ix, 1-4 Francis Joseph, Emperor of Austria, vii, 15 death of, ix, 12 supports Magyars, ix, 83 Franciscan Order of Mendicant Friars, iii, 21 Franco-German War, The, vii, 117 Franconians and Saxons, convention of, ii, 279 Franco, Francisco, ix, 311, 312, 313, 318 proclaimed dictator, ix, 328 establishes fascist government, ix, 343 regime in Spain recognized, ix, 380, 381 anti-Communist declaration of, x, 24

Frankfort, Declaration of, vi. 171 fairs at, vi, 289 Treaty of, vii, 128; ix, 121 city of, taken by Allies, x, 331 Franklin, Benjamin, v, 218, 250 Bicentenary of, viii, 174 Franklin, Sir John, vi, 249 Franks, invasions by, ii, 142 Franz, Grand Duke, v, 151, 152 Frateschi, the, iii, 330 Fredenhall, Major Gen. Lloyd R., commands American troops invading North Africa, x, 148 Frederic I., ii, 350 Frederick I., Barbarossa, iii, 2 starts for the Holy Land, iii, 2 death of, iii, 3 legendary resting-place of, iii, 3 chastises Romans, iii, 132 Frederick II., Emperor, iii, 116 heads Fifth Crusade, iii, 60 Frederick I., of Schleswig-Holstein, becomes King of Denmark, iv, 87 Frederick VIII., of Denmark, viii, 154 Frederick I., of Prussia, v, 67 Frederick II., of Prussia (the Great), v, 167, 193; ix, 285; x, 354 comes to the throne, v. 164 invades Saxony, v, 194 invades Bohemia, v, 194 successes of, v, 204 misfortunes of, v, 204 and Joseph, v, 240 Frederick, of Naples, iti, 309 Frederick, of Sicily, iii, 41 Frederick II., of Sicily, iii, 77 Frederick, of Swabia, iii, 3, 56 Frederick V., the Elector Palatine, iv, 270 Frederick William III., vi, 178, 180 Free French, declare war on Japan, x, 110 in Paris, x, 251 Free Trade, beginning of, vi, 233-238 FREEMAN, EDWARD AUGUSTUS The Reign of Akbar, iv, 111 Social and Mithridatic Wars, ii, 45 French, fleet destroyed at Damme, iii, 44 army at Crécy, iii, 123 lack of discipline, iii, 125 army, flight of, iii, 128

French, losses at Crécy, iii, 129 peasantry, rising of the, iii, 162-163 nobility defeat and massacre peasants, 14, 167-170 at Agincourt, iii, 205 losses at Agincourt, iii, 206 defeat Duke of Burgandy at Nancy, iii, 25% lose conquests in Italy, iü, 316; iv, 9 panic of the, iv, 62 losses at St. Quentin, iv, 118 retake Calais from the English, iv, 121-122 opposition to the court, iv, 308-309 fleet defeated by the English, v, 60-64 successes of the, under Louis XIV., v, 75-75 cavalry routed, v, 86-87 army destroyed at Blenheim, v, 88 Revolution, beginning of the, v, 321 army, condition of the (1792), vi, 2,5 invade Ireland, vi, 55 fleet defeated at Aboukir, Egypt, vi, 67-68,71 armies repulsed at Acre, vi, 78-80 victories under Napoleon, vi, 85-86, 109-110. 113-118 invasion of England, failure of, vi, 105-107 sea power, end of, vi. 111 armies of Napoleon defeated in Russia, v. 126-138 defeated at Vittoria, vi, 147-151 Emperor Napoleon's downfall, vi, 165-175 Charter, vi, 179, 182-183 occupation of Spain, vi, 196-197 exhibitions of art and industry, vi, 290 defeat Austria in Italy, vii, 13 engineer solves Suez Canal difficulties, via 112-114 armies defeated by Germany (1871), va, 120-127 claims in Morocco, conference on, viii, 147contributions to aeronautics, viii, 356-357. 362-363, 369, 371 operations with A.E.F. in World War I, ix, occupation of German districts, ix, 200, 225, naval tonnage limitations, ix, 192, 194, 196 agree to fund war debt, ix, 242 refugees from Paris, x, 65-74

French, suspicion of Great Britain, x, 147 Gambier Bay, sinking of, in Philippine Sea Batopposition to North African invasion, x, 148 tle, x, 289-201 Forces of the Interior, x, 110, 251 Captain and crew of, rescued, x, 300 Provisional Government, x, 388 Games, laws regarding, i, 118 French, Major General, vii, 257 Gandhi, Mahatma, arrested by British, ix, 198 French Fury," the, iv, 164 disobedience campaigns of, ix, 258; x, 133 French Revolution of 1848, The, vi, 269 Ganges, Tamerlane reaches, iii, 158 Fnedeburg, Gen. Admiral Hans Georg von, Gapon, Father, viii, 162 negotiates the German surrender, x, 343-Garcia, Manuel, viii, 86 GARDINER, SAMUEL RAWSON 344, 349-350 Friedland, battle of, vi, 116 The Colonization of Virginia, iv, 213 Friedrichshaven, Graf Zeppelin leaves, ix, 257 Garibaldi, vii, 10, 14, 15, 19, 20, 126 Frimont, General, vi, 194 Garner, John Nance, ix, 278, 309, 328 Frisch, Dr. O., German scientist, x, 407 Gas-lighting, vî, 215 Fusian Islands, Nazis surrender in, x, 347, 349 Gaston, Duke of Orleans, iv, 312 Gaston de Foix, Duc de Nemours, iv, 7 Fronde, end of the, iv, 315 Gaston Phœbus, Count of Foix, iii, 167 Frondeurs, the, iv, 309 FROUDE, JAMES ANTHONY Gatacre, General, vii, 230 The Reformation in Scotland, iv, 125 Gates, General, v, 287 Gates, Sir Thomas, iv, 222, 224 Frundsberg, George de, iv, 67 Fulk of Neuilly preaches Fourth Crusade, iii, 12 Gatun Dam, viii, 324, 325 Gaul, ii, 194, 195 Fulton, Robert, vi, 91, 300 Cisalpine, i, 332 precursors of, vi, 95 Transalpine, ii, 44 Furst of Uri, iii, 92 Cæsar's conquests in, ii, 51 Furst of Altinghausen, iii, 92 Gauls, invade Rome, i, 288 Fuso, Japanese battleship, in Philippine Sea batinvade Etruria, i, 285 tle, x, 263, 271, 275 grievances of the, i, 286 fyffe, charles alan victory of the, i, 287 The Battle of Trafalgar, vi, 105 defeated by Camillus, i, 296 The Moscow Campaign, vi, 121 repulsed, i, 295 Gauls' First Attack on Rome, The, i, 235 G Gaumata, i, 181 Gage, Governor of Massachusetts, v, 258 Gautama, birth of, i, 99 Galba, Emperor of Rome, ii, 118 flight of, i, 102 Galen, Count Clemens von, Bishop of Muenster, temptations of, i, 103 resents Allied bombings, x, 361, 368 disciples of, i, 104, 107 Gautama Buddha, i, 99 Galerius, ii, 118, 154 edict of, ii, 118 GAUTIER, JULES Galicia, vi, 122; under Austrian rule, ix, 58 Rise and Fall of the Mexican Empire, vii, 47 Poland gets 25-year mandate over, ix, 182 Gay, Ensign George, only survivor of Torpedo 8, x, 116 Eastern, Czechoslovakia drops claim to, x, 13 views Battle of Midway from the sea, x, 117. Galileo, iv, 293 118, 126, 127 Galliano, Major, vii, 155

GAYN, MARK

GEDDIE, JOHN

Terror in Japan, x, 371

Geese save Rome, i, 295

The Great Siberian Railway, vii, 161

Sallican Church, iii, 226

first Turkish foothold in Europe, iii, 154

Gamarra, Major, capture of, vi. 147

Gallienus, ii, 117, 142 Gallipoli, ix, 9, 10, 385

Gelaleddin, heroism of, iii, 30 Gelimer, King of the Vandals, ii, 198 Gemblours, battle of, iv, 162 Geneva, x, 389 John Calvin in, iv, 37 Convention, vi, 337; vii, 251, 253, 254 Court of Arbitration, vii, 129 seat of the League of Nations, ix, 115 World Disarmament Conference at, ix, 259 Genoa, iv, 6, 77; v, 237; vii, 19 victorious over Pisa, iii, 82 and Venice, iii, 155-156 Jewish refugees in, iii, 290-291 French driven from, iv, 9 Spaniards capture and pillage, iv, 59-60 freedom of, restored, iv, 74, 79-81 Constitution of, iv, 82-84 illustrious families of, iv, 85 Genoese, at Crécy, iii, 125, 126 fleet, iv, 81 Genseric, the Vandal, ii, 166 conquers North Africa, ii, 169 sacks Rome, ii, 194 carries spoils to Carthage, ii, 198 "Gentleman's Magazine," v, 145 Geok-Tene captured, vii, 144 George III., of England, v, 213, 223 Bonaparte proposes peace to, vi, 84 George V., signs Irish Constitution, ix, 200 opens London Naval Conference, ix, 258 jubilee of, ix, 307 dies, ix, 308 George VI., reign of, begins, ix, 331 crowned King of Great Britain, ix, 344 visits Canada, ix, 392 George I., King of Greece, vii, 30 George II., becomes Greek king, ix, 199 exiled, ix, 217 appoints Damoskinos Regent, x, 312 George, David Lloyd (See Lloyd George, David) Georgia, conquered by the Turks, ii, 334 Georgia, founded, v, 145 Gepidæ kingdom, destroyed, ii, 204 Gerard, Balthasar, assassinates William of Orange, iv, 164 Gerberge, daughter of Henry I., ii, 280 German army, the, vii, 119 in France, vii, 121, 129

German army, rapaeity of, in Venice, iv, 3 cruelty of the, iv, 4 German Confederation, vii, 127 German crusade, iii, 58 German Memorial Day, ix, 281 German National Assembly, at Weimar, II, 65 Germanicus, successes of, ii, 8a death of, ii, 89 German, ferocity, ii, 86 kings become Roman Emperors also, ii, 281 merchants and towns form unions, iii, III. Protestants, iv, 100, 104, 106, 270 mercenary troops, iv, 117; v, 284, 290, 266 princes break with Austria, v, 112 Confederations, vi, 114; vii, 127 Empire, army of, vi, 170 National Parliament, vi, 285-286 forces take Paris (1871), vii, 127-128 anti-Semitic League, vii, 339 troops invade Belgium (1914), ix, 5 submarine sinks Lusitania, ix, 9 mutiny at Kiel, ix, 92 retreat begins (1918), ix, 94 boundaries after World War I, ix, 119-120 reparations, ix, 141-150, 201 responsibility for World War II, x, 1-6 military successes, x, 38, 61, 64, 76, 132, 140 submarine warfare, x, 138 reverses in Italy, x, 172, 177-181, 182, 214 reverses on the Eastern Front, x, 214, 254 312, 313, 331, 339, 356 reverses on the Western Front, x, 226, 227, 234, 243-244, 249, 254, 255, 312, 313 330, 331, 339 rockets bomb London, x, 249 Volksstrum formed, x, 254 V-2 rocket bombs London, x, 312 General Staff headquarters, x, 355-356 re-education, need for, x, 362, 363, 366-369 Germany, Romans driven from, ii, 87 united under Henry I., ii, 280 national feeling in, ii, 289 Saxon revolt in, put down, ii, 315-316 Henry IV. of, at war with Pope, ii, 323 papal supremacy established over, ii, 326 Teutonic Knights in, iii, 56-60 Black Plague in, iii, 144, 145

Germany, under Emperor Sigismund, iii, 191-Reformation of Luther in, iv, 30-38, 75 under Charles V., conquers Italy, iv, 57-77 30-year religious war in, iv, 269-280 conditions in, after 30 year's war, iv, 281 House of Austria in, iv, 321; v, 70, 165-169 delivered from France, v, 88 7 Years' War in, v, 193-199, 203-204 re-creation of unity in, v, 204, 209 France invaded by, v, 320; vi, 6-7 defeated by French, vi, 13-14 invaded by Napoleon, vi, 107-108 under Napoleon's domination, vi, 114, 121at end of Napoleonic wars, vi, 175 reaction in, to Holy Alliance, vi, 179-181 Revolution of 1848 in, vi, 278-280, 284 causes of 1870 war with France, vii, 117-119 invades and defeats France, vii, 120-122 unites and names first Emperor, vii, 127 assumes first place in Europe, vii, 128-129 dupute of, and France over Morocco, viii, 147, 152, 153, 242, 290, 291 expands Navy, viii, 311 influence of, in Europe, viii, 378 begins World War I, ix, 5, 6 signs armistice, ix, 95 Friedrich Ebert first president of, ix, 96, 225 peace terms for, ix, 113-166 signs Versailles Treaty, ix, 182 Hindenburg, president of, ix, 226, 259 admitted to League of Nations, ix, 242 granted equality of arms, ix, 278 Nazis win Reichstag election in, ix, 279 swastica flag adopted by, ix, 281, 307 Hitler becomes dictator of, ix, 286, 293 regains the Saar, ix, 295, 307 troops of, occupy the Rhineland, ix, 308 policies of, a European problem, ix, 312-321 National Socialism in, ix, 333-343 annexes Austria, ix, 344 eastern conquests planned by, ix, 347-354 demands of, granted at Munich, ix, 355-362 seizes Czechoslovakia, ix, 380 begins World War II, x, 6 non-aggression pact of, with Poland, x, 12 Russian pact of, x, 22 invades Denmark and Norway, x, 27

Germany, invades Belgium, Holland, France, x, 64 invades Russia, x, 76, 77-85 at war with the United States, x, 110 defeat of, in Africa, x, 144-146, 171 defeat of, at Stalingrad, x, 151-171 invaded by the Allies, x, 254 surrenders to the Allies, x, 342-345, 347-348, 349-350, 351, 354 conditions in, after surrender, x, 354-355, 357-362, 365 anti-Nazis in, x, 360-362, 366 problems of Allied occupation of, x, 364-369 Big Four take control of, x, 386 (See also Germans, Nazis) GERRITZ, HESSEL Hudson's Last Voyage, iv, 255 Gessler, bailiff, of Uri, iii, 92 and William Tell, iii, 92-93 Gestapo, x, 345, 360 Gettysburg, description of, vii, 66 battle of, vii, 65-80 Gewissas, the, ii, 190 Ghazi, King of Iraq, dies, ix, 381 Ghent, pacification of, iv, 162, 163 Ghezzar Oglou, vi, 75, 77, 79 GIBBON, EDWARD The Arab Conquest of Spain, ii, 227 The Conquest of Persia, ii, 217 Fall of Zenobia and Palmyra, ii, 143 Invasion of Italy by Attila, Foundation of the Republic of Venice and Destruction of Attila's Empire, ii, 171 Conquests of Zingis Khan, iii, 23 The Fall of Constantinople, iii, 227 G.I. Bill of Rights signed, x, 249 Gibraltar, ii, 230; x, 226 acquired by England, v, 67, 112 Giesing, Major Erwin, on Hitler's health, x, 353-354 Gifford, Walter S., ix, 255, 256 Gilbert Islands, x, 259, 411 taken by U. S. Marines, x, 182 Giolitti, vii, 153 Girondists, the, v, 319 clemency of, vi, 42 Gisborne, Mr., vii, 87 Giselbert, Duke of Lorraine, ii, 280 Giunta, the, iii, 159

Glacidas. (See Gladsdale, Sir William) Gladsdale, Sir John, at Orleans, iii, 222 Gladsdale, Sir William, at Orleans, iii, 219, 224 Gladstone, vii, 17, 131, 133 Glanvill, Ranulf, iii, 4 Glencoe (Scotland), Massacre at, v, 43-54 (South Africa), Boers defeated at, vii, 245 Gliders, viii, 364, 368-369; x, 225 Glorious, British carrier, sunk off Norway, x, 118 Glorious Revolution, The, v, 19 Glorious Revolution in Servia, A, vii, 347 Gloucester, ii, 191 siege of, iv, 299 Gneisenau, German battleship, disabled, x, 39 Godesberg Conference, ix, 345, 356, 360 Godfrey de Bouillon, ii, 338-339, 342, 348 in Jerusalem, ii, 349 Goebbels, Paul Joseph, Chief of Nazi propaganda, ix, 290, 334 work of, ix, 291; x, 363, 364 anti-Roosevelt speech of, ix, 357 body of, thought found, x, 353 Goering, Hermann von, ix, 354, 356 Nazi ruler of Prussia, ix, 283 Nazis want premiership for, ix, 284 Nazi Minister of Aviation, ix, 334, 349 Hitler's chief executive, ix, 337 Goethals, G. W., digs Panama Canal, viii, 327 heads shipbuilding program, ix, 18 Gold, discovered in California, vi, 259-268 in the Klondike, vii, 204 in the Transvaal, vii, 158 Golden Book, the, iv, 82, 84 Golden Dragon of Wessex, the, ii, 308 Golden Rule, Confucius's, i, 149 Goletta, fortress of, ii, 36 Golgotha, description of, ii, 95 Golossa, ii, 29 Gomez, Jose Miguel, viii, 242 Gondomar, iv, 263 Gondy, Jean Paul de, iv, 309, 312 Gonzaga, Frederick de, iv, 76 Gordon Riots, the, v, 294 Gore, Graham, discovers Northwest passage, vi. 256 Gorges, Sir, F., iv, 214 Gorm, King of the Danes, ii, 283, 284 Gort, General Lord "Tiger," x, 60

Gortchakoff, Prince, vi, 342; vii, 33, 38 Gosnold, Bartholomew, iv, 213, 217 Gothic monarchy, ii, 228, 231, 232 Goths, attack Asia Minor and Greece, ii, 142 invade the Empire, ii, 142 invade Illyricum, ii, 156 cross the Danube, ii, 168 enter Gaul, ii, 169 conquered by Clovis, ii, 195 battles with Belisarius, ii, 199 take Rome, ii, 200 and Saracens, ii, 227 degeneracy of the, ii, 228 defeat of the, ii, 232 in Scythia, ii, 269 Gracchi, the, ii, 47 Gracchus, Tiberius, the Younger, ii, 31 GRAETZ, HENRICH The Siege of Jerusalem, ii, 119 Graf Spee, incident of, x, 27, 30 Graf Zeppelin, ix, 257 Grammar, beginnings of, i, 3 Gran, capture of, iv, 328 Granada, conquered by the Almohades, ii, 350 kingdom of, founded, iii, 60 siege of, by Spain, iii, 275-280 fall of, iii, 279-282 persecution of the Moors in, iii, 341-342, 345, Inquisition established in, iii, 348 Granicus, battle of the, i, 311 GRANT, JAMES Braddock's Defeat, v, 177 Grant, Ulysses S., vii, 54, 80 Granvella, Cardinal, iv, 152 Grauert, Nazi Air General, x, 62 Great Britain, vi, 43; vii, 158, 254; ix, 215 reforms in, started by John Wilkes, v, 214. 215 coercion acts of, against American Colonies, v, 216-217, 218, 253 trade of, with American Colonies, v, 262 and American Colonies, war starts between, v, 268-269 defeat of, in America, v, 279-301 recognizes United States independence, v, 294 conquers Mysore, India, v, 335-340 defeats French fleet, Aboukir Bay, vi, 57-68

Great Britain, aids Turks against France, vi, drives Bonaparte's army from Egypt, vi, 86 repulses French invasion attempts, vi, 88, 105-107 wins naval battle of Trafalgar, vi, 111 aids in defeating French in Spain, vi, 144-151 leses battle of Lake Erie to the U. S., vi, share of, in crushing Bonaparte, vi, 177 constitution of, a model for nations, vi, 179 protests use of force, vi, 194, 196 recognizes independence of Spanish colonies. and Greece, vi, 206-207, 208, 210-211 start of free trade in, vi, 233-238 embassies of, to China, vi, 242 wars of, with China, vi, 243-244, 246 Great Exhibition in, vi, 290-298 concludes convention with Japan, vi, 328 in the Crimean War, vi, 329-343, 347-355 assumes government of India, vii, 6 intervenes in Russo-Turkish controversy, vii, 135-138 battles of, in Egypt, vii, 146-148, 220-233 in the Boer War, vii, 257-265 Edward VII., king of, vii, 313-326; viii, 257development of Egypt by, vii, 329-334 launches first modern battleship, viii, 155enters World War I, ix, 5, 6, 7 recognizes free Czechoslovakia, ix, 79, 84 treaty of, with Irish Free State, ix, 185-190 naval limitations of, ix, 191, 192, 196 Sino-Japanese conflict and, ix, 275-276, 365, 374, 376, 377 policy of, toward Italy, ix, 301, 302-306, 317 rearmament of, ix, 321-322; x, 19, 20 Edward VIII. of, abdicates, ix, 329-331 reassured by Hitler's promises, ix, 348 appeasement policy of, at Munich, ix, 355-362; x, 17-18 recognizes Franco Spain, ix, 380 efforts of, for peace, x, 1-7 war preparations of, x, 7-9 assistance pact of, with Poland, x, 17 relations of, with France, x, 19-20 rescues forces from Dunkirk, x, 59-64

Great Britain, Churchill becomes Prime Minister of, x, 64 attacks French fleet at Oran, x, 75 signs mutual-aid pact with Russia, x, 85 declares war on Japan, x, 110 8th Army of, in Africa, x, 132, 133, 140, 142-146 fleet at Salerno, x, 175-178 in French invasion, x, 229, 230, 246 attacked by robot bombs, x, 249 attacked by V-2 bombs, x, 312 troops of, take Mandalay, x, 330 and Allies receive Nazi surrender, x, 344, Attlee becomes Prime Minister of, x, 402 represented at Japanese surrender, x, 414, (See also Britain, England, English) Great Divorce in France, The, vin, 129 Great Earthquake at Lisbon, The, v, 185 Great Eastern, the, vii, 88, 91 Great Eastern, train wreck, viii, 121 Great Exhibition, The, vi, 289 Great Siberian Railway, The, vii, 161 Great Triumphs of Napoleon, The, vi, 113 Greece, vii, 141, 204; ix, 113, 226; x, 78 Delphic oracle in, i, 46-51 Olympic games in, i, 77-85 sends embassy to Persia, i, 193 fall of, ii, 37-42 becomes a Roman province, ii, 43 Emperor of, pays tribute to Russia, ii, 276 Empire of, iii, 12 conquered by Mohammed II., iii, 254 revolt in, against the Turks, vi, 196, 201 made a kingdom, vi, 210, 212 modification of frontier, vii, 142 Crete annexed to, viii, 381 King Constantine of, abdicates, ix, 20, 199 and Turkey, war between, ix, 199, 206-207, conditions in, after war, ix, 209-210 and Italy, ix, 216 George II. of, exiled, ix, 217 becomes a republic, ix, 224 invaded in World War II, x, 75, 76 British troops land in, x, 254 Archbishop Damoskinos regent of, x, 312 (See also Athens, Greeks)

Greek Church in Russia, ii, 265
Greek civilization, spread of, i, 314
Greek fire, ii, 238, 276; iii, 230
Greek language, i, 313; ii, 256; iv, 27
the language of Christianity, ii, 164
Greek Laws, i, 237
Greek States, League of, i, 297
independence of, ii, 22
Greeks, appearance of, i, 215
join Cyrus, i, 270-272
genius of the, i, 313
perfidy of the, ii, 275, 341-342
defeated by the Turks, ii, 334; iii, 245; ix,
206-207
in Constantinople, iii, 18; ix, 211
massacre of the, v, 240; vi, 203-204
in Smyrna, v, 306; ix, 207, 210
fight for independence, vi, 201
offer crown to Otho, vi, 212
and Turks, hatred between, ix, 206
(See also Greece)
GREEN, JOHN RICHARD
The Conquest of Ireland and Colonization
of Ulster, iv, 205
The Conquests of Bengal and Canada, v, 201
Defeat of the Spanish Armada, iv. 167
The Glorious Revolution, v, 19
Norman Conquest of England, ii, 305
Prosecution of John Wilkes and Passing of
the Stamp Act, v, 213
The Rise of Methodism and the New Phi-
lanthropy, v, 155
The Saxon Conquest of Britain, ii, 181
Greenland, discovered and settled, ii, 260
Gregorios, execution of, vi, 203
Gregory I. (the Great), ii, 164, 167
Gregory II., ii, 249
Gregory III., peril of, ii, 249
Gregory VI., Pope, ii, 313
Gregory VII., Pope, ii, 317
power of, ii, 318
policy of, ii, 318-319
difficulties of, ii, 319-320
holds synod at Rome, ii, 320
excommunicates Henry IV. of Germany, ii,
322
holds synod in the Vatican, ii, 322
(See also Hildebrand)
Gregory IX., Inquisition begins under, iii, 35

Gregory XII., Pope, iii, 189 abdicates, iii, 194 Grenville, v, 213, 215 Grey, Lord, iv, 208 Grey, Sir Thomas, iii, 104 Griffith, Arthur, ix, 190, 199 Gripsholm, x, 214 Grochov, battle of, vii, 33 GROVER, J. W. The Suez Canal, vii, 100 Growth of the Papacy, The, ii, 163 Guadalcanal, x, 183, 300, 413 Marines invade, x. 132 sea battles for, x, 133, 149 control of, won, x, 171 Guadeloupe settled, iv, 293 Guam, x, 110, 249, 320 Guatemala, proclaims independence, vi, 217 GUBIN, E. K. Penicillin, x, 193 Guiscard, Robert, ii, 266-267, 320 Guise, Duke of, at Calais, iv, 110 GUIZOT, FRANÇOIS PIERRE GUILLAUME The Peace of Utrecht, v, 103 Gunhilda, prophecy of, ii, 297 Gunpowder Plot, The, iv, 227 Gunpowder Plot, iv, 232 Gustavus Adolphus, iv, 271, 274, 279; v, 92 Gustavus III. (Sweden), v, 245, 308, 340 Gustav V., becomes King of Sweden, viii, 230 Gutenberg, Johannes, iii, 254; iv, 27 Guy, King of Jerusalem, iii, 2, 6 Guzerat, conquered by Akbar, iv, 187 Guzman, Dominic, iii, 35 Gylippus, i, 261, 263, 265 Gyrwas, the, ii, 193

Η

Haakon VII., King of Norway, viii, 203
Haakon VII. of Norway, viii, 98, 203
neutrality policy of, x, 29
hunted by the Nazis, x, 40, 44, 45, 52
retires to England, x, 64
Habeas Corpus Bill, iv, 320
Haco I., iii, 53
Hadith, the, ix, 385
Hadrian, Pope, ii, 251
Hafstad, Dr. L. R., physicist, x, 407

Hague, The, first peace conference at, vii, 247-	Hannibal, hears news of Hasdrubal, ii, 12, 20
155	recalled from Italy, ii, 21
Court of International Arbitration, vii, 279	death of, ii, 22
second peace conference at, viii, 217	Hanover, Treaty of, v, 131
Opium Congress at, viii, 291; ix, 150-151	Hans of Denmark, iii, 119
Carnegie Peace Palace at, viii, 381	Hansa, definition of, iii, 113
1603 Convention of, ix, 153	decline of the, iii, 119
International Conference at, ix, 198	Hansa Alamannia, the, iii, 116
Hahn, Dr. Otto, German scientist, x, 407	Hanse towns, iii, 117-121
Haig, Field Marshal Sir Douglas, ix, 9, 93	Hanseatic League, The, iii, 113
Haile Selassie, Emperor of Abyssinia, ix, 258,	Hanseatic League, character of, iii, 118-110
298	last assembly of, iii, 121
fices, ix, 308	Hapsburg, House of, iii, 91; iv, 105; v, 164, 166
appeals to League of Nations, ix, 327	humbled by Napoleon, vi, 118
returns to throne, x, 76	in Italy, vi, 190
Hainault, joins Crusade, iii, 13	dynastic interests of, ix, 3, 83-84, 89, 90
Haiti, iv, 13; viii, 230; ix, 113	Hapsburg Dual Monarchy, ix, 80, 81, 85
Hakluyt, Richard, iv, 213	Harald Hardrada, ii, 307
Halkett, Sir Peter, v, 179, 183	Harding, Warren G., becomes President, ix, 183
HALLAM, HENRY	starts tour, ix, 201
Revolutions in Rome, iii, 131	death of, ix, 216
Halley's comet, viii, 255	Harfleur, the English take, iii, 202
Halsey, Admiral Wm. F., x, 88, 96, 260, 266	Harmodius, death of, i, 187
a legend in the Navy, x, 257	Harold, Earl of Wessex, becomes King of Eng-
and the Philippine invasion, x, 258, 259	land, ii, 304
battle strategy of, x, 262, 263, 264, 273, 285,	oath of, ii, 306
298, 300	army of, ii, 308
3d Fleet of, in Philippine sea battle, x, 280-	death of, ii, 310
285	Harold Bluetooth, ii, 287
assembles 3d Fleet in Tokyo Bay, x, 413	Harold Goldtooth, death of, ii, 262
Hamar, Norway, x, 36, 37, 42, 43, 45	Harold Haarfager, ii, 263
Hamburg, ii, 262; iii, 116, 121; x, 349	Haroun al Rashid, ii, 245
Hamilcar, ii, 1, 6	Harpagus, i, 155
Hamilcar Pharneas, ii, 29	HARRIMAN, FLORENCE JAFFRAY
HAMILTON, ANGUS	The Nazis Come, x, 29
Japan and Korea, viii, 219	HART, SIR ROBERT
The Orenburg-Tashkent Railway, viii, 33	The Boxer Movement, vii, 267
The Rise of the Young Turks, viii, 233	Haruna, Japanese battleship, x, 263
Hamilton, Richard, v, 35, 36, 38	Hasdrubal, brother of Hannibal, ii, 6
Hamilton, LieutColonel, v, 47, 49, 51, 52, 53	expedition of, ii, 5-6
Hammann, U. S. destroyer, sunk, x, 130	crosses the Pyrenees, ii, 7
Hampden, regiment of, iv, 296	enters Italy, ii, 10
death of, iv, 300	movements of, ii, 12-13
Hampshire, Kitchener lost in sinking of, ix, 10	his message to Hannibal, ii, 13
Hancock, General, vii, 68, 71, 76, 77	retreat of, ii, 16-17
Hand writing on the wall, i, 165	prepares for battle, ii, 17-18
Hanifism, ii, 209	death of, ii, 20
Hannibal, invades Italy, i, 332	Hasdrubal, Carthaginian general, ii, 31
genius of, ii, 5	massacres prisoners, ii, 31-32

Hasdrubal, surrenders to Scipio, ii, 34 Hâshim, Mohammed's grandfather, 11, 205, 207 Hassan Bey, vi, 76 Hassan, Gazi, v, 240 Hassan Pacha, harangue of, v, 306 Hastings, Count of Chartres, ii, 264 Hastings, Warren, ix, 297 Governor of Bengal, v, 245 resigns powers, v, 302 trial of, v, 312 Havana, captured by the English, v, 211 Havelock, Henry, vii, 3 Hawaii annexed to United States, vii, 204 first Territorial Legislature of, vii, 279 joined to mainland by air, ix, 251, 254 attacked by Japan, x, 85, 110 (See also Pearl Harbor) Hawke, Admiral, v, 205 Hawkins, John, iv, 178 Hawkins, Lieut. Wm. D., heroism of, x, 190 Hawkwood, Sir John, iii, 209 Hay, John, at Pan-American Conference, viii, policy of open door for China, ix, 272 Hayti, independence of, vi, 90 HEATH, RICHARD The Great Divorce in France, viii, 129 HECKER, J. F. C. The Black Death, iii, 139 Hegenberger and Maitland, flight of, ix, 254 Hegira, The, ii, 205 Heights of Abraham, the, v, 208 Heilungkiang, province of, ix, 262 Held, Heinrich, ix, 282 Helena, mother of Constantine, ii, 153 Helena, damaged at Pearl Harbor, x, 106 Heligoland, vi, 139 ceded to Germany, vii, 159 surrendered by Nazis, x, 347, 349 Hellenic League, the, i, 232 Hellenic Republic. (See Greece) Hellespont, the, ii, 157 Hellfire Pass, x, 146 Helvetic Confederation, vi, 119 Helvetic Republic, vi, 55 (See also Switzerland) Hengest, landing of, ii, 182 Henlein, Konrad, Nazi-Sudeten leader, ix, 345, 351-352, 354

Henry III., the Black, goes to Rome, ii, 312 Henry VI., Emperor, iii, 9, 12 Henry II. (England), wars of, iii, 48 Henry III. (England), death of, in, 73-74 ignores the Provisions, 111, 64 pledges kingdom to the Pope, iii, 61 bravery of, iii, 68-69 Henry V. (England), claims France, iii, 190 invades France, iii, 202 at Agincourt, iii, 204 rewards after Agincourt, iii, 208 conquers Normandy, iii, 209 Henry VI. (England), King of France, iii, 200 Henry VII, (England). (See Richmond, Earl of) treaty with Hans of Denmark, iii, 119 Henry VIII. (England), at Field of Cloth of Gold, iv, 52 destroys monasteries, iv. 80 Henry III. (France), alliance with Henry of Navarre, iv, 192, 194, 196 Henry of Navarre, iv, 183 wedding of, iv, 185 becomes Henry IV. of France, iv, 198 Henry IV. (France), defeats League, iv, 198 Henry the Fowler, ii, 279 Henry I. (Germany), refuses consecration, ii, 279-280 frontier campaigns of, ii, 280, 282 strengthens German towns, ii, 281 insults the Hungarians, ii, 282 defeats Hungarians, ii, 283 death of, ii, 285 Henry IV. (Germany), ii, 313 policy of, ii, 315 wins victory at Hohenburg, ii, 316 holds council at Worms, ii, 321 excommunicated and deposed, ii, 322 forced to submit, ii, 324 goes to Pavia, ii, 325 death of, ii, 350 Henry of Lorraine, Duke of Guise, iv, 185, 189 Heraclidæ, the, i, 56 Heraclius saves Constantinople, ii, 204 Herbert, Sidney, vi, 336 Herbert, Sir Walter, iii, 270 Hercules, Pillars of, ii, 227 Hercynian forest, the, ii, 84

Hermann, Bishop of Metz, ii, 323 Herman of Salza, heads Teutonic Order, iii, 56 Herminie, Princess, marries ex-Kaiser, ix, 200 Hermippus, i, 35 Hernici, wars of, with Rome, i, 296 HERODOTUS The Conquest of Lydia, i, 153 Heroes of Chighitta, the, iii, 185 Herrera, Posada, vii, 96 Herring fisheries, iii, 120 Hersilia, i, 91, 96 Hertz, Heinrich, vii, 190 Hertz ray, vii, 185 Herzegovina, vii, 130, 142; viii, 241, 242; ix, 68 Hess, Rudolf, ix, 349 HESSELLS, J. H. Invention of Printing, iii, 247 Hevelles, the, conquered by Henry I., ii, 282 Hexham, battle of, iii, 254 Hezekiah, i, 124 prepares for siege of Jerusalem, i, 126 sues for peace, i, 127 Hicks Pasha, vii, 146 Hieromnemon, the, i, 301 Higgins boats, x, 185, 186, 189 Hildebrand, ii, 313 becomes Pope Gregory VII., ii, 316. (See also Gregory VII.) Hill, A. P., vii, 65, 67 HILL, ROBERT T. The Destruction of St. Pierre, vii, 289 Hilliers, Baraguai d', vi, 54 Himmler, Heinrich, Gestapo chief, x, 345, 353, 38x Hindenburg, Paul von, ix, 11, 182 German President, ix, 226, 259, 281 pleads for national solidarity, ix, 285 powers curtailed, ix, 288 decline and death of, ix, 335 Hindenburg, German dirigible, burns, ix, 343-Hindustan, iii, 179, 188; vii, 2, 3 Hipparchus, i, 182, 185, 186 Hippias, i, 182, 185, 211, 213 dream of, i, 214 Hirohito, Emperor of Japan, ix, 242 views Tokyo damage, x, 375-376 retention of, surrender issue, x, 409-411 sends princes to tell of defeat, x, 413

Hiroshima, Japan, atomic bomb dropped on, x, 402, 403, 404 Hirsch, Baron, vii, 159 Hiryu, Jap carrier, blasted in Battle of Midway, x, 118, 119, 121, 122, 123 Hitler, Adolf, defeated in election, ix, 259 Chancellor, ix, 279-280, 285, 292, 334 given dictatorial powers, ix, 286-288, 293 abolishes Reichsrat, ix, 294 government of, approved by Germany, 1x, policies of, ix, 313-316, 317, 336-343, 348, 356; x, 1-6, 12-13, 16, 19, 22, 78 abrogates Versailles Treaty, ix, 343 seizes Austria, ix, 344 maneuvers against Czechoslovakia, ix, 345, dictates terms at Munich, ix, 355, 357-362; occupies the Sudetenland, ix, 362 annexes Czechoslovakia, ix, 380 starts World War II, x, 6 forms Berlin-Rome-Tokyo axis, x, 75 invades Russia, x, 77 described by Churchill, x, 79, 84 succeeded by Admiral Doenitz as Fuehrer, x, Berchtesgaden, retreat of, taken, x, 351 death of, reported, x, 352-354 German opinion of, at war's end, x, 357-359 Hitler Dictatorship, The, ix, 279 Hobby, Oveta Culp, director of WACS, x, 111 HOBSON, GEORGE ANDREW The Victoria Falls Bridge, viii, 123 Hoche pacifies La Vendêe, vi, 43 Hochkirch, battle of, v, 196, 204 Hodges, Ensign A. R., x, 265 Hodza plan, ix, 351 Hohenburg on the Unstrut, battle of, ii, 316 Hohenzollern, William, ix, 95, 140, 200 HOLBROOK, E. ST. G. Battle of Mukden, viii, 77 The Siege of Port Arthur, viii, 65 Holland. (See Netherlands) Holland Tunnel, opened, ix, 256 Holled-Smith, Colonel, vii, 149 Holy Alliance, the, vi, 177 true meaning of, vi, 179, 193 Holy Lance, discovery of the, ii, 345

Holy League, the, iv, 7, 172, 189 defeated, iv, 201 against Turks, iv, 329 Holy Roman Empire, end of the, vi, 119 Holy See, an international power, 11, 250 Holy Synod, the, in Russia, v, 143 Holy War, the, ii, 211 against the Phocians, i, 297 third, i, 297 Homer, i, 45 Homicidal mania, vi, 15, 24 Honduras, Republic of, vi, 239 Hong Kong, ix, 364 ceded to the English, vi, 247 typhoon at, viii, 216 isolated by Jap occupation of Canton, ix, 364 preparations in, for war, ix, 366-367 surrenders to Japan, x, 110 Honolulu, x, 125, 126 Honolulu, damaged at Pearl Harbor, x, 106 Honoria, the Princess, ii, 169, 177 Hoover, Herbert, ix, 256, 291, 326 directs food relief, ix, 95 elected President, ix, 257 Horatius, i, 240 Horatius Cocles, i, 203 Horn, Admiral, iv, 153, 157 Hornet, U. S. carrier, x, 114, 132, 257 Torpedo Squadron 8 of, x, 115, 116, 120 lost in Battle of Santa Cruz Islands, x, 133 Horsa, ii, 182, 186 Horst Wessel House, ix, 283 Hoskins, Capt. John M., heroism of, trying to save the Princeton, x, 268-269 Hospitallers, ii, 350 Hostilius, i, 91 House of Burgesses, Virginia, v, 259 House of Chimham, ii, 74 How America Went to War, ix, 15 Howard, John, v, 163 Howard, General, vii, 68, 71 Howard of Effingham, Lord, iv, 177, 179 Howe, Loid, v, 285 Hubertsburg, peace of, v, 198 Hudson, Henry, set adrift, iv, 258 arrives in New York Bay, iv, 246 sails up Hudson River, iv, 247 voyages of 1609 and 1610, iv, 257

Hudson's Last Voyage, iv, 255 Huejar, sack of, iii, 345 Hugenberg, German minister, ix, 288 Hugh, Abbot of Cluny, ii, 324, 325 Hugh, of Vermandois, ii, 337, 342, 345 Hughes, David, vii, 130 Hugo, Victor, vi, 315 Huguenots, the, iv, 158, 183, 186, 189, 273 cruelties suffered by, iv, 333, 337 flight of the, iv, 335 Hull, Cordell, ix, 326; x, 398 at Moscow Conference, x, 182 Huluku, enters Persia, iii, 60 Humber, estuary of the, ii, 192 Humbert, King, assassinated, vii, 266 Humboldt, voyage of, vi, 60 HUME, DAVID Battle of Agincourt, iii, 201 Battle of Crecy, iii, 123 End of Wars of the Roses, iii, 260 Sir Walter Raleigh's Expedition, iv. 261 Suppression of the Greater Monasteries, iv. 80 Suppression of the Templars, iii, 95 The Exclusion Bill and Habeas Corpus Act, iv, 317 HUME, MARTIN A. S. The Expulsion of Queen Isabella, vii, 93 Hundred Days, the, vi, 172 Hundred Years' War, iii, 112 Hungarians, invade Pannonia, ii, 274-275 the, ii, 280, 350 truce with Henry I., ii, 281 invade Germany, ii, 282, 288 defeat of the, ii, 283, 288 defeated by Turks, iv, 87 Hungary, iii, 196; vi, 279; ix, 69, 85 Sigismund king of, ili, 191, 192 invaded by Turks, iv, 323 insurrection in, v, 76, 77 Turks lose last foothold in, v, 131 and Maria Theresa, v, 166, 168 revolution of, vi, 281-282 claims of, upon Czechoslovakia, x, 14 joins Axis Nations, x, 75 declares war on Russia, x, 85 surrenders to the Allies, x, 313 Hungerford, Sir Walter, joins Earl of Richmond, iii, 271

Huniades defeats Mohammed II., iii, 254
Huns, retreat of the, ii, 169
attack the Goths, ii, 168
the, ii, 269
HUNTER, SIR WILLIAM WILSON
The Conquest of Mysore, v, 335
HURD, ARCHIBALD S.
Battle of the Sea of Japan, viii, 89
Huss, John, burned alive for heresy, iii, 195
execution of, Bohemian national insult, iii, 196; iv, 270
Hussinitz, James, iii, 196
Hussites, the, iii, 199
Hussite wars, beginning of the, iii, 197
Huythaca, i, 12

I

Ibrahim, vi, 49, 205 Iceland, U. S. occupies, by agreement, x, 85 Icilius, i, 236, 239 Ida, i, 16 Ida, rears Bernieia, English capital, ii, 194 le Shima, Jap surrender envoys sent to, x, 412 Igor, assassination of, ii, 276 leads against Tzargrad, ii, 276 Ildico, wife of Attila, ii, 178 Illumination, ancient, vi, 213-214 gas and electric, introduced, vi, 215 Illyria, i, 332; ii, 44 Illyricum, Sarmatians invade, ii, 156 Immigration Bill, ix, 224-225 Imperator, launched, viii, 354 Implements, early use of, i, 6-8 Incas, the, iv, 16-17 Independence, Declaration of, v, 271 Independents, rise of the, iv, 299 Index, the, iv, 104 India, first sighted by Da Gama, iii, 323; vi, 241 Hindu-Moslem relations in, iv, 114 French influence in, v, 202, 336 Bengal, conquered by Clive, v, 202-203 Mysore, conquered by the British, v, 335-340 opium trade of, vi, 242 mutiny in, vii, 1-6 anti-European riot in, viii, 231 non-cooperation movement in, ix, 198, 200 civil disobedience in, ix, 258; x, 133

India, new constitution for, ix, 307 population of, x, 80 (See also East India Company) Indian Mutiny, The, vii, 1 Indians, of the New World, iii, 301; v, 283 on Manhattan Island, iv, 246, 250 Indies, Council of the, iii, 350 Indifference, laws to prevent, i, 115, 116 Indulgence, Declaration of, v, 16, 20 Inkerman, battle of, vi, 334, 347-355 Innocent I., ii, 164 Innocent III., Pope, iii, 12, 33 opposes Fourth Crusade, iii, 15 deposes John of England, iii, 42 Inoculation for small-pox, v, 144 Inquisition, iii, 35, 268; iv, 104, 105, 156 wrongs inflicted on England, iv, 172 resumes activity, vi, 187 dissolved, vi, 188 Inquisitors in Granada, iii, 340, 346-347 work of the, iii, 285 Institutes of Justinian, ii, 202 Inter-American Peace Conference, ix, 332 International Arbitration, Hague Court of, vii, International Law, American Society of, viii, 146 Institute of, viii, 216 International Opium Congress, viii, 201 International Union of American Republics, viii, 213 Into Tibet, viii, 19 Invasion of Italy by Attila, Foundation of the Republic of Venice and Destruction of Attila's Empire, ii, 171 Invasion of Russia, The, x, 77 Invasion of Tamerlane, The, iii, 179 Invasion, The, x, 215 Invasions, amphibious, in World War II Guadalcanal, x, 132 North Africa, x, 133, 135, 147-148 Sicily, x, 171 Italy, x, 172, 173-181, 214 Bougainville, x, 182 Gilbert Islands, x, 182, 183-192 Marshall Islands, x, 214 France, x, 214, 215-248, 249 Saipan and Guam islands, x, 240 Peleliu and Morotai islands, x, 234 Philippine Islands, x, 255, 312, 313

Invasions, amphibious, in World War II Walcheren Island, x, 312 Iwo Jima, x, 313, 315-330 Okinawa, x, 331 Borneo, x, 401 Invention of Printing, iii, 247 Invention of the Steamboat, The, vi, 91 Invention of the Steam Engine, The, v, 227 Investitures, ii, 313, 320-321, 349 Invisible light, vii, 181 Ionian Islands, join Greece, vii, 53 Iowa, U. S. battleship, x, 413 Iran, official name of Pcrsia, ix, 295 Iraq (Irak), submits to Arabs, ii, 221 Feisal II., succeeds King Ghazi in, ix, 381 Ireland, ix, 8, 15 conquered by Strongbow, ii, 350 and Queen Elizabeth, iv, 205-207 Spanish and Papal invasion of, iv, 208 English conquest of, iv, 210 colonization of Ulster in, iv, 211-212 invaded by Cromwell, iv, 316 invaded by William of Orange, v, 29 aided by France against England, v, 31; vi, defeated by the English at Boyne, v, 36-38 Dublin revolt in, ix, 10, 199 sought by Lindbergh, ix, 245 (See also Irish Free State) Irene, the Empress, ii, 257 Iris, ii, 58 Irish, courage of the, iv, 206 army of the, v, 31-32 rout of the, v, 36 Irish Free State, The, ix, 185 Irish Free State, Treaty with England, ix, 185-190, 197, 198 Constitution of, ix, 198, 200 joins League of Nations, ix, 216 boundary of, with Ulster, ix, 226 election of de Valera in, ix, 259, 292 Irish Home Rule Bill, viii, 310, 380; ix, 7, 183 Irish Land League, vii, 144 Iron crown of Lombardy, vi, 89 Irrigation, value of, viii, 143 Irving, Sir Henry, death of, viii, 127 IRVING, WASHINGTON The Discovery of America, iii, 293 Isaac Comnenus, iii, 15, 18, 19

Isabella of Castile, iii, 268, 277, 281 Isabella of Spain, vi, 231; vii, 83, 92, 93 Isagoras, i, 191 Isaiah, prophecy of, i, 124, 130 Isdraelı, Bertuccio, iii, 157 Isis, the New, ii, 56 Islam, system of, ix, 385-386 eliminated from Turkey, ix, 387-392 Islamism, i, 42; iii, 348-349; iv, 114 Ismael, siege of, v, 310-311 Issus, battle of, i, 311 Isthmian Canal Treaty, vii, 279 Italian Adventure, The: Imperialists on Parade, ix, 297 Italian Colonization on the Red Sea, vii, 151 Italian Renaissance, iii, 327 Italo-Turkish War, viii, 290, 310 Italy, subjugation of, i, 296 under the Ostrogoths, ii, 197-202 Justinian's reign in, ii, 202-204 the Normans in, ii, 266-267 conspiracy in, iii, 76 ravaged by Turks, iii, 268 invaded by Charles VIII. of France, iii, 307 French driven from, iii, 316 Holy League formed by, against France, iv, 7 conquered by Charles V. of Spain, iv, 75-78 Reformation in, iv, 99-109 merged into a kingdom under Bonaparte, vi, ruled by Hapsburgs of Austria, vi, 190-195 revolution of 1848 in, vi, 282-283 Napoleon III. in, vii, 9-15 unification of, vii, 17-22 end of Pope's temporal power in, vii, 23 founds colony of Erytrea, vii, 150 and Abyssinia, vii, 151-158; ix, 297-306 connected with Switzerland by Simplon tunnel, viii, 73-76 eruption of Mt. Vesuvius in, viii, 165-174 at war with Turkey, viii, 290 annexes Tripoli and Cyrenaica, viii, 310 invaded in World War I, ix, 20-21 naval tonnage of, ix, 192, 194, 196 Fascists come to power in, ix, 199, 200 mobilizes army, ix, 307 annexes Abyssinia, ix, 308 policy of, in Spanish civil war, ix, 312, 313, 315-319

Italy, Axis partner of Germany, ix, 340, 345, 349; x, 26 conquers Albania, ix, 381 declares war on France and England, x, 64 invades Greece, x, 75 declares war on the United States, x, 110 invaded by Allies, x, 172, 173-181, 214 surrenders to the Allies, x, 172 Crown Prince Umberto control of, x, 214 Mussolini executed in, x, 339 Germans in, surrender, x, 339, 347-348, 350 (See also Rome, Florence, Genoa, Venice) Iw Sukehiro, vii, 170, 177 lvan of Russia, iii, 255 lvri, battle of, iv, 198 lwo Jima, x, 381 invasion of, x, 313, 315 difficulties of landing on, x, 317, 318-320 Japanese defenses on, x, 321-324 lapanese weapons used on, x, 327-328 American losses, x, 329-330 lyéyoshi, the shôgun, vi, 325, 327

J

Jackson, General Andrew, vi, 198 Jacobin club, v, 318, 319 Jacobinism, vi, 179 Jacobins, the, leaders of, v, 320 character of, vi, 15, 18 Jacobites, V, 117, 121 Jacquerie, The, iii, 161 Jacquerie, the rising of the, iii, 162 overthrown, iii, 167 Jacques Bonhomme, iii, 162 Jaffa, capture of, vi, 72 Jaffier, Antoine, vi, 47 Jalula, battle of, ii, 224 James I. (England) and letter regarding Gunpowder Plot, iv, 230 James II. (England), accession of, iv, 329 humiliation of, v, 15, 19 raises Irish troops, v, 21 flight of, v, 24 retreat of, v, 30 at Donore, v, 31 army of, v, 31, 62 James IV. (Scotland), invades England, iv, 19 death of, iv, 24

James, the Old Pretender, v, 120 arrives in Scotland, v, 129 Jameson Raid, vii, 179 Jamestown (Va.) founded, iv, 217 Janiculum, the, i, 290 Janizaries, the, iii, 243 revolt of, v, 67 massacre of, vi, 217 Japan, iv, 109 Dutch receive permission to trade with, iv, 258 Tokugawa dynasty in, vi, 321-322, 327 Commodore Perry's mission to, vi, 323-324 the opening of, to foreign commerce, vi, 327-328; vii, 7 abolishes feudal system, vii, 108 sets up constitutional government, vii, 159 position of, in the East, vii, 163 navy of, defeats Chinese fleet, vii, 169-178 at War with Russia, viii, 16 besieges and captures Port Arthur, viii, 65-70 wins the battle for Mukden, viii, 77-86 defeats Russia in Sea of Japan, viii, 89-98 gains made by, in peace treaty, viii, 120 and Korea, viii, 219-229 ultimatum to Germany, ix, 6 extends leases on Dalny and Port Arthur, ix, withdraws from Siberia, ix, 199 reindorses 21 demands, ix, 201 naval limitations for, ix, 192, 193, 196 signs Five-Power Treaty, ix, 216 Hirohito becomes emperor of, ix, 242 conquers Manchuria, ix, 261-265 political objectives of, in Manchuria, ix, 265, 266 answers Lytton Report, ix, 278 withdraws from League of Nations, ix, 293 Panay sunk by, ix, 344 war of, in China, ix, 363-379; x, 24 intentions of, in Asia, ix, 370 in border warfare with Russia, ix, 380 ioins Berlin-Rome Axis, x, 75 attacks Pearl Harbor, x, 92-108 United States declares war on, x, 109 seizes Wake Island, Hong Kong, Singapore, Rangoon and the Philippines, x, 110 defeated in Battle of Midway, x, 115-132 shelled by American warships, x, 214

conquered by the Turks, ii, 334 Japan, bombed by Superfortresses, x, 249, 312, 356, 386, 401 siege of, ii, 346 defeated in battle for Leyte Gulf, x, 260-300 assize of, ii, 349 conditions in, from B-29 raids, x, 371-386 capture by Saladin, ii, 350 hit by atomic bombs, x, 402 Richard's march to, iii, 8 burned by Turks, iii, 60 offers to surrender, x, 408, 409 Allied surrender terms for, x, 410-411 Jesuit schools, iv, 103, 270; v, 23 Jesuits, iv, 101, 173, 243; vi, 187 accepts Allied terms, x, 412 occupation troops land in, x, 413 Order of the, iv, 101-102 political influence, iv, 103; v, 26 surrenders aboard the Missouri, x, 414 found mission in Canada, iv, 258 surrenders in China, x, 415 (See also Society of Jesus) (See also Japanese) Jeunesse Dorée, the, vi, 34 Japan and Korea, viii, 219 Jewish blood in Spanish nobility, iii, 286 Japan Goes Fishing, ix, 363 Jewish International Conference, viii, 154 Japanese, "Monroe Doctrine," ix, 266 Jewish money lenders, vi, 180; vii, 338, 343 treachery, x, 87 execute American fliers, x, 171 Jews, heroism of the, ii, 121 and Christians, law regarding, ii, 114-115 snipers, x, 187, 188, 189 Imperial Marines, x, 191 and Mohammed, ii, 215 rewarded by Tarik, ii, 233 island defenses, x, 191, 321-323, 325, 328 in England, massacre of, ii, 350 fleet, x, 263 persecutions of the, iii, 149; vii, 337-340 end resistance on Leyte, x, 312 edict against the, iii, 287 prisoners, x, 316 cruelties to the, iii, 287, 290-291 weapons, x, 324, 327, 328 expelled from Spain, iii, 288, 340 dead, on Iwo, x, 329 massacred by the Russians, vii, 337, 344 bureaucracy, x, 374 condition of the, in Russia, vii, 339-343, 345 Kamikaze, x, 383 persecuted by the Nazis, ix, 281, 345 war machine, x, 384 riot with Arabs with Palestine, ix, 392 Jarnac, battle of, iv, 183 Jews Expelled from Spain, The, iii, 285 Jaurès, Auguste Marie Joseph Jean, viii, 133 Jingo, origin of word, vii, 136 assassinated, ix, 5 lean Bart, French battleship, x, 148 lits exterminated by Timur, iii, 183 Joan of Arc at Orleans, iii, 211 Jebel Fureidis, ii, 75 Jefferson, President, viii, 135 Joan of Arc, iii, 214, 215 seeks the Dauphin, iii, 216-217 Jehol, province of, ix, 262, 263, 292 enters Orleans, iii, 218 Jellicoe, Admiral, ix, 12 and Charles VII., iii, 225 Jemappes, battle of, v, 320 Jodl, Col. Gen. Gustav, German Chief of Staff, Jemmingen, battle of, iv, 158 x, 344 Jena, battle of, vi, 115 John XXIII., Pope, iii, 173 Jerome of Prague, iii, 195 Jerusalem, ii, 51 abdicates, iii, 193 John (England), takes oath of Crusaders, in, 47 siege of, begins, ii, 120 opposition of, to the Pope, iii, 41 defence of, ii, 121 deposed, iii, 42 horrors of famine in, ii, 124 leagues with northern princes, iii, 42 a furious sortie upon, ii, 126 surrenders crown to Pope, iii, 43 fate of the Sanctuary at, ii, 126, 127, 128 successes of, in France, iii, 45 sack of, ii, 127 siege of the upper city of, ii, 129 vengeance of, iii, 52 death of, iii, 52-53 fall of, ii, 129

John II. (Portugal), iii, 318 jaha VI. (Portugal), vi, 197 ichn, Don, of Austria, iv, 162. (See also Juan of Austria, Don) the of Argyll, iii, 100 John of Gischala, ii, 122, 124 kan of Leyden, iv, 87 hin of Procida, iii, 77 khnson, Ensign Dudley J., of PT 127, x, 272 kuville, Sire de, iti, 12 IONES, EDGAR L. A Letter From Iwo Jima, x, 315 lones, John Paul, viii, 193 IONES, GEORGE E., et al. America's Greatest Naval Battle, x, 257 IONES, RICHARD LLOYD Lewis and Clark Exposition, viii, 135 lonson, Ben, iv, 243 kseph and Mary, journey of, ii, 73 loseph II. of Austria, v, 240, 303, 304-305 losephine, coronation of, vi, 89 divorce of, vi, 118 brephine Ford, North Pole airplane, ix, 233 losephus, ii, 120 Joshua ben Gamala, ii, 125 Juan of Austria, Don, iv, 146, 148, 162 luirez, Benito Pablo, Mexican reformer, vii, 47 Judah, Sennacherib pillages, i, 127 Judaism, i, 19 Judea, a Roman province, ii, 108 lugoslavia. (See Yugoslavia) Jugurtha, ii, 44, 48 Julian, Count, ii, 231, 232 entertains Musa, ii, 235 General of the Goths, ii, 227 disgrace of, ii, 228 seeks aid from Moors and Arabs, ii, 229 Juhan, Emperor, death of, ii, 168 Juliana, Netherlands Crown Princess, ix, 332 Jahus II., Pope, iv, 4, 7 Juneau, U. S. cruiser, lost, x, 284 Junius Letters, v, 235 Juno, Temple of, i, 79 Junto formed, v, 66 lusteius, M., ii, 62 Justin I., Emperor of the East, ii, 198 Justin II., succeeds Justinian, ii, 203 Justinian, Emperor, ii, 195 Code of, ii, 202

Justinian, digest of, ii, 202
Pandects of, ii, 202
"Novels" of, ii, 203
death of, ii, 203
Justiniani, John, conduct of, iii, 244
Jutland Bank, Battle of, ix, 10

K

Kaabah, description of the, ii, 205 Mohammed resolves to visit, ii, 211 Kaga, Jap carrier, sunk at Midway, x, 117, 126 Kalinin Bay, hit by Jap shells and bombs, x, 292, 295 Kamikaze, "Divine Wind," x, 383 Kancohe Bay, naval air station at, x, 92, 94, 97 attacked by Japanese planes, x, 93 Kapilavastu, i, 99 Kara Mustafa, invades Hungary and Austria, iv, 323, 325 death of, iv, 328 Karl Liebknecht House, ix, 283 Karlsruhe, German cruiser, sunk, x 41 Karpowka, Russian village, retaken, x, 159 left a junk yard by the Germans, x, 160 gathering point for prisoners, x, 169 repairs started in, x, 170 KARR, HENRY SETON The Separation of Norway and Sweden, viii. Kars, fall of, vi, 342 capture of, vii, 134 KAY, DAVID The Conquest of Algeria, vi, 219 KEELING, ELEONORE D'ESTERRE-The Peace Conference, vii, 247 Keitel, Field Marshal Wilhelm, head of the Wehrmacht, surrenders, x, 345 Keith, General, v, 149 Kellerberg, Baron, vii, 11 Kellerman, vi, 6, 7, 10, 13 Keilog-Briand Pact, ix, 270 signed and ratified, ix, 257 Japan denies violating, ix, 262, 278 purpose of, ix, 271 Kemal, Mustapha, genius of, ix, 205, 383-392 President of Turkey, ix, 216 death of, ix, 362 Kenilworth, barons at, iii, 72, 73

Kenney, Lieut. Gen. George C., of Fifth Air KNIGHT, CHARLES Battle of St. Quentin and the Loss of Calais. Force, x, 259 Kent, ii, 188 Kerensky, Russian Minister of War and Pre-Danish Conquest of England, ii, 291 Destruction of Tea in Boston Harbor, v, 247 mier, ix, 20 Field of Cloth of Gold, iv, 49 government of, overthrown, ix, 21 Kesselring, Field Marshal Albert, German com-The Gunpowder Plot, iv, 227 The Invention of the Steam-Engine, v, 227 mander in Italy, x, 348 surrender delegation of, x, 351 The South Sea Bubble, v, 133 The Surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, v. Ketteler, Baron von, vii, 265, 271 Key West Railroad, viii, 310 295 Khan of the Keraites. (See Prester John) Knights of Calatrava, ii, 350 Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, iii, 55, 94; iv, Kharkov, Russia, taken by Germans, x, 85 Khosrou, Persian, ii, 213 are given Malta, iv, 87 Khyber Pass, vi, 247 Knights Templar, iii, 55, 95-98 Kief, ii, 274 Knockout at Midway, The, x, 113 Kiel, mutiny at, ix, 92 Kiel Canal, ix, 4, 115, 161 Knox, John, iv, 128 saves the Kirk, iv, 135 Kimberley, Boers attack, vii, 245 Kimmel, Admiral, Pacific Fleet Commander at Kobe, bombed, x, 376 Koht, Foreign Minister of Norway, x, 31, 35, Pearl Harbor, measures taken by, x, 88, 89, 91 Koliyans, the, i, 99 Kindling, methods of, vi, 304 King Edward VII., viii, 257 Komura, viii, 114 Kongo, x, 263 King William Land, vi, 255, 256; viii, 51, 53, Konigsmarck murdered, v, 66 59, 60 Koran. (See Qur'an) KINGLAKE, A. W. Korea, surrenders to Japan, viii, 217 The Battle of Inkerman, vi, 347 Kings Bay, base for arctic flights, ix, 226, 231, Japanese methods in, viii, 219 trade controlled by Japan, viii, 220 233, 235, 239, 240 Russo-Japanese treaty, viii, 221 Kingstown, Jamaica, destroyed by earthquake, aversion for Japanese, viii, 222 viii, 217 Mikado's letter, viii, 223 Kinkaid, Byrd's motor engineer, ix, 234 Japanese transaction repudiated, viii, 224 Kinkaid, Admiral, x, 263, 271, 273 accedes to Japanese demands, viii, 225 Kinsel, General, x, 349 Kirin, Manchurian province, ix, 262 treaty with United States, viii, 226 Japanese usurpation, viii, 227; ix, 276 Kirk, Alan, x, 229 signs treaty with Japan, viii, 227 Kishineff, massacre at, vii, 335 Kosciusko, Thaddeus, ix, 54 Kiska, occupied, x, 171 Kossuth, vi, 279, 280 Kitchener, vii, 204, 245; viii, 290; x, 8 Kotzebue, assassination of, vi, 181 Earl, British Secretary of State for War, ix, 6 Krasnoi, battle of, vi, 135 lost at sca, ix, 10 Krosigk, Lutz Schwerin von, broadcasts of, Kitkun Bay, x, 286, 288, 289, 291, 294, x, 342, 346-7 295 Kit's Coty House, ii, 185 Krudener, Baroness, the, vi, 177 Kublai Khan, the Polos visit, iii, 84 Kitty Hawk, first airplane flight at, viii, 368 and young Marco Polo, iii, 87 Kleber, General, vi, 72, 75, 79 Kudur-Lagamer, i, 31 assassinated, vi, 90 Ku-Klux, vii, 92 Klondike, gold discovered in, vii, 204

Kulm, battle of, vi, 166
Kume Island, Americans occupy, x, 401
Kunersdorf, battle of, v, 204
Kung, Prince, surrender of, vi, 246
Kuthuks Kainardji, peace of, v, 269
Kut-el-Amara, British surrender at, ix, 10, 12
Kutusoff, General, vi, 128, 130, 131, 132, 135, 138
Kwajalein, x, 214
Kwang Hsu, vii, 267
Kwangsi, ix, 275
Kweichow, ix, 275

L

Labarum, the, ii, 155 Labor Cabinet in England, ix, 257 Labor-saving machines, vi, 307 labrador, 120,000 square miles of, awarded to Newfoundland, ix, 256 Lacedemonians, i, 67, 68, 69, 190, 271, 273 Ladrones, the, iv, 44 Ladysmith, vii, 245 Lafayette, Marquis de, v, 296, 315 fight of, v, 320; vi, 6, 7 La Fronde, iv, 305 La Grande Mademoiselle, iv, 307, 313 La Hogue, battle of, v, 55-65 Lahore, conquest of, by Akbar, iv, 187 Lainez, Iago, iv, 101, 108 Lake Erie, battle of, vi, 155-163 Lakehurst, N. J., Graf Zeppelin reaches, ix, 257 Hindenburg burns near mooring at, ix, 343, 344 Lamarmora, General, vii, 9 LAMARTINE, ALPHONSE DE The Russian Conquest of the Crimea, v, 303 Lambert, Count, Viceroy of Poland, vii, 35 Lamoricière, General, vi, 230, 274, 315 Land League, Irish, vii, 144 Landais, Peter, iii, 269 Landon, Alfred M., Republican candidate for President, ix, 309 Lands, division of, i, 60 LANG, ANDREW Bannockburn, iii, 99 Battle of Flodden Field, iv, 19 Langton, Stephen, Archbishop, iii, 44 Language, beginnings of, i, 2.3

Languedoc, iii, 33 conquest of, iii, 39 rebellion in, iv, 337 Lannes, General, v1, 72 Larancha, i, 26 La Rochelle, iv, 183 surrenders, iv, 292 Lars Porsena, i, 203 La Salle sails down Mississippi, iv, 320 Las Casas, Fra Bartolomé, iv, 14 Last Sigh of the Moor, iii, 282 Latent heat, Black's theory of, v, 230 Lateran Treaty, ix, 257 Latin America, need of development, viii, 209, German propaganda in, x, 56 Latin Kingdom of Jerusalem, iii, 74 Latin Empire of Constantinople, iii, 21 Latins make war on Rome, i, 205 Latvia, enters into pact with Russia, ix, 294 joins Russia, x, 75 Laud, William, impeachment of, iv, 293 LAUGHTON, L. C. CARR The Dogger Bank and After, viii, 41 Lausanne, Treaty of, ix, 200, 203, 204, 208, 209, 210, 215, 216, 260 Senate defeats ratification of, ix, 255 Lautrec, Marshal, iv, 59, 71, 73 Lauzun, v, 34 Laval, Pierre, ix, 319 Law, Bonar, becomes Prime Minister, ix, 200 Law, John, v, 131 failure of, v, 132, 141 Law on Debts, ix, 389

Law of Jews and Christians, ii, 115
Law of Nations, i, 286
Lawrence, Dr. Ernest O., cyclotron of, x, 407
Lawrence, John, vii, 3
Laws, i, 232, 233
of Lycurgus, i, 59
of Solon, i, 111
marriage, i, 116
to prevent indifference, i, 115, 116
concerning wills, i, 117
regarding games, i, 118
trade, i, 118
naturalization, i, 119
regarding oil, i, 119
regarding entertainments, i, 120

Laws, the new, i, 241	Lee, General Robert, vii, 30, 65
Roman, ii, 46	Lefevre, iv, 28
of Genoa, iv, 82	LEGGE, JAMES
of Justinian ii, 202	Confucius, i, 141
	The Opening of China, vi, 241
of navigation, v, 216	Legion of Honor, the, vi, 86
of Zingis, iii, 25	
(Code Napoléon), vi, 87	Le Havre, x, 254
(March), vi, 282	Leicester, ii, 193
Laws of Lycurgus, i, 59	Leigh-Mallory, Sir Trafford, x, 221, 223, 224
Laws of Solon, i, 111	225
Layard, British Ambassador to Turkey, vii, 135	Leipsic, disputation of, iv, 30
Laying of the Atlantic Cable, vii, 85	battle of, iv, 276
LCT's, x, 178, 180, 319	Le Mans, France, Wilbur Wright demonstrates
League, The, iv, 189	airplane at, ix, 249
League, The Catholic, iv, 270	Lend-lease program starts, x, 76, 77, 83
of Greek States against Macedon, ii, 21	supplies to Russia, x, 141-142
Hanseatic, the, iii, 117, 121	supplies to 8th Army, x, 143
The Holy, iv, 7, 172	program ends, x, 408
between Lübeck and Hamburg, iii, 117	Lenin, Nikolai, death of, ix, 219-224
of Mallen, iii, 22	Leningrad, ix, 230; x, 85
the Southern (Italy), iii, 308	LENORMANT, FRANCOIS
League of Cambray, iv, 1-12, 58; vi, 45	The Deluge, i, 11
League of Cambray, iv, 1	First Destruction of Nineveh, i, 71
League of Nations, covenant of, ix, 96-114	The Founding of Carthage, i, 53
Executive Council, ix, 98	Leo, Bishop of Rome, ii, 176
permanent secretariat, ix, 99	Leo, the Emperor, ii, 249
admission to, ix, 100	Leo, the Deacon, ii, 276
to reduce armaments, ix, 100	Leo I., ii, 164, 165
arbitration necessary, ix, 102	Leo III., succeeds Pope Hadrian, ii, 254
court of international justice, ix, 103, 183,	attack on, ii, 254
242, 256, 268	motives of, ii, 256
disputes of non-members, ix, 106	separated from the Eastern Empire, ii, 246
to develop backward peoples, ix, 107	Leo VI., the Philosopher, ii, 275
mandatories, ix, 109	Leo X., authorizes sale of indulgences, iv, 29
treaties to be registered, ix, 110	treaty of, with Charles V., iv, 57
Torriente, President of assembly, ix, 216	death of, iv, 58
Council penalizes Greece, ix, 226	Leo XIII., Pope, vii, 357
United States and, ix, 242	twenty-fifth anniversary of, vii, 334-335
Germany enters, ix, 242	is elected Pope, vii, 366
Sino-Japanese question, ix, 262, 266-270,	talents and characteristics of, vii, 367
275, 292	Leo XIII., A Retrospect, vii, 359
appoints Manchurian Commission, ix, 267	Leonidas, i, 209, 221
declares sanctions against Italy, ix, 307	Leontis, i, 218
League of the Balkan States, The, viii, 375	Leopold, Duke of Austria, captures Richard
Lease-Lend Bill, x, 75-76	Cœur de Lion, iii, 8
extended to include Russia, x, 83	takes Crusaders to Germany, iii, 3
(See also Lend-lease.)	Leopold, Emperor, iv, 321
Lebrun, Charles François, vi, 84	and Sobieski, iv, 324
Leczinski, Stanislaus, v, 165	Leopold, Prince of Hohenzollern, vii, 117
December, Outmonton, 1, 103	

Leopold III., King of Belgium, ix, 294, 328 Lincoln, Abraham, abolishes slavery, vii, 54 surrenders Army to Germany, x, 59, 60, upon slavery, vii, 55 message of 1862, vii, 59 Lepanto, battle of, iv, 148 and his divided cabinet, vii, 62 Lepidus, ü, 51, 52, 56 and General Meade, vii, 79 Lerin, the Count, cruelty of, iii, 346 assassinated, vii, 80 Lesseps, de, vi, 355; vii, 111, 379 Lindbergh, Charles Augustus, transatlantic Letter from Iwo Jima, A, x, 315 flight of, ix, 243 Leucopetra, battle of, ii, 36 takes off from Roosevelt Field, ix, 245 Leuctra, battle of, i, 296 significance of flight of, ix, 246, 252 Leuthen, battle of, v, 195, 204 personality of, ix, 254, 255 Levant, ix, 204, 205, 208, 210, 215 Lindiswara, the, ii, 193 Linevitch, General, viii, 86, 108 in empire, ix, 206 Lion of the North, the, v, 92 Levant Company, v, 175 Levantine people, ix, 203 Lippe, ii, 82 Lippmann, Gabriel, vii, 200 Levine, Charles, ix, 246 Lewes, battle of, iii, 68 Liprandi, General, vi, 340 Lewis and Clark Exposition, viii, 135 Lisbon, earthquake at, v, 185 Lewis of Nassau, iv, 158, 184 Lischer, Carl, x, 304 Lexington (Mass.), British retreat from, v, 266 Lisle, Rouget de, v, 320 Lexington, U. S. carrier, x, 257 Lister, vii, 80 Leiden, University of, founded, iv, 161 Lithuania, claims of, ix, 55 Memel assigned to, ix, 201 siege of, iv, 161 Leyte Island, x, 255, 259-261, 263, 285, 286, in pact with Russia, ix, 294 accedes to Polish demands, ix, 345 287, 293, 300, 312 cedes Memel to Germany, ix, 381 Leva, Antonio de, iv, 74 Liberation of Genoa: Andrea Doria, iv, 79 joins Russia, x, 64, 75 "Little America," ix, 308 Liberia, ix, 113, 133 Litvinov (Litvinoff), Maxim, x, 12 Libertines, the, iv, 37 Liudprand, King of Lombards, ii, 249 Liberty ship construction, x, 138 Livingstone, David, vii, 129 Libya, ii, 36; x, 142, 146 discovers Victoria Falls, viii, 123 Lichfield, ii, 193 Livius, ii, 11, 14, 18-19 Licinius, ii, 154 LIVY becomes Emperor of the East, ii, 156 The Gaul's First Attack on Rome, i, 285 death of, ii, 157 Lloyd George, David, introduces Unemployed LIDDELL, HENRY GEORGE Insurance, viii, 279 The Fall of Carthage, ii, 23 becomes Secretary of War, ix, 11 The Fall of Greece, ii, 37 becomes Prime Minister, ix, 12 Liegnitz, battle of, v, 197 Loch Leven, iv, 132 Life-raft, America's crew lands in, ix, 248 Lockard, Joseph L., x, 91 Light Brigade, charge of the, vi, 333 Locrians, the, i, 301 Ligny, battle of, vi, 173 Lodbrok, Regnar, ii, 262 Lille, capture of, v, 89; x, 60, 61 LODGE, SIR OLIVER "Lillibullero," ballad of, v, 21 Radium and Its Lessons, viii, I Lima founded, iv, 17 LODGE, RICHARD Limerick, the siege of, v, 41 The Counter-Reformation, iv. 99 Limitation of naval armament, conference on, The Hanseatic League, iii, 113 ix, 184 The Massacre of St. Bartholomew, iv, 183 Linant Bey, vii, 110

LODGE, RICHARD	Louis XIV., 1V, 313, 315
Rise of the Dutch Republic, iv, 151	attacks Germany, v, 22
The Second Republic and the Second Em-	English invasion attempt of, v, 64
pire in France, vi, 311	empire of, v, 69
Western Europe and the Holy Alliance, vi,	campaigns of, v, 76
	successive afflictions of, v, 105-107
177	death of ware
Loiera, battle of, iii, 156	death of, v, 115, 119
Loire, Army of the, vii, 124	Louis XV., accession of, v, 144
Lombards, conversion of the, ii, 167	marriage of, v, 144
attack Rome, ii, 245-246, 247	Louis XVI., marriage of, v, 237
Lombardy, conquered by Charlemagne, ii, 246,	accession of, v, 313
251	flight of, v, 319
Iron Crown of, vi, 89	execution of, v, 321
LONDON, JACK	Louis XVIII., vi, 178, 181, 184, 186
The San Francisco Disaster, viii, 175	accession of, vi, 175
London, fortress of, ii, 192	Louis Napoleon. (See Napoleon III.)
fall of, ii, 299	Louis of Baden, v, 41
siege of, ii, 301	Louis Philippe, v, 320; vi, 270, 272
Tower of, ii, 311	abdication and flight of, vi, 273
capture of, iii, 47	Louisa of Savoy, iv, 62, 75
	Louisbourg, siege of, v, 171
riot in, iii, 67	capture of, v, 206
Hansa, influence of the, iii, 115	
treaty of, vi, 206	Louisiana, named, iv, 320
Agreement of, ix, 225	purchased by United States, vi, 103
Naval Conference in, ix, 257, 258	Purchase Act, viii, 136
air raids on, x, 312	Louvois, Marquis de, iv, 333
London Naval Treaty, U. S. Senate ratifies, ix,	Loyola, Ignatius, iv, 101
258	Lübeck, importance of, iii, 116
Long, Huey P., Governor of Louisiana, assassin-	and Hamburg, alliance of, iii, 117, 118, 121
ation of, ix, 307	Venice of the North, iii, 145
Long Parliament, the, iv, 293	Lucanians, the, ii, 48
Longstreet, General, vii, 65, 71, 75	Lucius II., death of, iii, 132
Longueville, Duchess de, iv, 307, 308, 310,	Lucknow, treaty of, v, 337
311	Lucretia, story of, i, 197
Longwy, capture of, vi, 7	Lucullus, ii, 25, 37
LORE, LUDWIG	Lucullus, Lucius Licinius, ii, 50
Europe Completes a Cycle, x, 11	Lüders, Count (Poland), vii, 35
Lorraine, conquered by Henry I. of Germany,	Ludwig II. of Bavaria, vii, 127, 158
ii, 280	Lumber industry, viii, 143
•	
centre of Burgundian empire, iii, 259	Lunéville, treaty of, vi, 85
in Franco-German war, vii, 123, 127	Lusitania, Roman architecture in, ii, 236
"Loss of face," for Japan, ix, 269	Lusitania, launched, viii, 200
Louis VIII., son of Philip Augustus, iii, 38	breaks trans-Atlantic record, viii, 230
Louis IX. (Saint), annuls Oxford Provisions, iii,	torpedoed and sunk, ix, 9
65	Luther, Hans, German Chancellor, ix, 225
on Sixth Crusade, iii, 60	resigns presidency of Reichsbank, ix, 289
death of, iii, 74	Luther, Martin, Reformation of, iv, 27, 28, 75
Louis XI., humbles Burgundy, iii, 305	in Rome, iv, 29
Louis XII., cruelties of, iv, 2	burns Papal bull, iv, 31-32

Liber, Martin, translates New Testament, iv, marriage of, iv, 34 Lutter, battle of, iv, 272 Luxembourg, Palace of, vi, 30 Luxembourg, defeats King William, v, 65 maded in World War I, ix, 5 Germany renounces treaties with, ix, 121 economic union with Belgium, ix, 198 pact with Oslo states, x, 25 Germany invades in World War II, x, 64 Luxury, regulations against, i, 64 Luzon, x, 259, 264, 267, 270 invaded, x, 313 Aparri won, x, 386 freed, x, 401 Lyov (Lyoff), Prince, Russian Premier, ix, 13, Licurgus, i, 57 valor of, i, 67 his regulations of burials, i, 69 expels Peisistratae, i, 183 Lydia, conquest of, i, 153-161 Lydians, bravery of the, i, 154 Cyrus surprises the, i, 155 Lymne, fall of, 11, 188 Lyons, persecutions at, ii, 114 Lys River, x, 60 Linea, Lord, heads Commission on Manchuria, ix, 262, 267 report of, ix, 267, 268, 269, 278

M

McAfee, Mildred H., of Waves, x, 132
MacArthur, Douglas, invades Leyte, x, 255
lands on Mindoro, x, 312
at Atsugi Airfield, x, 408
arranges Japanese surrender, x, 412
receives Japanese surrender, x, 414-415
McCampbell, David, Navy ace, x, 267,
281-282
MACAULAY, THOMAS BABINGTON
The Battle of La Hogue, v, 55
Battle of the Boyne, v, 29
The Massacre of Glencoe, v, 43
The Trial of the Seven Bishops, v, 1
The War Between Charles I. and the Parliament, iv, 295

McCARTHY, JUSTIN The Congress of Berlin, vii, 131 The Crimean War, vi, 329 McClusky, Clarenee, x, 116, 117 Macdonald, General, vii, 228 MacDonald, Ramsay, Labor Prime Minister, ix, 224, 225, 257, 258, 259, 356 Macedon, pretender to throne of, ii, 39 Macedonia, growing power of, i, 296 state of, ii, 39 wars of, ii, 21, 36 German army evacuates, ix, 9 Macedonian phalanx, i, 318, 319 Machado y Morales, Gerardo, flees from Cuba. ix, 293 Machinery for agriculture, vi, 309 MacIan of Gleneoe, v, 44, 49 Mack, General, vi, 109 McKenna, Captain, x, 297 MACKENZIE, ROBERT The Beginning of Free Trade, vi, 233 The Emancipation of the Serfs, vii, 25 End of the Pope's Temporal Power and Unification of Italy, vii, 17 Modern Inventions, vi, 299 McKinley, William, assassination of, vii, 279, 281-287 MacMahon, Marshal, vii, 120 McManes, Kenmore M., feat of, x, 276 Macon, dirigible, wrecked, ix, 307 Madagascar discovered, iii, 350, vii, 150, 179 Madayn, sack of, ii, 222 Madero, Francisco I., made Provisional President of Mexico, viii, 278 character of, viii, 285 reasons for success, viii, 284, 285 elected President of Mexico, viii, 290 Madras, acquired by the English, v, 174 built, iv, 293 Madras Presidency, v, 340 Madrid, treaty of, iv, 65 Maes, Army of the, vii, 123 Mafeking, Boers attack, vii, 245 Magalhaens, Fernam de, youth of, iv, 3) renounces Portugal, iv, 40 fleet of, iv, 41 embarks, iv, 42 explorations of, iv, 42 discovers the Philippines, iv, 44

Magalhaens, Fernande, expedition against	MALLESON, G. B.
Matan, iv, 46	Liberation of Genoa: Andrea Doria, iv, 79
death of, iv, 46-47	Maloria, Genoese victorious at, iii, 82
expedition returns, iv, 47	Malplaquet, v, 89
Magdeburg, sack of, iv, 275	Malta, iv, 87; vii, 139; x, 178, 226
archbishopric of, founded, ii, 287	Turkish assault on, iv, 141-146
Magellan. (See Magalhaens)	captured by Napoleon, vi, 55
Magenta, battle of, vii, 13	Malta and Lepanto, iv, 141
Magians of Persia, fall of the, ii, 245	Malwa, conquered by Akbar, iv, 187
Magna Charta, ii, 300; iii, 62; iv, 319	Mamelukes, take Egypt, iii, 60
drawn up, iii, 47-48	occupy Damascus and Aleppo, iii, 74
terms of the, iii, 50	destroyed, vi, 120
(See also Charter, the Great)	take Antioch, iii, 74
Magna Charta, The, iii, 41	Man, prehistoric, i, 1-10
Magnan, General, vi, 315	Manchukuo, nominally independent, ix, 261
Magnesia, battle of, ii, 22	recognized by Japan, ix, 262, 272
Magnus of Norway, iii, 117	policies of Japan, in, ix, 263, 276
Magnuson, Senator, on atom bomb, x, 403	government of, ix, 263, 264
Mago, ii, 6	Henry Pu-Yi ruler of, ix, 259, 264, 294
Magyars, the, ii, 269	understanding with Russia on, ix, 273, 274
persecution of the, iv, 322	Great Britain's attitude towards, ix, 273, 274
	League's attitude towards, ix, 292
aspirations of, vi, 279 oppressions of, ix, 80-84, 86, 88, 208	Manchuria
	Russia agrees to evacuate, vii, 279
Mahan, Admiral, x, 132	in Russo-Japanese War, viii, 16, 17, 30, 46,
Mahdi, El, vii, 146	63, 65-70, 71, 76, 77-86, 110, 120, 217,
Mahdism, rise of, vii, 145-149	221
end of, vii, 221	siege of Port Arthur, viii, 16, 30, 65-70
Mahmoud, Sultan, vi, 205	capture of Mukden, viii, 77-86, 110
Mahomet, (See Mohammed)	Japanese gains in, viii, 120
Mahomet II., at Constantinople, iii, 233, 239	Russian Army evacuates, viii, 217
takes Constantinople, iii, 244-245	Plague in, viii, 279
conquers Athens, iii, 254	Japanese conquest of, ix, 259, 26r
Mahommed IV. (Sultan), iv, 323	Lytton Report on, ix, 267, 268, 269, 278
Maid of Orleans (See Joan of Arc)	
Maine, the battleship, vii, 204	Russia invades, x, 402 (See Manchukuo)
final report on wreck, viii, 291	Manchuria: A New Act in the World
Maitland and Hegenberger, flight of, ix, 254	_
MAJOR, RICHARD HENRY	Drama, ix, 261
First Voyage Around the World, iv, 39	Manchus, dynasty of the, iv, 304; viii, 297-299,
Voyages of Vasco Da Gama, iii, 317	304-307, 310; ix, 372
Makaleh, capitulation, vii, 155	arrogance of the, vi, 241
Makin, x, 182	Mandalay, x, 330
Makta, battle of, vi, 226	Manfred, iii, 77
Malakoff, assault of the, vi, 340	Manhattan Island, discovery of, iv, 245-247
Malaya, Japan attacks, x, 110	trading-post, iv, 248
Maldon, battle of, ii, 292	purchased, iv, 253
	"Manhattan Project," x, 406
Malek-Adhel, Sultan, iii, 16	Manila, captured by the British, v, 211
Mallen, League of, iii. 22	falls to Japanese, x, 110

Manila, liberated, x, 313 Marie Antoinette, v, 237, 313 Japanese surrender delegation at, x, 412 Marie Charlotte, Empress, vii, 50 Manila Bay, battle of, vii, 235-245 Marie, Dowager Queen of Rumania, dies, ix, Manilius, ii, 26, 28, 29 Manin, Daniele, vi, 283 Marinowka, x, 156-158, 160 Manoel the Fortunate, King of Portugal, iii, 318 Marius, ii, 44, 48 Mansfeldt, Count, iv, 271 MARKHAM, ALBERT HASTINGS Manteuffel, General von, vii, 124 Cook's Australian Discoveries, v, 221 Mantinea, battle of, i, 296, 332 The Discovery of the Northwest Passage, vi, Mantua, Congress of, iv, 10 249 Manu, legend of, i, 15 Marlborough, ability of, v, 74 Manuel, proclaimed king of Portugal, viii, 230 scheme of, v, 78 Maqauqas, Governor of Egypt, ii, 213 march of, v. 78 Mar, Earl of, v, 115, 123, 126 meets Prince Eugène, v, 80 sets up Pretender's standard, v, 120 at Blenheim, v, 83 Tournay and Malplaquet, v, 89 Marat, v, 321 Mirátha Confederacy, v, 338 wins victory at Ramillies, v, 89 Márátha War, v, 338 Marriage, customs, origins of, i, 92 Marathon, i, 209 laws, i, 116 plain of, i, 213 Married Women's Property Act, vii, 144 battle of, i, 214-220 Marseillaise, the, v, 320 Marcel, Stephen, iii, 160 Marshall, William, iii, 47 aids the Jacques, iii, 165 Marshall Islands, x, 214, 259, 412 Marcellus defeats Hannibal, i, 332 Marsin, Marshal, v, 79, 82 MARCH, GENERAL P. C. Mars-la-Tour, battle of, vii, 121 A Chronology of the Major American Opera-Marston Moor, battle of, iv, 301 tions in France, 1918, ix, 23 Martin V., Pope, iii, 174 "March Laws," the, vi, 282 elected, iii, 194-195 Marcian, dream of, ii, 179 MARTIN, HENRI Marco Polo's Travels, iii, 83 The Jacquerie, iii, 161 Martin, Captain H. M., x, 92 Marconi, Guglielmo, vii, 191, 245 Marcus Antoninus defeats the confederacy of MARTIN, SIR THEODORE The Great Exhibition, vi, 289 German nations, ii, 142 Martinique settled, iv, 293 Marcus Aurelius, ii, 112 Martyr, Peter, iv, 99, 104 Marcus Horatius, i, 203 Martyrs, Castle of the, ii, 236 Marcus Papirius, i, 292 Martyrs, the Roman bishops, ii, 163 Mardion, ii, 57 Marx, Wilhelm, heads German cabinet, ix, 216 Mardonius, i, 211 Marengo, battle of, vi, 85 Mary, mother of Christ, ii, 73, 76, 103 Marescotti, Count Luigi A., ix, 267 Mary I, restores Roman Catholic religion in Marfori, vii, 103 England, iv, 109 persecutes Protestants, iv, 109 Margaret of Austria, iv, 1, 75 Mary Stuart, iv, 125 Margaret of Navarre, iv, 185 returns to Scotland, iv, 129 Margaret of Parma, iv, 152, 156, 157 ambitions of, iv, 132 Maria Theresa, succeeds to Austrian throne, v, sent to Loch Leven, iv, 132 165-166 cause of, ended, iv, 138 and Silesia, v, 167-169 mother of Marie Antoinette, v, 237 execution of, iv, 174 Maryland, colonized, iv, 292 objects to partition of Poland, v, 241-242

\	21.111.0
Maryland, x, 102, 275	Matilda, Countess of Tuscany, ii, 325, 349
Masaniello, revolt of, iv, 304	Matthias, the Emperor, iv, 269
Masaryk, Thomas B., President of Czecho-	Matthias of Austria, Archduke, iv, 162
slovakia, ix, 91, 183	Matthias of Hungary takes Bosnia, iii, 255
Masinissa, ii, 23, 48	Maud of Denmark, viii, 206
Mason and Dixon boundary line, v, 175	Maupas, M. de, vi, 315
MASPERO, G.	Maurice of Nassau, iv, 164
Conquest of Egypt by Cambyses, i, 173	Maurice of Saxony, iv, 105
The Fall of Tyre and the Siege of Jerusalem,	Mauritania, ii, 227
i, 123	Mauritius, France occupies, v, 144
Massachusetts, arms for war, v, 265	Maxentius (Emperor), ii, 154
Massachusetts Bay Company, the, iv, 292	Maxim gun, vii, 150
Massacre, in Antwerp, iv, 164	Maximian, persecution under, ii, 117, 154
of Bonaparte prisoners, vi, 73	Maximilian I., and League of Cambray, iv, 1
in Cabul, vi, 247	death of, iv, 57
of Chios, vi, 203; ix, 206	Maximilian, of Bavaria, iv, 273
of Christians at Constantinople (1453), iii,	Maximilian, Archduke of Austria, Mexico of-
245-246	fered to, vii, 49
nf Christians at Damascus, vii, 15	arrives in Mexico, vii, 50
	decrees of, vii, 51
in Crete, vii, 179	
of English missionaries in China, viii, 162	execution of, vii, 53
of the French, iii, 82	Maximilian Sforza (Duke of Milan), iv, 9
of Glencoe, v, 51	Maximin, Emperor, ii, 115, 154, 156
of the Greeks, v, 240	Maybrick, Mrs. Florence, viii, 16
of Hindus, iii, 180	Mayenne, Duke de, iv, 196, 198, 201
of the Infidels, ii, 347	Mayflower sails from Plymouth, iv, 287
of Jews in Bessarabia, vii, 346	Mazarin, iv, 315
of Jews in England, ii, 350	forced to leave France, iv, 312
of Jews in Russia, vii, 335; viii, 127	recalled, iv, 313
of Latins in Constantinople, iii, 15-16	Mazdeism, i, 35, 40
in Madagascar, vi, 248	Mazeppa, v, 89
of the Maronites, vii, 15	Mazzini, founds Young Europe, vi, 231
by the Moguls, iii, 186	Meade, General, vii, 65, 67, 69, 70-80
of the Moguls, iii, 187	MEAKIN, BUDGETT
of Peterloo, vi, 199	The Algeciras Conference, viii, 147
in Poland, vii, 34	Meaux, attack upon, iii, 166
of Prato, iv, 10	Mecca, makes truce with Mohammed, ii, 212
of St. Bartholomew, iv, 137, 185-186	accepts the new prophet, ii, 209
of St. Brice, ii, 296	Mecca, the sacred city, ii, 205
of Shekan, vii, 146	Mecklenburg, Grand Duke of, vii, 125
in Spain, vii, 98	Medes, repulse of, i, 138
of Turcomans, vii, 144	victory of the, i, 137
Massacre of Glencoe, The, v, 43	Medici, family, antiquity of the, iii, 171
Massacre of St. Bartholomew, The, iv, 183	wealth, source of the, iii, 174
Massacre of the Jews in Russia, vii, 337	authority, nature of the, iii, 175
Mastanarbal, ii, 29	returns to Florence, iii, 310-311
Matabele, vii, 168	flight of the, iii, 311
Match, the sulphur, vi, 305	expelled, iv, 87
Mathan, i, 53	last of the, v, 166

yalii, Alessandro (Alexander) de', iv, 12, 75 Merchant Shipping Bill, vii, 130 Mentil, Catherine de', iv, 184, 191, 193 Mercians, the, ii, 193 Mauli, Cosmo de', ini, 173 Merida reduced by Musa, ii, 237 alls Venetian Republic, iii, 177 MERIVALE, CHARLES Midici, Giovanni, de', iii, 172 Fall of the Decemvirate, i, 235 B Pope Leo X., iv, II Merv, vii, 150 Medal, Giuliano de', iv, 11 Mesopotamia, ix, 9, 183 y-id, Giulio de', kılled, iii, 268 Metals, early discovery of, i, 10 Medici, Giulio de', (Clement VII.), iv, 12 Metaurus, battle of the, ii, 17-20 Midici, Ippolito de', iv, 12 Metellus, ii, 40, 44 Medici, Lorenzo de', iii, 173, 268; iv, 11 Methodism, rise of, v, 155-163 Medici, Pietro de', iii, 308 Methodists, v, 157, 161 returns to Florence, iii, 310-311 Methuen, General, vii, 245 Methuen, treaty of commerce, v, 67 cowardice of, iii, 310 Medici, Salvestro de', iii, 171 Metternich, vi, 180, 181, 204, 281; ix, 81 Medieval travel, dangers of, iii, 113-114 Metz, surrender of, vii, 124 Medieval wars, nature of, iii, 305 Mexican War, vi, 258 Medina Sidonia, Duke of , iv, 178 Mexico, conquered by Cortés, iv, 15 expedition to, iv, 88 Megazles, i, 183, 191 Megalopolis, battle of, i, 310 Iturbide becomes Emperor, vi, 217 war with United States, vi, 258 Magara, battle of, ii, 32 empire of, vii, 49, 51 Mehemet Ali, vi, 205, 231, 239 government control of railroads, viii, 216 conquests of, vi, 199, 230 anti-Diaz riots, viii, 243 Mehemet Ali Pacha, vi, 120 Diaz reelected, viii, 263 Meitner, Dr. Lise, x, 407 Madero provisional president, viii, 278 Mejia, vii, 49, 52 Diaz resigns, viii, 279 Melanethon, iv, 28 work of Diaz, viii, 281-290 Michthal of Unterwalden, iii, 92 Memel, assigned to Lithuania, ix, 201, 224 Diaz plans of reform, viii, 289 Madero elected president, viii, 290 ceded to Germany, ix, 381 revolutionists defeated, viii, 320 Mencius, i, 141 General Huerta proclaimed provisional presi-Meadoza, Count of Tendilla, iii, 339, 344 dent, viii, 380 Menelik, King of Shoa, vii, 152, 157 rebels capture Ojinaga City, viii, 381 Menes, i, 19 American fleet sent to Tampico, viii, 382 Menidas, i, 325 Vera Cruz captured by U. S. forces, viii, 382 Menou, General, vi, 38, 42 A.B.C. Conference about, ix, 4 Mentschikoff, Prince, vi, 330, 353 brigands attack Columbus, ix, 10 MENZIES, SUTHERLAND debt of, ix, 198 Consolidation of Germany by Henry I., ii, ends oil pact with U.S., ix, 344 recalls Minister to Great Britain, ix, 345 Council of Constance and the Hussite War, expropriates U. S. owned lands, ix, 380 declares war on Axis, x, 111 The Downfall of Napoleon, vi, 165 MICHELET, JULES The Swiss Confederacy: the Swiss War of The First Crusade, ii, 335 Independence, iii, 91 The Fourth Crusade, iii, 11 War of the Austrian Succession, v, 165 Nancy-Death of Charles the Bold, iii, 257 Mercantile settlements, important, iii, 115 The Sicilian Vespers, iii, 75 Mercator makes his chart, iv, 109 Michelet, Jules, quotation from, ii, 4 Mercenaries, Carthage employs, ii, 5

MICHIE, ALLAN A. The Invasion, x, 215 Micipsa, ii, 29 Microphone invented, vii, 130 Middle East, German drive toward, x, 140, 142 Middle English, the, ii, 193 Midhat Pasha, viii, 235 Midway, Battle of, x, 111, 113 U. S. carriers locate Japanese fleet, x, 114-115 Japanese ships sunk in, x, 117, 122, 123 U. S. ships losses, x, 119, 120, 130 second U. S. attack, x, 128 U. S. fleet pursues Japanese, x, 129, 130-131
complete victory of, x, 132, 300
Mies, battle of, iii, 197
Mihai (Michael), Rumanian prince, succeeds
King Ferdinand, ix, 256
succeeds Carol, x, 75
Mikuma, x, 131
Milan, King of Servia, vii, 159
Milan, Attila in, ii, 173
destroyed by Franks, ii, 200
Republic, established, ii, 350; iii, 226
miseries in, iv, 66
Bonaparte crowned in, vi, 89
Fascisti in, ix, 199
Allies seize, x, 339
Milford-Haven, Richmond at, iii, 270
Military Surgery, x, 301
MILLER, J. R.
The Siege of Acre, vi, 71
MILMAN, HENRY HART
The Jews Expelled from Spain, iii, 285
Order of the Teutonic Knights, iii, 55
Miltiades, i, 214
Milyukov, M., ix, 13
Mindanao, x, 259, 264
Minden, battle of, v, 205
Mindoro, invasion of, x, 312
Minerva, Castle of, iii, 36
Minerva, the false, i, 184
Ming dynasty, fall of the, iv, 304
Minimum Wage Law, ix, 308, 343
Mining, prehistoric, i, 8
Minuit, Peter, buys Manhattan, iv, 253
Minute Men, the, v, 261, 267
Mirabeau, Comte de, v, 316, 317, 318
Miracle of American Production, The,
x, 203

Miracle of Rain, ii, 114 Miramon, vii, 48, 53 Mirandola attacked, iv. 6 Mise of Lewes, iii, 69-70 Mississippi Company founded, v, 131 Missouri, x, 408, 413, 414-415 MITFORD, WILLIAM The Delphic Oracle, i, 43 Expulsion of the Peisistratæ, i, 183 Mithridatês, Kîng of Pontos, ii, 50 Mithridatic Wars, ii, 50 Mitscher, Marc, x, 257, 258, 264, 266, 270, 273, 279, 281, 284, 285, 297 Mocenigo, Luigi, the Doge, iv, 148 Modern Illumination, vi, 213 Modern Inventions, vi, 299 Mogami, Japanese cruiser, x, 131 Mogul Emperor, iii, 30; vii, 1 Moguls, territory of the, iii, 31 massacred by Tamerlane, iii, 187 the, begin a massacre, iii, 187 empire of the Great, founded, iv, 87 reign of Akbar, third emperor of, iv, 111-115 Mohammed, the Prophet, spread of religion of ii, 217 ancestry of, ii, 207 birth of, ii, 207 physical constitution of, ii, 207 revelations of, ii, 208 escape of, ii, 210 hegira of, ii, 211 and the spider, legend of, ii, 210 establishes his religion, ii, 211 makes truce with Mecca, ii, 212 preaches the Holy War, ii, 211 enters Mecca, ii, 213 last pilgrimage of, ii, 213 death of, ii, 214 religion of, estimate of, ii, 214 turned at first to Jews for support, ii, 215 Mohammed, the Sultan, fall of, iii, 30 Mohammed I., founds Granada, iii, 60 Mohammed II., at Belgrade, iii, 254 Mohammed VI., ix, 94, 200 Mohammed Ahmed, the Mahdi, vii, 145 Mohammedans, vii, 4, 5 Molay, John de, execution of, iii, 97 Moley, Raymond I., x, 125

Halotov, V. M., Russian Foreign Commissar, ix, 392; x, 22 onference with Eden and Hull, x, 182 at San Francisco Conference, x, 390-392 Mike, Count von, vii, 118, 119 Monasteries, Henry VIII. destroys, iv, 89 Money, coining in Rome, iii, 133 Money, iron, i, 61 Mongolia, ix, 262 Russia to have free hand in, ix, 274 Mongolia, Inner, declared independent, ix, 259 Mongols, the, iii, 82; ix, 372 Monitor and Merrimac, vii, 41 Monitor Republics, suggested, viii, 215 Monmouth, execution of, 1v, 329 Monotheism, i, 41 Monroe Doctrine, vi, 217; vii, 52; ix, 118 m first Pan-American Congress, viii, 212 in Manchukuo question, ix, 266 Mons, vii, 94; ix, 6 French take, v, 41 surrender of, v, 89 Mons Sacer, the, i, 237, 240 Montcalm, v, 207 Mont Cenis tunnel, vii, 129 Montebello, battle of, vii, 13 Montebourg, x, 246-247 Monte Cassino, blasted, x, 214 Montenegrins, attitude of, toward Serbia, ix, 78 Montenegro, vii, 130, 141; ix, 46, 67, 68, 71, 75 declares war against Turkey, vii, 131 Montevideo, Graf Spee seeks refuge in, x, 27 Montezuma, iv, 15 Montferrat, Conrad of, iii, 4, 6 quarrel with Guy, iii, 6 Montgolfier, Joseph and Stephen, experiment with balloons, viii, 356 Montgomery, Lieut. Gen. Bernard, heads British Eighth Army, x, 144 European invasion conference, x, 220, 223 German army surrenders to, x, 343-344, 349-350 Montmorency, the Constable, iv, 118 Montojo, Admiral, vii, 241, 242, 244 Montpensier, Duke of, vii, 102 Montserrat, Boniface of, iii, 13 Mooker Heath, battle of, iv, 161 MOORE, J. HAMPTON Peary's Discovery of the North Pole, viii, 245

Moors, of Granada, dismay of, iii, 278 civilization of the, iti, 283-284 ın Granada, liberty of, iu, 339 outbreak in Spain of, iii, 343 rebellion of, iii, 344 expulsion of, from Spain, iii, 348-349 Morat, battle of, iii, 260 Moravia, vi, 113 Moravians found Bethlehem, Penn., v, 154 defend church, ix, 81 Moray, Earl of, assassination of the, iv, 134 Morea conquered by Venice, vi, 49 Moreau, vi, 85, 88, 165 Morgan, W. D., x, 348 Morgarten, battle of, iii, 94 Morgenthau, Henry, ix, 215 Moriscos, The, iii, 339 Moriscos, the, iii, 339; iv, 146 Mormons, gains of the, vi, 267 Mornington, Lord, v, 335 Morny, M. de, vi, 315 Morocco, dispute over, viii, 147-153; ix, 133, 134,349 French protectorate established, viii, 311 Sultan abdicates, viii, 320 American landings in, x, 135, 147 Morone, Jerome, treatment of, iv, 62, 64 Morotai Island, x, 254 MORRIS, FRANK D., et al. America's Greatest Naval Battle, x, 257 Mortimer, iii, 70 Mosciki, President of Poland, x, 16 Moscow, ix, 79, 219, 223, 224, 354, 373, 374, 376 fired, vi, 129 aids Spanish Communists, ix, 312 Moscow Campaign, The, vi, 121 Moslems (Muslims), army of, ii, 219 troops, disorder of, ii, 243 chivalry of, iii, 276 and Spain, iii, 339-349 power of, in India, vii, 2 Moultan, Mahummud blockaded in, iii, 181 Mount Arafât, Mohammed on, ii, 213 Mount Badon, Britons win at, ii, 191 Mounteagle, Lord, iv, 231 visits Salisbury, iv, 227 Mount 'Hirâ, Mohammed at, ii, 208 Mount Thabir, ii, 208

Mount Thaur, Mohammed at, ii, 210 Moving pictures, viii, 316 Mowbray, Philip de, iii, 103 MOYES, J. The New Pontificate, vii, 369 Mres-el-Kebir, x, 148 Mudania, armistice of, ix, 199-200 Mukden, battle of, viii, 77-86 Mummius, L., ii, 41, 44 sends works of art to Rome, ii, 42 Munda, Spain, battle of, ii, 51 Munich, ix, 355 Munich, captured, x, 339 Munich Conference, ix, 355-362 effect in Asia of, ix, 363, 364, 365 Münnich, campaigns, v, 147 takes Oczakow, v, 148 Munster, treaty of, iv, 304 Murat, vi, 114 Muravieff, Count, vii, 248 Muret, battle of, iii, 37-38 Murphy, Robert D., x, 139 Murray, Sir G. Evelyn P., ix, 255 Musa, repulsed by Julian, ii, 227 preparations of, ii, 230 takes command, ii, 235 reduces Merida and Seville, ii, 236 impressed with wonders of Lusitania, ii, 236 meeting with Tarik, ii, 237 treatment of Tarik by, ii, 237 Musashi, x, 263, 265 Mussolini, Benito, ix, 293, 297, 300, 305, 315-319, 355, 357, 358; x, 78 becomes premier, ix, 200 mobilizes army, ix, 307 resigns premiership, x, 171 executed, x, 339 Mustafa retires from Malta, iv, 145 Mustafa III., v, 239 Mysore Wars, v, 335-340 N Nagasaki, struck by atomic bomb, x, 402, 404

Nagasaki, struck by atomic bomb, x, 402, 404
Nagato, x, 263
Naggasi, of Abyssinia, ii, 213
Nagoya, bombed, x, 356, 376, 386
Namur, battle of, v, 66
captured by Germans, ix, 6

Nancy-Death of Charles the Bold, iii. Nancy, taken by Réné, iii, 250 attacked by Burgundy, iii, 263 Nangis, G. de, quotation from, iii, 153 Nankin, treaty of, vi, 247 Nanking (Nankin), Government of in Manchurian dispute, ix, 270, 275, 276, 327 Nantes, Edict of, iv, 203 revocation of, iv, 331-337 Napata, invasion of, by Cambyses, i, 179 kingdom of, i, 178 Naples, kingdom of, vii, 17 claimed by Charles VIII. of France, iii, 307 House of, iii, 309 fall of, iii, 314 conquered by Spain, iii, 349 siege of, iv, 72 in revolution, vi, 191-194 falls to Allies, x, 182 Napoleon Bonaparte. (See Bonaparte) Napoleon III. in Italy, vii, 9 Napoleon III., raises insurrection, vi, 247 imprisonment of, vi, 247 elected French President, vi, 312 becomes Emperor, vi, 317 character and policy of, vi, 310 promises aid to Piedmont, vii, 9 disembarks at Genoa, vii, 11 enters Milan, vii, 14 obtains Savoy and Nice, vii, 15 restores Venetia to Italy, vii, 21 on Polish program, vii, 38 issues manifesto on Mexico, vii, 47 attempts to found Mexican Empire, va. in Franco-German War, vii, 117 surrender of, vii, 122 prisoner of the Prussians, vii, 23, 123 Narbonne, iii, 38 Narses, hampers Belisarius, ii, 200 conquers Ostrogoths, ii, 201 made first Exarch of Ravenna, ii, 202 Narutowicz, Gabriel, killed, ix, 200 Narvaez, vii, 84, 95, 98, 103 Narvik, bombed, x, 33 Naseby, battle of, iv, 302 Nashville, battle of, vii, 80 Nassau, House of, iv, 154

Natal, Vasco da Gama, names, iii, 322	NC-boats, misadventures of s and 3, ix, 175,
Natal, Vasco din, vi, 231 Boers settle in, vi, 231	170
i Assembly, V. 315	4 ends flight, ix, 178
	Near East, ix, 299
1 Dobt (of Citaliana /) *) * 3.3	Near East After Lausanne, The, ix, 203
	Necker, Jacques, v, 269, 313
	dismissed, v, 294
National Industrial Receivery 1984, (See Nazis)	recalled, v, 312
National Social States of the, vi, 167	dismissed, v, 318
Nativity of Christ, The, ii, 69	Negro slaves imported to Virginia, iv, 259
1 sion 1937 1, 114	Nehavend, battle of, ii, 224
Naturalization laws of World War II)	Nelson, Horatio, vi, 86, 111
Coral Sea, x, 111	pursues Villeneuve, vi, 106
Midway, x, 113-132	tactics of, vi, 50
Cape Esperance, x, 133	victory of, vi, 65, 68
Santa Cruz Islands, x, 133	NEP. (See New Economic Policy)
Santa Cruz Islands, A, 255	Nepaul conquered, vi, 199
Guadaleanal, x, 149 Philippine Sea, first, x, 249	Neptune, i, 45
Philippine Sea, second, x, 257-300	Nero, Claudius, ii, 8
Naul Conference, Five-Power, takes place in	joins Livius, ii, 15
London, ix, 257-258	march of, Byron's opinion of, ii, 21
London, ix, 25/ 250	Nero, Emperor of Rome, ii, 100
NAVALIS Dreadnoughts, viii, 155	charged with setting fire to Rome, 11, 109
Naval oil leases (See Teapot Dome)	suicide of, ii, 118
Naval Treaties, ix, 307, 308	Nerva, ii, 111
London, ix, 258, 308	battle of, v, 66
Washington, ix, 191, 198, 216	Nestor, ii, 270, 273, 275
Wayarino, battle of, vi, 207	Netherlands, government, iv, 151
Navas de Tolosa, battle of, iii, 22	bishoprics in the, iv, 153
Navel of the earth, i, 47	persecution in the, iv, 155, 158
Navel of the world, the, vii, 379	revolt of the, iv, 159
Navigation act, iv, 316	Union of Utrecht, iv, 163
Navigation laws, v, 216	Dutch Republic recognized, iv, 165
Nazi Eyes Turn East, ix, 347	New Netherland colony formed, iv, 250
Nazis Come, The, x, 29	Batavia founded in Java, iv, 259
Nazis, in coalition with Nationalists, ix, 279	Curacoa taken, iv, 293
anti-semitic campaign of, ix, 280	importance of, v, 71
control Bavaria, ix, 282	snubbed by French at Utrecht, v, 111
arrest Communists, ix, 283	Alliance with England and Germany, v, 312
carry elections in Prussia, ix, 283-284	conquered by Pichegru, vi, 28
	lose British Guiana, vi, 103
censor newspapers, ix, 291 in 1933 Reichstag election, ix, 279	French expelled, vi, 139
policies of, ix, 306, 333-343	Crown Princess marries, ix, 332
Churchill on, x, 79-82	invaded by Germany, x, 64
	German surrender, x, 347
after surrender, x, 345-360	Neutrality Act (United States), signed, ix, 343
NC-boats, start across ocean, ix, 167, 170	repeal of, x, 85
route of, ix, 169	Neutrality, Treaty, Russo-Turkish, ix, 242
reach Halifax, ix, 170	Neutrons, x, 405, 407, 408
4 arrives at Azores, x, 175	7.10) and A. 71 A. 11

Nicea, Crusaders at, ii, 343 Nevada, x, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 104, 229 New Amsterdam settled, iv, 292 "New Deal," the, ix, 377 New Economic Policy (NEP), in Soviet Russia, ix, 223 New Englanders, spirit of the, v, 255 Newfoundland, to have 120,000 square miles in Niffer, i, 23 Labrador, ix, 256 becomes Crown Colony, ix, 294 New Guinea, vii, 158 in World War II, x, 413 NEWMAN, AL Salerno, x, 173 New Mexico, admitted, viii, 310 New Netherland, the, iv, 249 Nimrod, i, 22, 29 New Netherland Company, The United, iv, 250. 251, 259 New Orleans founded, v, 131 Nineveh, i, 73 captured by Farragut, vii, 30 New Pontificate, The, vii, 369 Newport, Captain, iv, 216, 219, 222 Nipur, i, 26 New Rome, ii, 159 New South Wales, colonized, v, 312 gold discovered in, vi, 287 Newspaper, first, in the United States, v, 89 growth of the, vi, 303 New Sweden settled, iv, 293 Noah, i, 13, 21 New Testament, translation of, by Luther, iv, 33 New Tribunal, the, vi, 17 New York subway, viii, 47 New York to Albany, first steamboat voyage, vi, 101-102 New York to Paris flight, prize for, ix, 244 attempts at, before Lindbergh's, ix, 245 New Zealand, v, 222-223, 225; vi, 247; ix, 185, 293; X, 415 discovered, iv, 304 franchise for women, vii, 168 Ney, General, vi, 135 Marshal, vi, 137 at Quatre Bras, vi, 173 execution of, vi, 182 Nicaragua, United States breaks relations with, viii, 242 revolution in, viii, 254 United States intervention in, viii, 320 one of the Allied Powers, ix, 113 railroads and telegraphs reopened, viii, 374 and Honduras at war, viii, 21

Nicholas I., v1, 339 Nicholas of Tusculum, iii, 45 Nicholson's Nek, vii, 245 Nicias, i, 259, 261 Niebuhr, visits Arabia and Persia, v, 211 Nightingale, Florence, vi, 336 Nika, the riot, ii, 203 Nile, battle of the, vi, 57 source of the, discovered, vii, 15 Nile Dam at Assouan, The, vii, 327 Nile to Red Sca railway, viii, 154 Nimitz, Admiral, x, 125, 260, 320, 414 Nine-Power Treaty, and Manchuria, ix, 262. 270, 272, 278, 371 siege of, i, 75, 76 building of, i, 71 NIRA. (See National Industrial Recovery Act) Nisewaner, T. A., x, 278 Nitetis, story of, i, 173 Nivelle, General, ix, 10 Nizam of Haidarábád, the, v, 339 Nobel Prizes, viii, 216, 291, 321 Nobile, Umberto, in arctic flights, ix, 229-241 believes arctic airway possible, ix, 229 designer and pilot of Norge, ix, 240 Nola, Hannibal defeated at, i, 332 Non-Cooperationists, in India, ix, 200 Norfolk, Duke of, iii, 272 Norge, polar flight of, ix, 227-242 Norman Conquest of England, ii, 305 Normandie, French liner, giant of the seas, x, Normandy, conquered by Henry V., iii, 209 Normandy invasion (World War II), x, 214 planning for, x, 215-219 final decisions in, x, 220-224 Channel crossing for, x, 227-232 airborne landings in, x, 225, 231, 235, 248 amphibious landings, x, 232-236, 237-239 beachhead on, x, 236, 241-244 prisoners and wounded in, x, 244-246, 247. Allies invade coast of, x, 235-248

Normans, settle in France, ii, 264 spread of the, ii, 265 refinement of the, ii, 265 ad in defending Constantinople, ii, 266 in Southern Italy, ii, 266 aid in repelling Saracens, ii, 266 gradual disappearance of the, ii, 267 protect Ethelred against Danes, ii, 305 in First Crusade, ii, 338 Normans in France and Italy, The, ii, 261 Vorse blood, in English people, ii, 263 n French people, ii, 264 North Africa, ii, 225 Sorth African invasion (World War II), x, 133 planning for, x, 136-139 British offensive in, x, 144-146 railway system of, x, 147-148 Esenhower, commander of, x, 171 surrender of Axis in, x, 171 (See also Morocco and Algiers) Northampton, battle of, iii, 254 Northern Confederation, vi, 90 North German Federation, vii, 92 North, Lord, v, 251, 257, 299, 301 North Pole, attempts by Peary to attain, viii, 246, 247, 253 Wellman Arctic expedition sails, viii, 201 Wellman dirigible attempt fails, viii, 243 the Dr. Cook hoax concerning, viii, 253 reached by Peary, viii, 244, 245, 247, 252 Byrd and Bennett fly over, ix, 228, 234 Amundsen-Ellsworth-Nobile expedition flies over, ix, 237 North Sea Battle, ix, 7 Northumbria, kıngdom of, ii, 194 Northwest Passage, discovered, vi, 256 conquest of, viii, 49 Norway, ceded to Sweden, vi, 139 and Sweden, viii, 99 invaded by Germany, x, 27, 30-57 King and Government flee, x, 36, 40, 44, 45 46 heroism of people, x, 40-41, 47, 49 British retreat from, x, 60 tries Quisling, x, 408 Norwegian Parliament, the first, iii, 53 Notables, the, meet, v, 302, 314 Notre Dame (Paris), ii, 350 Novgorod, ii, 265, 270

Noville, George O., ix, 247 Nungesser and Coli, ix, 245 Nuremburg, x, 339 Nushirvan, King of Persia, ii, 200 Nystadt, peace of, v, 101 treaty of, v, 144

O

Oahu, x, 89, 91, 96, 122 O'Bryant, Theral, x, 246, 247 Ochino, Bernardino, iv, 99, 104 O'Connor, Rory, surrenders, ix, 199 executed, ix, 200 Octavia, ii, 53 Octavius, Marcus, ii, 51, 62 becomes sole ruler of Roman world, ii, 67 Oczakow, capture of, v, 150 Odenathus, husband of Zenobia, ii, 144 Odessa, retaken, x, 214 Odin, i, 18 Odoacer, ii, 195, 197 O'Donnell, vii, 95 Official Summary of the Treaty of Peace with Germany, ix, 113 Ofstie, Ralph A., x, 288, 294 Ogyges, i, 17 Ohio Company charter, v, 174 Oil, laws regarding, i, 119 Oil lease inquiries, ix, 217 (See also Teapot Dome) Oil leases, declared fraudulent, ix, 256 Okinawa, invaded, x, 331 offensive in, x, 339 Naha entered, x, 356 won by Americans, x, 386 Oklahoma, x, 101, 102, 103, 107 O'LAUGHLIN, J. C. Peacemaking at Portsmouth, viii, 107 Oldendorf, Jesse B., x, 273-278 Old Sarum, capture of fort at, ii, 191 Oleg, ii, 265, 274-275 succeeds Rurik, ii, 274 unites Russian tribes, ii, 274 Olga, ii, 265 widow of Igor, revenge of, ii, 277 the Apostle of Christianity, ii, 277 Olive wreath, i, 82 Olozaga, vii, 100

Olympia, crown at, i, 81, 82	Order of the Temple, iii, 55
festival at, i, 77, 84	Order of the Teutonic Knights :::
racecourse at, i, 79	Orenburg-Tashkent Railway, The, vni, 33
embassies to, i, 79	Orestes, M. Aurelius, ii, 40
victors at, i, 81	Orion, constellation of, i, 24
olive wreath at, i, 82	Orleans, siege of, iii, 209
sacrifices at, i, 83	attacked by Salisbury, iii, 212
importance of festival, i, 84	last French stronghold, iii, 212
Olympiad, the first, i, 57	fortifications of, iii, 213
Olympian games, crowds at, i, 80	offers to surrender, iii, 214
	begs aid of Joan of Arc, iii, 218
Olympian Jove, altar of, i, 78	rejoicing in, iii, 219
Olympic Games, The, i, 77	
Olympic Games, viii, 187	Orleans, Duke of, Regent of France, v, 115
Omar, ii, 214, 217, 223	Ormoc, x, 312
Omdurman, battle of, vii, 219	Ormuz taken by the English, iv, 292
Omen, evil, iii, 263	Ornamentation, early use of, i, 7
Omens, ii, 88	Oropus, i, 305
and prophecies, ii, 235	Orovio, vii, 103
and Salamis, i, 227	ORSI, PIETRO
Ommiades, fall of the, ii, 245	Italian Colonization on the Red Sea, vii, 151
O'Neill, Hugh, iv, 209	Orsini, Paolo, iii, 311
O'Neill, Shane, iv, 205	Ortega, General, vii, 48, 50
"Open Door" policy, China, ix, 272, 371, 380	Orteig, Raymond, offers aviation prize, ix, 244.
Opening of China, The, vi, 241	245
Opening of Japan, The, vi, 321	Osaka, Japan, bombed, x, 376, 386
Opium, vi, 242	Oscar of Sweden renounces crown, viii, 104
Opium War ended, vi, 247	Oscarborg, Fort, incident of, x, 40-41
Oppas, Archbishop of Toledo and Seville, ii,	Oslo States, x, 25
228	Osman Digna, vii, 148
Oracle, Brutus interprets, i, 196	Osman Pasha, vii, 134
Oracle, Delphi, how obtained, i, 50	Ostrogothic kingdom, fall of the, ii, 201
answers of, i, 50	Ostrogoths, the, ii, 168, 202
of Buto, i, 182	Otchakoff, pillage and massacre of, v, 309
corruption of, i, 189	Othman fleet, iv, 149
dispute about, i, 251	Othman founds Ottoman Empire, iii, 82
	Otho, revolt of, ii, 118
Oracles, Themistocles resorts to, i, 223	
Oran, attack of, vi, 224	Otho (1200), Emperor of Italy, iii, 41
naval attack of, x, 75, 147	Otho of Bavaria, King of Greece, vi, 212
American landing at, x, 148	Otto de Colonna, iii, 195
Orange Fice State, vi, 356	Otto I., coronation of, ii, 285
Orange, principality of, iv, 154	wars of, ii, 286
Orchomenos, battle of, ii, 50	in Italy, ii, 287
Order of St. John of Jerusalem, iii, 96, 98	marries Adelheid, ii, 287
founded, ii, 350	becomes King of Lombardy, ii, 288
Order of Templars founded, ii, 350	becomes Emperor, ii, 288
Order of the Knights Templars, iii, 95	Otto, King of Greece, expelled, vil, 30
charges against them, iii, 96	Otto the Great, ii, 290
persecutions of the, iii, 97	Ottoman Empire, founded, iii, 82
abolished, iii, 98	attains greatest extent, iv, 141
•	

	INDEX
Ottomans enter Europe, iii, 154 Ondenarde, battle of, v, 89 Ondh, vi, 356; vii, 4 Oudnot's expedition to Rome, vi, 313 Out Lady of Blachernes, ii, 274 OWEN, RUSSELL D. To the North Pole by Air, ix, 227 OWI. (See Office of War Information) Oxenstiern, iv, 279 Onford, the Earl of, iii, 270, 272	Panama Canal, vii, 149, 379; ix, 18, 271 test trip of Cristobal through, ix, 5 Panama Canal Treaty, vii, 334; viii, 16 Panama-Pacific Exposition, ix, 8 Pan-American Conference, viii, 207 first held, viii, 211 at Mexico City, viii 211 at Panama, viii, 212 at Rio de Janeiro, viii, 211 at Washington, viii, 212-214
Orierd, the Earl Se, or, iii, 63 Orford, Provisions of, iii, 63 Provisions of, annulled by Louis IX., iii, 65	Pan-American Congress, The, viii, 209 Pan-American Congress, vii, 279 (See also Pan-American Conference) Pan-American Exhibition, vii, 270
P	
	Pan-American Exhibition, vii, 279 Panay, the, sinking of, ix, 344, 378 Pandects of Justinian, ii, 202 Pandulf, the Pope's legate, has audience with King John, iii, 42 John gives the crown of England and Ireland to, iii, 43 goes to France, iii, 44 Panloff, General, vi, 347 Pannonia, subjugated, ii, 67 invaded by the Hungarians, ii, 274-275 Pantelleria Island, taken by Allies, x, 171 Panzer troops, x, 180 Papacy, triumph of the, iv, 108 founders of the, ii, 164 versus Holy Roman Empire, ii, 315 seat of the, iii, 90 Papal and Spanish invasion of Ireland, iv, 208 Papal Conclave, the, vii, 369 Papal Legate, govern at Rome, iii, 136 Papal Schism, the Great, iii, 90 Papen, Franz von, ix, 282, 284, 288, 334, 335 Parachute troops, x, 225, 231, 247, 254 Paraguay, peace protocol with Bolivia, ix, 307 Paramoshiri Island, x, 214 Paris, Comte de, vi, 318
dismissed, vi, 287 Palmyra, besieged by Aurelian, ii, 147 siege of, ii, 147 renewed rebellion of, ii, 149 surrender of, ii, 149 sinks into obscurity, ii, 150 Palmyreans, defeat of the, ii, 147 Palos, Columbus embarks from, iii, 295 Panama, Secession of, vii, 377 Panama Canal, The, viii, 323	Paris, the city of, ii, 198 besieged, ii, 264 University of, founded, iii, 21 Peace of, iii, 39; v, 198; vi, 171 insurrection in, iii, 160 in revolt, iv, 194 famine in, iv, 199 revolt of, iv, 310 agitation in (1797), vi, 31, 34 fall of, vi, 171

Paris, Treaty of, vi, 175, 356 February Revolution in, vi, 277 improvements in, vi, 318 Congress of, vi, 343 siege of, vii, 123 Germans enter, vii, 128 Commune in, vii, 129 Exposition, vii, 265 falls to Germans, x, 64 a deserted city, x, 65-67 liberated by Allics, x, 249 Victory-Day in, x, 251-254 Paris-New York flight, Nungesser and Coli attempt, ix, 245 PARKER, SIR GILBERT The Coronation of King Edward VII., vii, Parliament (English), at Westminster (1258), iii, 61 at Oxford, iii, 62 of Simon de Montfort, iii, 70 passes resolutions against Slave Trade, v, 269 Parliament (England), first German, vi, 286 Parliamentarians, resources of the, iv, 295 Parma, Duke of (Alexander Farnese), prepares to invade England, iv, 176 Parmenio, i, 324, 328 Parnassus, Mount, i, 17, 43 Parsi, religion, early study of, i, 35 religion and monotheism, i, 41 Parsis, emigration of, i, 33 defeat of, i, 33 Parthians, the, ii, 53 Partition of Poland, v, 237 Pasargadæ, i, 137, 138 Pashitch, ix, 208 Passarowitz, Peace of, v, 132; vi, 50 Passing of Lenin, ix, 219 Pasteur, vii, 158 Patarini, driven from Milan, the, ii, 321 Pater Patriæ, iii, 177 Paths, the, i, 107 Patrician, the title, ii, 251 Patricians, the, i, 90; ii, 46 and Plebeians, i, 232 Patricius Romanorum, ii, 250-251 Patroons, the, iv, 254 Patton, Gen. George, x, 330 Paul III., iv, 103

Paul IV., publishes the Index, iv, 104 abolishes nepotism, iv, 106 Paul of Russia strangled, vi. 86 Paul, Saint, apparition of, ii, 177 Paullus, ii, 35 Pausanias, first victor at Delphi, i, 47 Pavia, battle of, iv, 62 pillage of, iv, 70 Pazzi, conspiracy of the, iii, 268 Peace Conference, The, vii, 247 Peace Conference, Central American, viii, 230 Shanghai, viii, 291 (See also Conference) Peace Making at Portsmouth, viii, 107 Peace of Paris, iii, 39; v, 198; vi, 171 Peace of Utrecht, The, v, 103 Peace Treaty, (See Treaty) Pearl Harbor, x, 87 Pearl Harbor, x, 85, 137, 203, 336 treachery of Japanese attack on, x, 87 location of U.S. Fleet at, x, 87-89 Japanese submarine destroyed, x, 89-90 failure of warning system, x, 91-92 Japanese strategy, x, 92-95 Japanese objectives, x, 97-98, 105-107 ships destroyed or damaged at, x, 97-106 sabotage feared, x, 94 planes destroyed at, x, 95 casualtics at, x, 108 Tapanese losses at, x, 106-107 investigation of, x, 128, 149 PEARSON, CHARLES H. Rise of Feudalism, ii, 327 Peary, Robert Edwin, reaches farthest north, viii, 216 discovers North Pole, viii, 244-254; ix, 229 Peary's Discovery of the North Pole, viii, 245 Peck, George, x, 283 Pedro, Dom, vi, 189, 217 Pedro, Don, of Spain, iii, 77 Pedro, the Cruel, iii, 170 Peel, Sir Robert, vi, 235, 236 Pegoud, Adolphe, makes first airplane loop-theloop, ix, 249, 250 Peisistratae, expulsion of the, i, 183-193 Peisistratus, i, 182 fall of, i, r83 Pekin, fall of, iii, 28 Kublai builds, iii, 7

Peking, vii, 267, 270, 279; ix, 225 Pelée, Mont, eruption of, vii, 279 Peleliu Island, x, 254 Pélissier, General, vi, 230, 340 Peloponnesian army returns to Athens, i, 245 Peloponnesian War, i, 243 Peloponnesus, invasion of, by Thebans, i, 296 Pelusium, battle of, i, 175 Pembroke, the Earl of, iii, 272 Penicillin, x, 193 Penicillin, diseases helped by, x, 193-194 discovery and development of, x, 194-195 high potency of, ix, 196 use of, x, 196-201 supply of, x, 201 Peninsular War, the, vi, 116 Penn, William, takes Jamaica, iv, 316 found Pennsylvania, iv, 320 Pennefather, General, vi, 347 Pennsylvania, x, 88, 102, 106, 274 Pennsylvania founded, iv, 320 Penny post, vi, 247 Pensacola founded, v, 131 People, Solon's classification of the, i, 114 Assembly of the, ii, 46 Pepé, General, vi, 192, 194 Pepin the Shart, ii, 168 delivers Rome, ii, 246, 250 becomes King of the Franks, ii, 250 Pepperel, Sir William, v, 173 Pepys, Samuel, v, 8 Percival, Arthur E., x, 415 Percy, Thomas, iv, 235 Pergamus, realm of, ii, 44 Pericles, rule of, i, 243 Perinthus, attack of, i, 299 Permanent World Court, ix, 103, 183, 242, 256 Perpetua, story of, ii, 115 Perpetual Edict, the, iv, 162 Perry, Captain Oliver H., vi, 156 Perry, Commodore Matthew C., opens trade with Japan, vi. 323 Persecution, denied by Abul Fazl, iv, 115 Persecutions of the Christians, ii, 109 Pershing, General John J., pursues Mexican brigands, ix, 10 reaches France, ix, 19 commands A. E. F., ix, 19

Persia (Iran), empire, extent of, i, 177 attacks Greece, i, 209 expedition against Eretria and Athens, i, 211 aids Athens, i, 299 army, disposition of, at Arbela, i, 322 concludes peace with Eastern Empire, ii, 204 invasion of, ii, 218 standard, the, ii, 220 spoil, wealth of, ii, 222 carpet, the wonderful, ii, 223 conquered by Seljuks, ii, 334 resumes relations with China, ix, 294 becomes Iran, ix, 295 Persians, defeat of, at Salamis, i, 230 conquer Armenia, ii, 142 conquer the Emperor Valerian, ii, 142 Peru, iv, 16; ix, 113, 292 wealth of, iv, 17 and Chile, ix, 198, 199 in plebiscite controversy, ix, 225 Pescara, the Marquis, iv, 61, 64 Pétain, General, succeeds Nivelle, ix, 19 trial of, x, 401, 408 Peter, Saint, ii, 163 Peter III. (Russia), v, 198, 211 Peterborough, Earl of, v, 89 Peter des Roches, iii, 45 Peterloo massacre, vi, 199 Peter of Servia, crowned, viii, 47 Peter the Great, v. 65, 94 army of, v, 98 conquests of, v, 102 death of, v, 144 Peter the Hermit, ii, 335, 340 Petition of Right, the, iv, 319 Pevensey, fall of, ii, 189 William anchors off, ii, 308 Phanès, enters Persian service, i, 174 murder of his children, i, 175 Pharnabazus, i, 274 Pharnaces defeated by Caesar, ii, 51 Pharnariot colony, ix, 211 Pharsalus, battle of, ii, 51 Phenicia, ii, 51 Phenician cities, rise of, i, 51 Phenician colonies, i, 51 Phenicians, i, 24 Philadelphia, v, 260 Philip Augustus, iii, 3

Philip of Macedon, i, 297	Pilgrim Fathers, voyage of the, iv, 287
conflict of, with Athens, i, 299	landing of the, iv, 289
appointed Strategus, i, 304	Pilsudski, Josef, ix, 54, 65
superior generalship of, i, 306	in World War I, ix, 62, 63
death of, i, 310	receives control from regency, ix, 66
Philip II. of Spain, iv, 117, 154, 162	dies, ix, 307
sends aid to Malta, iv, 144	Pindar, quotation from, i, 81
prepares to invade England, iv, 171	Pisa, Council of, iii, 189; iv, 7
conquers Portugal, iv, 187	Pisani, Nicolo, iii, 155
Philip V. of Spain, v, 113, 114	Pisaurum, carthquake destroys, ii, 58
Philip VI (France), seeks revenge on English,	Pisistratæ (Peisistratæ), conspiracy against the,
iii, 123	i, 187
confidence of, iii, 124-125	Pisistratidx, the, i, 214
at Crecy, iii, 128	Piso, L. Calpurnis, ii, 29
Philippi, battle of, ii, 51	Pitigliano, iv, 2
Philippines, discovered, iv, 44	Pitt, William, v, 201, 203, 206; vi, 233
Tariff Bill for, viii, 146	resolves to destroy French rule in America,
demand independence, viii, 243; ix, 344	v, 207
accept Independence Act, ix, 294	(See also, Chatham, Earl of)
Quezon President of, ix, 307	Pittsburgh, named for William Pitt, v, 207
Manila falls to Japanese, x, 110	Pius IV., convenes third Council of Trent, iv,
Bataan and Corregidor fall, x, 110	106
Leyte invasion, x, 255	Pius IX., vii, 364
Aparri captured, x, 386	Pius X., vii, 368
Japanese delegation at Manila, x, 412	Pius XI., succeeds Benedict XV., ix, 198
Phillippeaux, Colonel, vi, 73, 76	leaves Vatican, ix, 257
PHILLIPS, W. ALISON	dies, ix, 380
The Revolution of 1848, vi, 277	Pius XII., succeeds to papacy, ix, 380
War of Greek Independence, vi, 201	Pizarro, Francisco, iv, 16
Phocians, the, i, 301	Placentia, resistance of, ii, 10
Phocion, i, 300	Plague, the, iii, 139; iv, 60. (See Black Death)
Phænix Park murders, vii, 149	at Athens, 1, 245
Photography, vii, 195	nature of the, i, 246
Photography, improvements in, vii, 195	origin of the, i, 246
color, vii, 199	characteristics of the, i, 246
Phtah, Cambyses enters temple of, i, 180	at Jaffa, vi, 73
	Plague at Athens, The, i, 245
Phya, i, 184 Piagnoni, the, iii, 311, 330	Plagues, two great, i, 72
	Plassey, battle of, v, 202
Pichegru, conquers Holland, vi, 28	Plastic Surgery. (See Military Surgery)
death of, vi, 88	Plastiras, Nicholas, Greek general, ix, 307
Pickett, vii, 75	Platea, battle of, i, 232
Picts, the, ii, 180	PLATO
Piedmont, vii, 9	Death of Socrates, i, 275
attacks Austria, vi, 282-283	Plebeians, grievances of, i, 235
revolt of, vi, 195	
Pierre, Jaques, vi, 47	citadel of, i, 236-237 new powers for, ii, 46
Pilmeliun, i, 55	Plebeians and Patricians, i, 232
Pilgrim Fathers, in Holland, iv, 283	Plebiscite, for Tacna-Arica, ix, 225
embark, iv, 283	reposite, for racha-fitted, in, 227

Plebiscite, for Saar, ix, 125, 295
- 1 .1 Cost Priissia, to lik Homes, 15, 120
Plevna, surrender of, vii, 134
Tider Writes IDI Dostciity, ii, 131
curious regarding Vesuvius, ii, 133
seeks to aid the distressed, ii, 133
resolves to rescue a friend, ii, 134
resolves to resolve a zazza
calmness of, ii, 134 overcome by noxious vapors, ii, 136
overcome by noxidus vaposs, a, 25°
body of, found, ii, 136
PLINY THE YOUNGER
Eruption of Mount Vesuvius, ii, 131
pling the Younger, opinions regarding Chris-
tions ii. III
with the to the elder Pliny, 11, 132
in eruption of Vesuvius, ii, 139
Plaesti, X. 254
Plough, invention of, i, 10
PLUTARCH
The Battle of Salamis, i, 221
The Founding of Rome, i, 87
Laws of Lycurgus, i, 59
Laws of Lychigus, 1, 39
Laws of Solon, i, III
Battle of Actium, ii, 53
Pocahontas, iv, 218-219
Point Barrow, Norge's crew sight, ix, 239
Poitiers, battle of, iii, 160
Poland, Agricultural Society of, vii, 32
invasion of, v, 67
civil war in, v, 220
partition of, v, 241, 340
Diet of, v, 243
re-established, vi, 120
extinction of, vii, 39
rebirth of, ix, 51-56
early history of, ix, 51-53
university at Cracow, ix, 52
Diet established, ix, 53
great patriots of, ix, 54
demands of minorities, ix, 55
claims of, ix, 56, 64
industrial conditions in, ix, 51-58
reconstruction problems, ix, 58-61
in World War I, ix, 62, 64
recognized by United States, ix, 96
President Narutowicz killed, ix, 200
to have Vilna, ix, 201

Poland, Chamberlain's report on, x, 1-10 non-aggression pact with Germany, x, 12 claims from Czechs, x, 14-16 Russian war, 1921, x, 14 pact with Russia, x, 15 army at Ukranian border, x, 16 invaded by Germany and Russia, x, 23 at San Francisco, x, 389, 391, 394 Poland Reborn, ix, 51 Polar expeditions, vii, 266, 280; ix, 227 Polians, the, ii, 273 Polish Insurrection, The, vii, 31 Politiques, the, iv, 187 Polo, Marco, the Elder, iii, 84 Polo, Marco, the Younger, claims of, to nobility, iii, 83 employed by Kublai Khan, iii, 86 merits of his book, iii, 87-88 Polo, Nicolo, iii, 84 Polonium, vii, 357 Polos, the return of the, to Venice, iii, 85 second journey of the, iii, 86 Polybius, ii, 31, 37, 43 Polycarp, martyrdom of, ii, 113 Pomerania, invasion of, by Danes, v, 102 Pompeii, excavations begun at, v, 175 Pompeius, Cneus (Pompey), ii, 51 murdered, ii, 51 Poniatowski, Josef, death of, vi, 169 great Polish patriot, ix, 54 Pontos, kingdom of, ii, 50 Pontus, massacres in, ii, 115 Pope, relation of, to Emperor, ii, 321 relation of, to Rome, ii, 248 policy of the, ii, 253 Popes, achieve temporal power, ii, 168 three rival, iii 189 loss of temporal power, vi, 55; vii, 23 Poplicola, ii, 62, 63 Porcaro, Stephen, iii, 136 Porcius, ii, 11, 14, 18 Porsenna, Lars, i, 203 Port Arthur, captured, vii, 168 attack on, viii, 16 defeat of Russian fleet at, viii, 31; x, 87 Japanese enter, viii, 63 siege of, viii, 65 Japanese lease of, ix, 8 Porteous riots, v, 145

Pretorian Guard, proclaims Claudius emperor. Portland, viii, 140 ii, 89 Port Mahon, ii, 4; v, 199 disbanded, ii, 156 Portobello, captured, v, 164 PRICE, FRANK W. Port Royal taken by English, v, 102 The "Rising Sun" Sets, x, 409 Portsmouth, Treaty of, viii, 107 Prim, General, vii, 96, 100, 104 Portugal, conquered by Philip II., iv, 187 Prima, i, 91 becomes independent, iv, 316 Primrose League, vii, 149 revolution in, vi, 188 Prince of Wales, motto of, iii, 129 assassination of King of, viii, 230 Princeton, x, 267-270 republic proclaimed, viii, 263 Printed book, earliest, iii, 251 Arriaga president, viii, 290 Printers, early, iii, 253 Portuguese, settle Brazil, iv, rog negotiate a treaty with Japan, iv, Printing by steam, vi, 304 Printing, spread of, iii, 247, 248, 252 Portuguese Revolution, The, viii, 265 Prinzip, Gavrilo, ix, 7, 93 Prioux, René Jacques Adolphe, x, 61 Posen, ix, 56, 58, 120, 126 POST, AUGUSTUS Prittwitz, Baron von, ix, 289 PROBYN, JOHN WEBB Columbus of the Air, ix, 243 Napoleon III. in Italy, vii, o Potemkin, v, 302-303 takes Otchakoff, v, 309 Procopius, i, 35; iii, 197 Prodigies, ii, 58, 76, 107 besieges Ismail, v. 310 triumphal journey of, v, 311 Production. (See War Production) Progressive Party, viii, 320 Pothinus, ii, 58 Prohibition Amendment, repeal of, ix, 292, 294 Potomac, Army of the, vii, 65 Potsdam, Reichstag meeting at, ix, 284, 285 Prometheus, i, 17 Propaganda, Communist, x, 14 Potsdam Conference, x, 401, 402, 409 German, x, 31, 56, 365, 366 Potsdam Declaration, x, 402, 410, 411 Nazi, in Germany, x, 363, 366 Pottery, invention of, i, 9 Poundage, iv, 293 Allied, in Germany, x, 364, 365 Japanese, x, 374, 376, 377, 381 Powhatan, iv, 218 Prosecution of John Wilkes and Passing of Pragmatic Sanction of Bourges, iii, 226; v, 132, the Stamp Act, v, 213 165 Protection, vi, 234 Prague, battle of, iii, 198 Protestantism, triumph of, iv, 138 besieged, ii, 282 Protestants, famous, iv, 27 Pramzimas, i, 18 Prato, capture of, iv, 10 persecuted in England, iv, 109 Protocol, World Court, U. S. reservations to, PRATT, FLETCHER The Knockout at Midway, x, 113 ix, 242, 256 Prussia, vi, 114, 285 Prehistoric World and Primitive Man, The, i, 1 gains Stettin, v, 132 Prussia, Crown Prince of, vii, 120, 123 PRESCOTT, WILLIAM H. The Conquest of Granada, iii, 275 Psammetichus, i, 176, 177 PT boats, x, 271-272 Press, progress of the, v, 213 Pressburg, Diet of, vi, 278 Pteria, combat at, i, 154 Treaty of, vi, 114 Ptolemy, son of Cleopatra, ii, 55 Publius Valerius, i, 197, 200 Prester, John, iii, 322 Puebla, siege of, vii, 48 skull of, iii, 24 Preston Pans, battle of, v, 169 Puleston, Captain, x, 87 Pretoria, surrender of, vii, 265 Pultowa, siege of, v, 99

Punic Wars, i, 331, 332; ii, 22
Punjab annexed, vi, 258
Pu-Y1, ruler of Manchukuo, ix, 259, 264, 276, 294
PYLE, ERNIE
V-Day in Paris, x, 251
Pym, death of, iv, 300
Pyramids, battle of the, vi, 55
Pyrrha, i, 17
Pyrrhus, i, 296
Pythia, i, 44
Pythoness, the, i, 44, 49
message to Crœsus, i, 157

Qatarra Depression, x, 143, 145
Quadrant invented, v, 145
Quatre Bras, Marshal Ney at, vi, 173
Quebec, battle of, v, 208
St. Lawrence bridge falls, viii, 229
Queensland, vii, 7
Quezon, Manuel Luis, first Philippine president, ix, 307
urges independence, ix, 344
Quiberon, battle of, v, 206
Quinctius, Keso, i, 236
Quincy, x, 229
Quisling, Vidkun, x, 39, 110, 408
condemned to death, x, 415
Qurâis, the, ii, 205, 209, 210

R

Our'ân, the, ii, 215

Rabat, x, 147
RADEK, KARL
The Italian Adventure: Imperialists on Parade, ix, 297
Radek, Karl, ix, 343
Radetzky, Marshal, vi, 282
Radio, in World War II, x, 118, 120, 173, 174, 341, 342, 345, 346, 365, 367, 375-380
Radio-activity, viii, 2, 5
Radio detection, x, 91, 92
Radio telephone, New York-London, ix, 255
Radium and Its Lessons, viii, 1
RAF. (See Royal Air Force)

Raglan, Lord, vi, 329, 330, 351, 353 death of, vi, 340 Ragusa, Republic of, ix, 78 Rakoksy, defeat of, v, 102, 132 Raleigh, x, 106 RALEIGH, SIR WALTER The Fall of Babylon, i, 163 Raleigh, Sir Walter, quotation from, ii, 19 imprisoned in Tower, iv, 261 History of the World, iv, 262 execution of, iv, 268 Rama VI. of Siam, dies, ix, 226 RAMBAUD, ALFRED The Beginnings of Russia, ii, 269 The Polish Insurrection, vii, 31 Rameses II., i, 19 Ramillies, battle of, v, 89 Ramsey, Sir Bertram, x, 221, 223, 224, 226 Randolph, Peyton, v, 260 Rangers, x, 231, 234 Rangoon, Burma, x, 110 RANKE, LEOPOLD VON End of the Peloponnesian War: Battle of Cheronea, i, 299 Expedition of the Ten Thousand, i, 269 RAPPOPORT, A. S. The First Russian Parliament, viii, 195 Ras Alula, vii, 152 Ras Mangascia, vii, 154 Rastadt, Peace of, v, 115 Rathenau, Walter, assassinated, ix, 199 Ratisbon, Diet of, iv, 100 Ravenna, ii, 165, 199 Exarch of, ii, 202, 248 battle of, iv, 8 RAWLINSON, GEORGE Cyrus Founds Persia, i, 133 The Founding of Chaldea, i, 21 Raymond, Count of Toulouse, ii, 339, 342, 345; iii, 35, 37 Raymond de Cordona, commands Spanish army, iv, 7, 10 Raymond VI., death of, iii, 38 Raymond Roger, bravery of, iii, 36 Rays, Cathodic, viii, 1 Lenard, viii, I Röntgen, viii, 1 Read, Lt. Com., with NC-4, ix, 168, 174, 178 Rearmament, in the U.S., ix, 380

Red Cross, vi, 337	Reynaud, x, 73
Red Rocks, battle of the, ii, 155	Reynolds, John Fulton, vii, 66
Redan, assault of the, vi, 341	REYNOLDS, QUENTIN
Reform Bill passed, vi, 231	The Army of Despair, x, 65
Reformation, The, iv, 27	REYNOLDS, QUENTIN, et al
Reformation, iv, 28	America's Greatest Naval Battle, x, 257
affects Hanseatic League, iii, 120	Rheims, Charles VII. at, iii, 225
in Denmark, iv, 88	Rheims, World War II surrender at, x, 342,
in Italy, iv, 99	343, 352
in Scotland, triumph of, iv, 138	Rhine, Confederation of the, vi, 114, 119
Reformation in Scotland, The, iv, 125	Rhineland, reoccupied by German troops, ix,
Refugees, from Norway, x, 37-57	308
from Paris, x, 67-74	Rhode Island, colonized, iv, 293
Regillus Lake, battle of, i, 206	Rhodes, iii, 94; iv, 87
Regnier, General, vi, 72, 80	Rhodes, Cecil, ix, 297
Reichsrat, abolished, ix, 294	RHYS-DAVIDS, T. W.
Reichstadt, Duc de, vi, 118	Gautama Buddha, i, 99
Reichstag, ix, 5, 41, 48	Ribbentrop, Joachim von, ix, 359; x, 4, 5, 6, 22
elections to, ix, 279	Ribot, Premier of France, ix, 21
exclusion of Communists from, ix, 283, 284	Rice, Howard, x, 184, 185
confers dictatorship on Hitler, ix, 286, 289	Richard III., crimes of, iii, 269
REID, WEMYSS	at Bosworth, iii, 272
Assassination of President McKinley, vii,	treachery of his supporters, iii, 271
281	death of, iii, 274
Reign of Akbar, The, iv, 111	Richard Cœur de Lion, iii, r
Reign of Terror, The, vi, 15	and Philip Augustus, iii, 5
Religion, development of, i, 19, 34, 35	and Tancred, iii, 5
Remus, i, 87	in Palestine campaigns, iii, 6, 7
death of, i, 88	leaves Palestine, iii, 8
Renaissance, Savonarola and the, iii, 327	capture of, iii, 8
Renaudot founds Gazette de France, iv, 292	Richard of Capua, ii, 320
Réné of Anjou, takes Nancy, iii, 259	Richardson, Sir Benjamin, vii, 186
solicits aid from the Swiss, iii, 260	Richelieu, iv, 274, 279; vi, 182, 184
before body of Duke of Burgundy, iii, 267	in Austrian affairs, iv, 273
Rentenmark, ix, 290	death of, iv, 293
RENWICK, JAMES	Richmond (Henry VII.), Earl of, invasion of
The Invention of the Steamboat, vi, 91	England by, iii, 270
Reparations, conference on, ix, 260	Richmond, capture of, vii, 80
Report from Tarawa, x, 183	Richthofen, aviator, killed, ix, 93
Repton, ii, 193	Riego, rebellion of, vi, 187
Republic of St. Mark, vi, 283	Riel's insurrection, vii, 158
Requesens, Don Luis de, iv, 147, 160	Rienzi, Nicola di, iii, 134
Retz, Cardinal de, iv, 315	assassination of, iii, 135
Revival of the Imperial Dignity, ii, 285	Riera, Emmet, x, 270, 271
Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, iv, 331	RIESS, CURT
Revolt in Spain, ix, 311	We Must Win Another Battle in Germany,
Revolution in China, viii, 293	X, 357
Revolution of 1848, The, vi, 277	Rights, Declaration of, v, 27
Revolutions in Rome, iii, 131	Riiser-Larsen, Hjalmar, ix, 236
2	28

Rise and Fall of the Mexican Empire, vii, 47 Rise of Feudalism, ii, 327 Rise of Mahdism, The, vii, 145 Rise of Methodism and the New Philanthropy, The, v, 155 Rise of the Dutch Republic, iv, 151 Rise of the Young Turks, The, viii, 233 "Rising Sun" Sets, The, x, 409 Roberts, Lord, vii, 130, 144, 245, 265 Roberts, Report on Pearl Harbor, x, 91, 92, 97 Robespierre, v, 316 Robot bombs, x, 249, 328 Rochefoucauld, iv, 310, 312 Rochester conflagration, viii, 16 Rockefeller, John D., death of, ix, 344 Rockets, x, 235, 312 Rockingham Ministry, the, v, 219 Roderic the Goth, ii, 228 at Xeres, ii, 231, 232 Rodney, v, 294, 302 Rodolph, Emperor, iii, 91 Roger, Count of Sicily, ii, 267 Rojestvensky, Admiral, viii, 41, 91, 111 Rolf Ganger, (See Rollo) Rollin, Ledru, vi, 274 Rollo attacks Normandy, ii, 263-264 Roman, triumph, origin of, i, 93 royalty, mythical period of, i, 193 laws, i, 235 Forum, i, 283, 291, 292 wars, i, 296 fortitude, ii, 6 army, ii, 10, 119 Senate, ii, 22, 30, 40, 46, 49 triumphs, ii, 44 government, ii, 46 Empire, division of, ii, 52 army in Germany, ii, 81 cavalry, flight of, ii, 85 army, defeat of, ii, 86 legions withdrawn from Britain, ii, 180 consulship abolished, ii, 203 and Teuton, union of, ii, 259 nobles, feuds of, iii, 133 Republic, vi, 55 Roman Empire, division of, under Diocletian, ii, six emperors of, at once, ii, 154 division of, ii, 168

Roman Empire of the West extinguished, ii, 195 Eastern, ii, 195, 225 Romans, rout of the, by the Gauls, i, 287 massacre of the, i, 292 learn Hasdrubal's plans, ii, 13 victory of the, ii, 20 driven out of Germany, ii, 87 grow dispirited at Jerusalem, 11, 125 three kings of the, in Germany, 1:1, 191 Romanzoff, General, v, 240 Rome, founding of, i, 57, 88 Plebeians and Patricians in, i, 232 Gauls invade, i, 293 takes measures for defence, i, 289 sack of, i, 293; iv, 68 geese save the citadel, i, 295 war of, with Tarentum, i, 296 gains Cisalpine Gaul, i, 332 gains Sardinia, Corsica, and Illyria, i, 332 peril of, ii, 10 acts as arbitrator, ii, 22 wars on Acheans, ii, 40 and her allies, ii, 45 social war in, ii, 48 first civil war of, ii, 49 regains power in Asia, ii, 51 division of Empire of, ii, 152 terror in, ii, 87 great fires of, ii, 108 sacked by Vandals, ii, 194 taken by the Goths, ii, 200 attacked by the Lombards, ii, 245-246 invaded by the Saracens, 11, 259 in Mıddle Ages, iii, 131 during the Great Schism, iii, 133 law and order restored in, iii, 134 bannerets in, iii, 135 seven chief magistrates of, iii, 136 Inquisition established in, iv, 104 republic proclaimed, vi, 55 King of, vi, 118 capital of Italy, vii, 22, 129 insurrection in, vii, 23 surrender of, x, 214 Rome-Berlin Axis, ix, 349 Rommel, Field Marshal Erwin, x, 132, 140, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146 driven from Egypt, x, 136

Romulus, classifies inhabitants, i, 90 Bouilds his city, i, 90 Romulus and Remus leave Alba, i, 87 dispute of, i, 88 Röntgen, Professor, vii, 179 Roon, Count von, vii, 118 Roosevelt, Franklin Delano, elected President, ix, 278 first acts after inauguration of, ix, 292 appeals to factions in Cuba, ix, 293 re-elected, second term, ix, 328 seeks to enlarge Supreme Court, ix, 343 speaks in Canada, ix, 345 re-elected, third term, x, 75 asks Congress to declare war, x, 110 plans for African invasion, x, 137 signs pay-as-you-go tax bill, x, 171 re-elected, fourth term, x, 312 dics, x, 331, 335 funeral of, x, 333-335 era of, x, 336-337 Roosevelt, Theodore, becomes President after death of McKinley, vii, 279 speaks in Chicago, vii, 335 receives Minister of Panama, vii, 376 elected President, viii, 30 inauguration of, viii, 76 influence of, at Russo-Japanese conference of Portsmouth, viii, 111, 112 death of, ix, 95 on Turkey, ix, 204 Root, Elihu, viii, 215 ROSCOE, WILLIAM Cosmo de' Medici, iii, 171 Rosen, Baron, viii, 113 Rosetta Stone, vi, 69 Ross, Sir James, vi, 250 Rossbach, battle of, v, 195, 204 Rostock, x, 349 Rostock, x, 349 Rostopchin, Count, vi, 130 Rothschild, Nathan, vi, 120 Roumania. (See Rumania) Roumelia, East, vii, 142 joins Bulgaria, vii, 158 Roussine, Captain, viii, 108 Royal Air Force (RAF), x, 8, 62, 64, 77, 83, 232 Royal Wards, ii, 331	Rubruquis, William de, iii, 84, 88 Rudini, Marquis di, vii, 153, 157 Ruhr, occupied by French and Belgians, ix, 200 Rumania (Roumania), vii, 142; ix, 3, 4 Kingdom of, vi, 344; vii, 141 signs peace treaty, ix, 93 Danube Commission, ix, 158 treaty with Turkey, ix, 215 regency governs in, ix, 256 invades Carpatho-Ukrainc, ix, 380 treaty with Poland, x, 13, 16, 26 cedes territory to Russia, x, 74 Michael, King of, x, 75 joins Axis, x, 75 Britain at war with, x, 85 signs armistuce, x, 254 Rundstedt, Karl von, x, 353 Runnymede, iii, 47 Rurik, ii, 265, 273 Russell, Admiral, v, 55, 62 RUSSELL, W. H. Laying of the Atlantic Cable, vii, 85 Russia, beginning of, ii, 265, 272 first Mongol invasion of, iii, 60 triumph of, over Sweden, v, 93 computation of time by Christian Era introduced, v, 66 Peter proclaims himself head of Russian Church, v, 67 invaded by Charles X., v, 89 Holy Synod in, v, 143 treaty of Nystad, v, 144 alliance with Austria, v, 144 relations with Turkey, v, 145, 154, 220, 235 269, 302; vi, 320 murder of Peter III, v, 211 occupies Warsaw, v, 243 conquest of the Crimea, v, 303-312 peace with Sweden, v, 334 army of, in 1812, vi, 123 Czar Paul assassinated, vi, 90 Napoleon invades, vi, 120 Moscow campaign, vi, 121-138 the Holy Alliance, vi, 177 declares war on Persia and conquers Armenia, vi, 217 Crimean War, vi, 329-343 Battle of Inkerman, vi, 347-355

Russia, sovereignty over Siberia, vii, 7 position of Russian serfs, vii, 27 Russo-Prussian alliance formed, vii, 39 Constitution of, viii, 121 Safi, x, 147 diplomatic relations with Japan, viii, 16 ficet defeated at Port Arthur, viii, 31 incident of Dogger Bank, viii, 41-46 capitulation of Port Arthur, viii, 63 loss of Mukden, viii, 76 freedom of worship granted, viii, 87 Baltic fleet annihilated, viii, 87 Peace Treaty signed at Portsmouth, N. H., viii, 98, 107-121 new national parliament instituted, viii, 162 first Russian Duma meets, viii, 195-200 Czar dissolves Duma and proclaims martial law, viii, 207 evacuation of Manchuria, viii, 217 troops occupy Teheran, viii, 291 at war with Germany, ix, 5 Kerensky, ix, 20, 21 peace of Brest-Litovsk, ix, 22 (See also Russians; Union of Soviet Socialist Republics) Russian Conquest of the Crimea, The, v, Russian Parliament, first, viii, 195 Russian serfs, freeing of, vii, 25, 27 Russians, in World War I, ix, 7, 8, 9 Russo-Japanese War, causes of, viii, 221 Russo-Turkish war, vi, 208 Rustam, the Persian general, ii, 219 Ruthenia, ix, 380; x, 16 Ruyter, de, iv, 322 Ryswick, Peace of, v, 66 Ryukyu Islands, x, 412 key island of, invaded, x, 331

Saar (Sarre), ix, 123-125
rejoins Germany, ix, 295, 307
Commission, ix, 114, 124
Saarbrücken, battle of, vii, 120
Sabines, the, i, 92
Sabine women, rape of the, i, 90
Sackville, Lord George, v, 205
Sacred Band, the, i, 308
Sacred War, first, i, 109

Sacrifice, human, i, 253 at Olympia, i, 83 Sadowa, battle of, vii, 21 Sagasta, vii, 96, 101, 104 Sahara, airlines in, ix, 251 St. Albans, battle of, iii, 254 St. Antoine, battle of, iv, 314 St. Arnaud, General, vi, 315 Marshal, vi, 329, 330, 340 St. Clair, General, v, 282 St. Egidio, battle of, iii, 209 St. Germain, Treaty of, iv, 184 St. Helena, Napoleon sent to, vi, 174 St. James, ii, 76 St. Jerome, ii, 166 St. John, ii, 103, 110 St. Lô, x, 291, 295, 296, 297, 299 St. Luke, ii, 69, 77 St. Mihiel salient, taken by Americans, ix, -9 St. Patrick's Cathedral, New York, consecrated, viii, 278 Saint Paul, Comte de, iv, 81. (See also St. Pol) St. Peter's, Basilica of, ii, 258 begun, iii, 349 St. Petersburg founded, v, 67 name changed to Petrograd, ix, 6 St. Pierre, destruction of, vii, 289 St. Pol, iv, 73 St. Quentin, battle of, iv, 118 St. Sophia, church of, ii, 203 St. Thomas, sack of, iv, 264 Saipan, x, 249, 312, 320, 372 Sakhalin, viii, 109 Sakyas, the, i, 99 Saladin, iii, 2 becomes Sultan of Egypt, ii, 350 captures Jerusalem, ii, 350 fights against crusade, iii, 6,7 Salamis, i, 209 battle of, i, 221 Salem, persecution of witches at, v, 65 Salerno, x, 173 Salerno, x, 172, 173-182, 226, 306 Salic Law enforced, iii, 112 Salisbury, Earl of, attacks Orleans, iii, 212 Salisbury, Earl of (Robert Cecil), iv, 227, 229 Salisbury, Lord, vii, 132, 139 Salisbury, railway accident at, viii, 207

Sardis, fall of, i, 158 Salmeron, iv, 101 Sarmatians invade Illyricum, ii, 156 Saluces, Marquis de, iv. 73 Sarre. (See Saar) Salvation Army, vii, 80 Sarrut, General, death of, vi, 148 Salzburg, x, 351 Sarto, Cardinal, Joseph, vii, 369 Samnites, the, ii, 48, 49 Sassanian dynasty, ii, 219 Samnite wars, i, 296 Satapathabrahmana, quotation from the, i, 15 Sampson, Admiral, vii, 204 Saudi Arabia, x, 27 San, or Sansi, i, 27 San Bernardino Strait, x, 262, 263, 287 Savage, Sir John, iii, 272 Savary, General, vi, 223 Sanctuary at Jerusalem, ii, 126 SAVIC, V. R. San Domingo (Santo Domingo), insurrection A United Yugoslavia, ix, 67 in v, 340 Savona, capture of, iv, 81 republic of, vi, 217, 247 taken by Doria, iv, 74 President assassinated, viii, 291 Sandwich Islands discovered, v, 269 Savonarola, Girolamo, iii, 327 excites populace, iii, 311 San Francisco, x, 104 attitude of, toward the Renaissance, iii, 327 San Francisco Conference, delegates convene, sermons of, iii, 328, 331 x, 339 policies of, iii, 328-330 Conference closes, x, 386 enemies of, iii, 333 Argentine question, x, 389-391 trial by fire of, iii, 334 Latin-American bloc, x, 390-394 imprisoned, iii, 335 veto power issue, x, 392-393 Savoy, Duke of, iv, 76 San Francisco Disaster, The, viii, 175 Saxon Conquest of Britain, The, ii, 181 San Ildefonso, treaty of, v, 294 San Salvador, iii, 301 Saxons, revolt against Henry IV. of Germany. ii, 323 San Stefano, treaty of, vii, 130 victory at Deorham, ii, 191 Santa Cruz Islands, Battle of, x, 133 Saxony, Crown Prince of, vii, 121 Santa Fé built, iii, 278 Scarborough, Parke, x, 304 Santa Rosa, vi, 195 Schacht, Hjalmar, ix, 289, 290, 315 Santiago, battle of, vii, 205 Scharnhorst, x, 118 Santos-Dumont, vii, 279 SCHAUFFLER, ROBERT HAVEN Sapor (King of Persia), death of, ii, 148 The Eruption of Vesuvius, viii, 165 defeats Valerian, ii, 117 Saracen army, ii, 231 Schillenburg, General, x, 353 Schiller, iv, 274 Saracens, under Omar, ii, 217 Schism, the Great, iii, 133, 195 loss of, at Cadesia, ii, 220 Schleicher, Kurt von, German Chancellor, ix, land in Spain, ii, 230 278, 291-292 conquests of the, ii, 239 Schley, Admiral, vii, 214 invade France, ii, 241 Schnee, Heinrich, ix, 267 invade Rome, ii, 259 Schomberg, Meinhardt, v, 33, 34, 37, 41 Saratoga, x, 117 Schönbrunn, Treaty of, vi, 118 Saratoga, v, 285, 290 SCHOULER, JAMES Sardanapalus, i, 73 The Battle of Gettyshurg, vii, 65 Sardica, Council of, ii, 164 The Declaration of Independence, v, 271 Sardinia, i, 332; ii, 4; vi, 345; vii, 20 The Discovery of Gold in California, vi, 259 joins war with Russia, vi, 338 The Emancipation of the Slaves, vii, 55 Sardinians, gallantry of, vi, 340 The Fight between the Monitor and the Sardis, the Persians besiege, i, 156 Merrimac, vii, 41 capture of, i, 156

Schultz, Fritz, x, 350	Sennacherib, destruction of, i, 131
schwab, Charles M., 1x, 93	results of disaster of, i, 132
ceinio, Nasica, il, 24	Separation of Norway and Sweden, The,
slected Consul, 11, 31	viii, 99
a :=:a Publius, ii, 7, 29, 34, 37	Sepoys, outbreak of, vii, 1
expels Carthaginians from Spain, ii, 21	September massacres, vi, 19
lands in Africa, ii, 21	Septimus Severus, persecutes Christians, ii, 114
destroys Carthage, ii, 22	Serajevo, ix, 208
attacks Megara, ii, 31	Serbia (Servia), vii, 130, 131, 141, 158
blocks harbor, ii, 32	Pachitch becomes premier, viii, 374
curse of, ii, 35	receives Austrian ultimatum, ix, 5
Sclavonians, ii, 280	at war with Bulgarians, ix, 9
defeated by Henry I. of Germany, ii, 282	achieves independence, ix, 69
Scotland, united, iii, 112	in way of German expansion, ix, 72
Reformation in, iv, 138	Danube Commission, ix, 159
unites with England, v, 89	Serrano, General, vii, 97, 99, 101, 103, 108
unites with England, 1, 09	SETON-WATSON, R. W.
Scots, the, ii, 180	The Archduke Francis Ferdinand, ix, 1
prepare for war, iii, 100	Sevastopol, position of, vi, 330
Scott, Robert Falcon, sails, viii, 263	attack on, vi, 333
Scottish leaders, iii, 102	siege of, vi, 337
archers, iii, 108	fired, vi, 342
army, iv, 20	taken by Germans, x, 132
Scutage, ii, 330	retaken by Russians, x, 214
Seythia, Goths in, ii, 269	Seven Bishops, trial of the, v, I
Sea Beggars, the, iv, 159	Seven Weeks' War, vii, 83
"Sea Dogs," the, iv, 169	Seven Years' War, The, v, 193
Sea of Japan, battle of the, viii, 89	Seven Years' War, v, 210
Seattle, viii, 139	Severus, becomes emperor, ii, 142
Sebastopol. (See Sevastopol) Secession of Panama and the Panama Can-	death of, ii, 142
Secession of Panama and the	Sevez, Francois, x, 344
al, The, vii, 377	Seville, first auto-da-fé at, iii, 268
Seckendorff, v, 145, 150	reduced by Musa, ii, 236
Second Republic and the Second Empire in	rebellion of, ii, 237
France, The, vi, 311	Sewing-machine, the, vi, 306
Sedan, battle of, vii, 122	Sforza, Francesco, iv, 58, 63, 65, 76
Segestes, ii, 79	Shackleton, Sir Ernest, viii, 242; ix, 7, 11
Selim III., captures Egypt, Syria, Palestine, iv,	Shalmaneser V., i, 53, 72
26 Funda iv 746	Shanghai, ix, 277, 344, 367
Sultan of Othman Empire, iv, 146	Shaw, American destroyer, x, 100
wants Cyprus, iv, 147	Shawnawaze pillaged, iii, 180-181
Seljuk Turks conquer Persia, ii, 334	Shekan, massacre of, vii, 146
Semitic emigration, the, i, 24	Shenandoah, wrecked, ix, 371
Senate, the, i, 59, 120	Shepherd Kings, i, 19
Senate Public Lands Committee, ix, 217	chaphards the watching, II, 70, 75-70
Senator of Rome, office of the, iii, 132	Sherman Frederick C., x, 264, 205, 207, 200
Senlac, battle of, ii, 308	Sherman's march through Georgia, vii, oo
Sennacherib, i, 125	SHERROD, ROBERT
pillages Judah, i, 127	Report from Tarawa, x, 183
advance of, i, 129	-

Shigemitsu, Mamoru, x, 414 "Ship-money," ii, 297 Shore, Sir John, v, 335 Shoup, David, x, 189, 191 Shovel, Sir Cloudesley, v, 89 Siam. (See Thailand) Siberia, first exiles to, v, 89 Poles sent to, vi, 230 railway across, vii, 161-168; ix, 79 Japanese troops withdrawn from, ix, 199 Japanese menace to, ix, 374; x, 24 Siberian railway, vii, 159, 161 Sibuyan Sea, x, 262-264 Sicilian Vespers, The, iii, 75 Sicilian Vespers, story of, iii, 81-82 Sicily, captured by Athens, i, 258 first slave insurrection in, ii, 44 subdued by the Arabs, ii, 259 taken from the Saracens, ii, 266 conquest of, ii, 267 importance of conquering, iii, 11 dissatisfaction in, iii, 78 disaffection in, iii, 80 taxation in, iii, 80 Easter in, iii, 81 Garbaldi's invasion of, vii, 19 Sicily invaded, x, 171 conquest of, completed, x, 172 Sickles, General, vii, 71, 77 Sidon captured by Crusaders, ii, 350 Siege of Acre, The, vi, 71 Siege of Jerusalem, The, ii, 119 Siege of Port Arthur, The, viii, 65 Siege of Syracuse, The, i, 253 Siege of Vienna, The, iv, 321 Sieges, famous, viii, 70 Siegfried Line, x, 313 Sierra Leone, v, 302 Sieyès, Abbé, vi, 84 Sigismund, King of Hungary, iii, 191, 192 summons Council of Constance, iii, 192 opposed by Bohemians, iii, 195-196 defeated, iii, 197 coronation of, as King of Bohemia, iii, 198 Sigurd, ii, 262 Sikhs, the, troubles begin with, vi, 248 Sikh War, second, vi, 258 Silesia, vi, 167; ix, 56, 119, 126; x, 13, 313 seized by Frederick the Great, v, 164

Silesia, invaded by Frederick the Great, v, 167 recaptured, v, 196 Silk-making in Europe, ii, 203 Simard, Capt., x, 125 SIME, JAMES The Franco-German War, vii, 117 Revival of the Imperial Dignity, ii, 285 Simon de Montfort (1st), iii, 13, 36 death of, iii, 38 Simon de Montfort (2d), iii, 65 military successes of, iii, 67 Simon de Montfort (3d), iii, 72 Simplon Tunnel, The, viii, 73 Sincous, brother of Rurik, ii, 273 Singapore, Japanese take, x, 110 Sirio, wrecked, viii, 216 Sir Walter Raleigh's Expedition, iv, 261 SISMONDI, J. C. L. DE Charles V. Conquers Italy, iv, 57 Charles VIII. Invades Italy, iii, 305 The Decline and Fall of Venice, vi, 45 League of Cambray, iv, 1 Sixtus, Roman bishop, ii, 116 Slave question, the, vii, 55 Slaves, emancipation of, vii, 63 Slavs, the, ii, 269-270 Sleswig, German colony at, ii, 283 Slocum, General, vii, 69 Slovakia, under the Magyars, ix, 83 Poland drops claims to, x, 13 joins Axis, x, 75 Slovenes, ix, 68, 73-78 Small-pox, inoculation for, v, 144 Smigly-Rydz, General, x, 12, 16 Smith, Adam, v, 230; vi, 233 publication of "Wealth of Nations," by, Smith, Dan F., Jr., x, 264, 265 Smith, Captain John, iv, 213 adventures of, iv, 213 saved by Pocahontas, iv, 218 President of Council, iv, 220 returns to England, iv, 223 Smith, Sir Thomas, iv, 220 Smith, Sir W. Sidney, vi, 74, 77 Smith, Walter Bedell, x, 344 Smolensk, x, 85 Smolensko, French enter, vi, 126

SMOLLETT, TOBIAS Soult, Marshal, paintings of, vi, 142 The Capture of Cape Breton, v, 171 South Africa, Union of, vii, 130; ix, 185 The First Jacobite Rebellion, v, 117 South American finance, viii, 210 Smuts, Field Marshal, x, 219, 222 South Carolina, founded, iv, 316 South China, at war with North China, ix, Smyrna, ix, 207, 210 Snow King, the, iv, 275 198, 199 Sobieski, John, iv, 324; vi, 49 Sun Yat Sen, president of, dies, ix, 226 Socage, ii, 330 South Dakota, x, 413 Social and Mithridatic Wars, ii, 45 South Pole, first reached, viii, 311 Social Democrats, in Germany, ix, 283, 286, Byrd at, ix, 293-294 South Sea Bubble, The, v, 133 289 Social Revolution, ix, 222 South Sea Bubble, v, 140 Social War (Athens), i, 296 South Sea Company, v, 134, 138 Socialist Government in France, ix, 312, 319 organized, v, 102 Society Islands discovered, v, 222 SOUTHEY, ROBERT Society of Jesus, v, 245 The Battle of the Nile, vi, 57 (See also Jesuits) Soviet Russia, (See Umon of Soviet Socialist Society of the Garden Ruccellai, iv, 11 Republics) Socinus, iv, 109 Soviet Union. (See Union of Soviet Socialist Socrates, conduct of, i, 279 Republics) death of, i, 275, 282 Spain, Visigoths conquer, ii, 194 visitors to, i, 275 attack by the Arabs, ii, 225 on immortality, i, 276 Inquisition established in, 111, 268 Soimonoff, General, vi, 347 Christian kingdoms of, united, iii, 268 Soissons, taken by Allies, ix, 24, 26, 27 fall of the Arabian Empire in, iii, 279, 283 SOKOLSKY, GEORGE E. growth of, iii, 284 Manchuria: A New Act in the World Drama, rise of power of, iii, 306 ix, 261 intolerance in, iii, 340 Solace, x, 98 outbreak of Moors in, iii, 343 Soldier Bonus Bill, ix, 224, 308 expels the Moors, iii, 349 Solemn League and Covenant, iv, 303 possessions of, v, 72-73 Solferino, battle of, vii, 14 wars against Great Britain, vi, 103 Soliman invades Austria, iv, 75 Chili and Peru make war on, vii, 80 Solomon Islands, x, 411, 413 Liberals in, vii, 93, 95, 99 rebellion in, vii, 96 Solon, i, 121, 113, 121, 183 Solon's laws, criticism of, i, 120 republic, vii, 129 universal suffrage in, vii, 159 classification of the people, i, 114 Solyman the Magnificent, attacks Malta, iv, 142 Republican victory in, ix, 258 adopts new constitution, ix, 259 Somaliland, exploration of, vi, 356 recognizes Soviet Union, ix, 293 Italian interest in, ix, 304 civil war in, ix, 311-327, 380 British Somaliland attacked by Italians, x, 75 Franco government in, ix, 343 Italian Somaliland taken by British, x, 75 Franco regime recognized, ix, 380 Somers, Sir George, iv, 222 neutral in World War II, x, 24 Somers, John, v, 4, 27 Spaniards, cruelty of, iv, 4, 13, 70 Sonderbund, dissolved, vi, 258 Spanish Armada, iv, 176, 180 SONDERN, FREDERIC JR. "Spanish Fury," the, iv, 161 The Invasion, x, 227 Spanish Netherlands, the, iv, 164 Soong, T. V., ix, 365 successes in, iv, 160 Soryu, x, 117, 126

Spanish nobility, Jewish blood in, iii, 286 Steamboat, first, vi, 101 Spanish-Papal invasion of Ireland, iv, 208 inventors of the, vi, 95 Sparta, rise of, i, 57, 209 Steam engine, the, v. 227 attacked by the Corinthians, i, 283 Fulton orders, vi, 100 and Thebes, war between, i, 296 of Watt, vi, 92 Spartan children, training of, i, 66 Steam plow, the, vi, 300 "Special Correspondent," vi, 331 Steam printing press, vi, 304 Speculation, mania for, v, 135 Steam railways, vi, 300 Speech, beginnings of, i, 2-3 Steamships, vi, 299 Spencer, Stanley, vii, 280 Steenkirke, battle of, v, 65 sails balloon, vii, 375 STEEVENS, G. W. The Battle of Elandslaagte, vii, 257 SPENDER, HAROLD The Battle of Omdurman, vii, 219 The League of the Balkan States, viii, 375 The Rise of Mahdism, vii, 145 SPEWACK, SAMUEL Steinmetz, General von, vii, 120 Passing of Lenin, ix, 219 Stephen of Blois, ii, 337, 345 Speyer, Henry IV. (Germany) at, ii, 324 Stephenson, George, vi, 301 Spider, Mohammed and the, 11, 210-211 Stephenson, Robert, vii, 111 Spires, Diet of, iv, 35 Stettin, v, 132 Spirit of St. Louis, The, Lindbergh's airplane, Stettinius, Edward R. Jr., x, 390, 391 ix, 252 Stimson, Henry L., ix, 259, 270, 272 Spitzbergen, polar flights from, ix, 231-232 Stirling, Admiral, Sir James, vi, 328 Spoil, wealth of Persian, ii, 222 Stirling, the gate of Scotland, iii, 99, 110 Spokane, viii, 137 Stoessel, General, viii, 200, 207 Spoleto, duchy of, founded, ii, 248 Stolypin, viii, 207 Sprague, C. A. F., x, 285, 286, 291, 292 STONE, I. F. Sprague, Thomas L., x, 286, 297 Farewell to F. D. R., x, 333 Spruance, Admiral, x, 113, 114, 119, 128, 129, Stone implements, early use of, i, 6-8 Stork at Aquileia, story of ii, 172 Squalus, U. S. submarine, founders, ix, 392 Storm-gods, of Zoroaster, i, 36 Stair, Lord, v, 119 Storm-troops, Nazi, ix, 282 Stair, Master of, v, 43, 119 Storthing, the, iii, 53 Stalin, Josef, x, 22, 23, 24, 78, 140, 141, 215, Störting, x, 33, 45 216, 343 Strafford, impeachment of, iv, 293 Stalingrad besieged, x, 133 Stralsund beseiged, iv, 273 Germans at, destroyed, x, 149, 151-171 Strang, M., x, 22 Stamford Bridge, battle of, ii, 307-308 Strassman, Dr. F., x, 407 Stamp Act, the, v, 217, 219 Stratius, ii, 37 Stanislaus, King of Poland, v, 243 Streeter, Mrs. Ruth Cheney, x, 171 Stanley, Henry M., vii, 144, 158 Strongbow conquers Ireland, ii, 350 on Victoria Nyanza, vii, 130 Struensee, v, 235, 245 Stanley, Sir William, iii, 271 STUBBS, WILLIAM Star Chamber abolished, iv, 293 Star worshippers, Chaldeans as, i, 28 The Baron's War and First English Parliament, iii, bī Starhemberg, Count, iv, 323, 328 States-General, Netherlands, iv. 151 The Third Crusade, iii, 1 States-General of France, first, 111, 90 Stump, Felix B., x, 286 meeting of, in, 1789, v, 314 Submarine War Zone, ix, 8 States of Franche-Comté, ii, 257 Submarines, sink Lusitania, ix, 9 voyages of Deutschland, ix, 11 Stauffacher of Schwyz, iii 92

15, 16 called to aid of Italy, iv. 5 Squalus founders, ix, 392 in Milan, iv, g Midgit, x, 88-89 Guard, vì, 15 Shell Midway, x, 127 Swiss Confederacy, The: Swiss War of In-Japanese, in Battle of Midway, x, 129-130 dependence, The, 111, 91 losses from, x, 138, 140, 143 Switzerland, ducal tyranny in, iii, 02 largest U. S., lost, x, 171 railway between Italy and, viii, 73, 76 Italian, surrender, x, 178 participation in League, ix, 155, 159, 160 Sudan, the, vii, 145 intermediary, German peace feelers, x, 366 conquered by Mehemet Ali, vi, 199 intermediary, Japanese peace note, x, 409 Sudetenland, ix, 345, 351, 352, 354, 362 Sybaris, destruction of, i, 209 Sylverius, Pape, banished, ii, 199 Sucz Canal, The, vii, 109 Suez Canal, vi, 355; vii, 129 Sylvester III, Pope, ii, 313 Sugar-cane taken to Hispaniola, iii, 349-350 SYMONDS, JOHN ADDINGTON The Execution of Savonarola, iii, 327 Sulla, L. C., ii, 44, 48-49, 50 Symphonan, mattyrdom of, 11, 114 Sullivans, x, 284 Syracuse, foundation of, i, 109 Summary of the Five-Power Treaty on siege of, i, 253 Naval Armament, ix, 191 receives foreign aid, i, 262 Sun Yat Sen, viii, 291, 294, 295, 310; ix, 226 vengeance of victors at, i, 267 Superfortresses, x, 249, 312, 356, 371, 372, Syria, a Roman province, ii, 51 376, 386, 401, 402 conquered by Chostoes, ii, 204 Suppression of the Greater Monasteries, attacked by Arabs, ii, 225 iv. 80 conquered by Turks, ii, 334 Suppression of the Templars, iii, 95 French mandate over, ix, 299 Sûrahs of Mohammed, ii, 215 Syrian question at San Francisco Confer-Suribachi, Mount, x, 313, 322, 323, 328 ence, x, 389 Surigao Strait, x, 262, 263, 271, 273-275, 278, Szathmar, treaty of, v, 102 280, 287 Surrender of Burgoyne at Saratoga, v, 279 Т Surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, The, Table, manners at, i, 62 V, 295 how supplied, i, 62 Surrey, challenges James IV., iv, 20 Tables, The Twelve, i, 232, 239 Susloparoff, Ivan, x, 344 use of public, i, 62 Suwaroff (Suwarrow), v, 309; vi, 83 admission of new members at, i, 63 Sviatoslaf, ii, 277 Taborites, the, iii, 197 Swabians, the, ii, 315 Tachau, battle of, iii 197 Swastika, on German flag, ix, 281, 307; x, 351 Tacna-Arica, boundary dispute, ix, 199, 225 Sweden, absolute monarchy, iv, 320 Tacoma, viii, 139 rise and fall of, v, 93 Taft, William H., Provisional Governor of separation from Norway, ix, 77 Cuba, viii, 216 representatives sent to League, ix, 158 in Japan, viii, 230 President, viii, 242 munitions sent to China, ix, 364 proposes arbitration treaty, viii, 279 Oslo pact, x, 25 admits Arizona to Union, vui, 310 troops at Norway border, x, 55 Taillefer the Minstrel, ii, 309 Sweyn, devastations of, ii, 291 Tainan Maru, in Antarctic exploration, viii, invade England, ii, 299 death of, ii, 300 319

Swiss

Submarine, unrestricted warfare of, ix,

TAINE, HIPPOLYTE ADOLPHE	Taxation, on American colonies, v, 217
The Reign of Terror, vi, 15	no tyranny, v, 257
Tai Ping Rebellion, vi, 287	illegal in France, iv, 308
Takahira, viii, 109	TAYLOR, BENJAMIN
Taking of the Bastille, The, v, 323	The Secession of Panama and the Panama
Taku forts captured, vii, 265	Canal, vii, 377
Talasius, i, 92	TAYLOR, W. A.
Talbot, Sir Gilbert, joins Earl of Richmond, iii,	The French Revolution of 1848, vi, 269
	TAYLOR, W. C.
271 Tallard, Marshal, v, 79, 81	The League, iv, 189
	Tea, destroyed at Boston, v, 247
Talleyrand, vi, 171, 182 Talmud, the, i, 34	Teapot Dome, inquiry on, ix, 217, 224, 256
Tamerlane, invades Hindustan, iii, 179	TEATSORTH, RALPH
orders massacres, iii, 180, 183, 184, 187	America's Greatest Naval Battle, x, 257
in Battenize, iii, 182	Tedder, Sir Arthur, x, 221, 223
exterminates the Jits, iii, 183	Teheran, viii, 230-291; x, 213
crosses the Jumna, iii, 185	Teias, Ostrogothic king, ii, 201
takes Delhi, iii, 186	Tekeli, Count Emmerich, revolt of, iv, 323
enters Delhi, iii, 188	Telamon, battle of, i, 332
crosses the Ganges, iii, 188	Telegraph, the, vi, 302
Tanımany Society founded, v, 312	Telegraphy, wireless, vii, 187
Tancred, ii, 338, 344, 349; iii, 5	Telegraphy Without Wires, vii, 187
Tanganyika, vi, 356; vii, 130	Telephone, invented, vii, 130
Tanks, x, 143, 145	Television, publicly demonstrated, ix, 256
Tann, General von der, vii, 124	Tell, William, iii, 92
Tarawa, Gilbert Islands, Americans battle for,	and the apple, iii, 93
x, 182, 183-192	death of, iii, 94
Tarentum, foundation of, i, 109	Teller, Alaska, Norge anchors at, ix, 240
Tarik, expedition of, ii, 230	TEMPLE, SIR RICHARD
enters Toledo, ii, 233	The Indian Mutiny, vii, 1
protects the Christians, ii, 233	Temple, of Delphi, gifts to, i, 47
rewards the Jews, ii, 233	of Asylean god, i, 88
conquests of, ii, 234	to Castor and Pollux, i, 208
and Musa meet, ii, 237	of Hercules, i, 213; ii, 58
Tarpeia, story of, i, 95	of Esculapius, ii, 34
Tarquin, restoration planned, i, 200	of Janus closed, ii, 67
deposition of, i, 199	Temple of Jerusalem, is fired, ii, 127
Tarquinius, King, consults Delphic Oracle, i,	fall of the, ii, 128
195	the Judeans retire to the, ii, 124
death of King, i, 209	Temples, i, 79
Tarsus, Crusaders, dispute, ii, 344	Babylonian, i, 27, 30
Tartar army, discipline of the, iii, 25	Chaldean, i, 27
Tashkent, viii, 33, 34, 38 Tasman, iv, 304	Temugin. (See Zingis) Ten, Council of, iii, 90, 157, 159; vi, 48
Tasmania discovered, iv, 304	Tennessee, x, 97, 102, 104, 275
Tatius, i, 95	Ten Thousand, retreat of the, i, 272
Taurus, ii, 62	result of the expedition of the, i, 273
Tax, property and income in England,	Terentilius Harsa, propositions of, i, 236
iv, 293	law of, i, 241
*·> ~7J	

Terra Nova, viii, 318 Terror in Japan, x, 371 Terry, Ellen, jubilee, vin, 193 Tertiary Period, i, 2 Tertullian, ii, 164 Teschen, Silesia, x, 13 Tetzel, John, indulgence, iv, 29 contested theses, iv, 30 Teuton, aim of the, ii, 255 Teuton and Roman, union of, ii, 259 Teutones, the, ii, 44, 48 Teutonic Order, the, iii, 55, 59 Tewksbury, battle of, iii, 254 Texas, admitted to Union, vi, 248 Thaelmann, Ernst, ix, 259 Thailand (Siam), ix, 113, 132, 307 Thamas Kouli Khan, v, 154 Thanet, Isle of, ii, 182 Theagenes, i, 307 Theatines, the, iv, 100 Thebans join Acheans, ii, 41 Thebes and Athens, rivals, i, 301, 302 alliance of, i, 306 Thebes and Sparta, at war, i, 296 Themis, the goddess, i, 45 Themistocles, i, 218, 221-232 offers human sacrifices, i, 227 Theodora, the Empress, ii, 200 Theodoric, King of Visigoths, ii, 169 Theodoric the Ostrogoth, ii, 197 Theodosius, Emperor of Rome, ii, 168 issues edicts against heretics, ii, 168 Thermopylæ, Pass of, i, 209 Germans break through, x, 76 Thessalian migration, i, 56 Thief, the repentant, ii, 102 Thiers, vi, 315; vii, 127 fall of, vi, 260 Third Crusade, The, iii, 1 Third International, the, in Mongolia, ix, 273 Third Reich, x, 369 Thirty Tyrants in Attica, i, 304 Thirty Years' War, The, iv, 269 Thomas, Francis J., x, 100 Thomas, Sir Rice, iii, 270 THOMPSON, SILVANUS P. Telegraphy Without Wires, vii, 187 Thorak, Joseph, x, 351 Thou, de, execution of, iv, 293

Thrace, ii, 157; ix, 207, 210, 212 Three Henrys, War of the, iv, 192 Throckmorton, Thomas, iv, 234 THUCYDIDES The Plague at Athens, i, 245 Thundering Legion, miracle of, ü, x13 Thuriot de la Rosière, v, 325 Thurkill, ii, 299 Thusnelda, ii, 79 Tiberius, Alexander, ii, 120 brother of Drusus, ii, 67 recalled from Germany, ii, 80 Tibet, viii, 19 Tibetan mission, viii, 16, 46 Ticonderoga, Fort, v, 207, 268, 282 Tientsin, Treaty of, vii, 7 trade with Chinese Turkestan, ix, 273 Tientsin, British withdraw troops from, 1x, 367 Tiepolo, conspiracy of, iii, 90 Tierra del Fuego, iv, 43 Tilly, iv, 271, 272 general of Austrian armics, iv, 275 Tilsit, Peace of, vi, 116 Timbuctoo, vii, 159 Timur. (See Tamerlane) Tinian Island, Americans control, x, 249 Tippoo Sahib, vi, 55 Tipú, Sultan, v. 335 death of, v, 339 Tirpitz, sunk, x, 312 Tissaphernes, i, 273 Titanic, wrecked, viii, 311 Titian's portrait of Francis I., iv, 53 Tito, Marshal, x, 356 Titus, Herminius, i, 206 Titus, son of Vespasian, ii, 118 appears before Jerusalem, ii, 119 crucifies 500 prisoners, ii, 122 "the delight of all mankind," ii, 122 penetrates the sanctuary of the temple (Jerusalem), ii, 127 orders Jerusalem to be fired, ii, 128 arch of, ii, 130 becomes Emperor, ii, 130 Tmolus, Mount, i, 157 Tobruk, battle for, x, 75, 140, 142, 143, 146 Todleben, General, vii, 134 Togo, Admiral, viii, 89, 127; x, 87 Togrul, ii, 334

Takie (Takue) hambed by superfectures as	Apple 1 11 C to
Tokio (Tokyo), bombed by superfortresses, x,	Trajan, edict of, ii, 111
312, 356, 372	persecutions of Christians under, ii, 116
effects of attack on, x, 372-376, 378, 382	Trajan, wages war against the Dacians ii
American flag raised over, x, 415	conquers the Partitians, ii, 141
Tokio Bay, naval review in, viii, 127	death of, ii, 141
Tokugawa Shôguns, vi, 321	Trajan's Column completed, ii, 141
Tomsberg destroyed, ii, 350	Transatlantic flight, Lindbergh's, ix, 212-25-
Tonkin, vii, 150	byrd's and Chamberlin's, ix, 253
Tonnage, iv, 293	Transcaucasia, earthquake in, vii. 270
Tools, beginnings of, i, 2-3, 5, 7	Trans-Siberian Railway, vii, 161-168; ix, 79
Topete, Admiral, vii, 102	Transvaal, vii, 144
Torgau, battle of, v, 197	îndependence recognized, vî, 320
Tories, American Colonial, v, 256	gold discovered in, vii, 158
Torquemada, Thomas de, iii, 285, 288	Trasimone, Lake, battle of, i, 332
death of, iii, 348	Travel, growth of disposition to, vi, 301
Torriente, Dr. C. D., President of League of	facilities for, vi, 299
Nations Assembly, ix, 216	Traveling, mediæval, iii, 113
Toselli, Major, vii, 155	Treaty, Barrier, v, 115
Tostig, ii, 307	Treaty, of Adrianople, vi, 209
To the North Pole by Air, ix, 227	of Amiens, iv, 70; vi, 86
Totilas the Goth, ii, 201	of Berlin, vii, 141
slain by Narses, ii, 201	of Blois, Secret, iv, 1
Toulon, French fleet scuttled at, x, 149	of Bretigny, iii, 170
Toulouse, iii, 37-38	of Cambray, iv, 75
Tourelles, the, iii, 213, 222	of Campo Formio, vi, 54
Tournay, battle of, v, 89	
Tours, battle of, ii, 242	of Carlowitz, vi, 49 of Central America, viii, 207
Arabian version of, ii, 242	of Constance, ii, 350
significance of the, ii, 245	of Frankfort, ix, 121
bombed, x, 72, 73	of Germany, Italy, Japan, x, 75
Tourville, Admiral, fleet of, v, 58	of Great Britain and China (1842), vi, 243
retreat of, v, 59	of Hanover, v, 131
Toussaint l'Ouverture, captured, vi, 103	of Hubertsburg, v, 198
President of Hayti, vi, 90	of Iglau, iii, 198
TOUT, T. F.	Isthmian Canal, vii, 279
Empire versus Papacy: Henry IV. at Canos-	with Japan, vi, 323, 324, 327
sa, ii, 315	of Kutchuks Kainardji, v, 269
Tower, of Babel, i, 30	of Lausanne, ix, 203, 204, 255, 260
of London, ii, 311	of London, vi, 206
of St. Romanus (Constantinople) falls, iii,	of Lubeck, iv, 273
230	of Lucknow, v, 337
Yowers, John, commands NC-boats' flight, ix,	of Luneville, vi, 85
168	of Madrid, iv, 65
Towns and corporations, ii, 333	of Münster, iv, 304
Towton, battle of, iii, 254	of Nankin, vi, 247
Trade, laws for encouraging, i, 118	of Noyes, iii, 209
Trafalgar, battle of, vi, III	of Nystad, v, 144
centenary of battle of, viii, 127	Panama Canal, vii, 334; viii, 16
Traité des dames, Le, iv, 75	of Paris, vi, 175, 356

	Trust of Dec. 13.0
Treaty, of Passarowitz, vi, 50	Treaty of Peace with Germany, pre-war debts,
r Baland and Czechosiovakia, x, x3	ix, 153, 154
choland and Germany, x, 12	freedom of transit, ix, 157
of Poland and Rumania, x, 13	free zones, ix, 157
of Portsmouth, VIII, 121	rivers, ix, 158, 160
C Deschurg, VI, II4	railways, ix, 160
of Russia and China, x, 400	Kiel Canal, ix, 161
of Priesia and France, X, 12	labor, ix, 161-164
e pussia and Germany, x, 22	signed, ix, 182
of Puesia and Great Britain, x, 05	Trees, laws regarding, i, 118
of Russia and Japan, x, 70, 331	Trent, Council of, iv, 104
of Ruswick, v. 66	Trepassey Bay, ix, 169
of St. Germain, 1V, 184	Tresham, Sir Francis, iv, 229, 240, 243
of San Ildefonso, v, 294	Trezel, General, vi, 226
of San Stefano, vii, 130, 138	Trial of the Seven Bishops, The, v, 1
of Schönbrunn, vi, 118	Triballi, the, i, 300
of Szathmar, v, 102	Tribonian aids Justinian laws, ii, 202
of Tien-tsin, vii, 7	Tribur, assembly at, ii, 323
of Tilsit, vi, 116	Trichinopoly captured, v. 175
of Utrecht, V, 112	Trieste, x, 356, 386
of Versailles, ix, 113-166, 182	Triple Alliance, viii, 377
of Vervins, iv, 203	Triple Entente, viii, 377; ix, 340
of Vienna, vii, 38	Tripoli, captured by Crusaders, ii, 350
of Villafranca, vii, 15	taken by Turks, iv, 109
of Westphalia, ili, 121; iv, 165, 280	Sultan aonexes, vi, 247
of Zanzibar, vii, 129	Rommel flees to, x, 146
the Nine Power, ix, 272	Tripson, John, x, 238
Treaty, the London Naval, ix, 258	Tristan d'Acunha, iii, 350
Treaty of Peace with Germany, official sum-	Triumvirates, ii, 51
	Trotzky, Leon, ix, 327
mary, ix, 113 League of Nations, ix, 114-119	Trouvor, brother of Rurik, ii, 273
League of Nations, 1x, 114-119	Troy, siege of, i, 56
Germany's boundaries, ix, 119, 120, 129	Troyanevsky, Alexander, ix, 294
Luxembourg, ix, 121	Truce of God, the, ii, 312
left bank of Rhine, ix, 121	Truk, Japanese base, x, 214, 413
Alsace-Lorraine, ix, 121-123	Truman, Harry S., x, 331, 337-339, 341-342.
Sarre Basin, ix, 123-125	352, 387, 409
German-Austria, ix, 126	Truths, the Four Great, i, 107
Czechoslovakia, ix, 126, 161	Tuan, Prince, vii, 269
Poland, ix, 126, 128	Tuberculosis Congress, viii, 241
Danzig, ix, 128	Tunis, French take, vii, 144
Denmark, ix, 129	taken by Charles V., iv, 87
Helgoland, ix, 130	Tunisia, strategic value of, x, 146, 148
Russia, ix, 130	Axis surrenders in, x, 171
German colonies, ix, 130-131	Turanian nomads, ix, 213
surrender of ships, ix, 137	Turenne, iv, 310, 314
prisoners of war, ix, 139	Turin, Cabinet of, vii, 11
William II, arraigned, ix, 140, 141	Turkestan, iii, 28; ix, 273, 274
reparations, ix, 141, 146	Turkey, attacked by Russia, v, 239
opium, ix, 150, 151	Turkey, attacked by recom, 1, -37

Turkey, declares war against Russia, v, 300 gains Servia, vi, 120 calls a parliament, vii, 133 in 1876, viii, 233, 235 Abdul Aziz assassinated, viii, 234 constitution, viii, 234 Abdul Hamid, Sultan, viii, 233 Turkish Parliament, viii, 237 social conditions in, viii, 240 war with Italy, viii, 290 Mohammed VI., Sultan, ix, 200 popular movements in, ix, 205 population of, ix, 212 revival of, ix, 204-205 at Lausanne, ix, 200, 203, 216 Republic voted, ix, 216 signs treaty with Soviet Union, ix, 242 modernization of, ix, 383-392 counter-balance to Axis, x, 26 declares war on Germany and Japan, x, 313 Turkish conquests, ii, 334 Turkish tactics, ii, 344; vi, 78 Turkish war, end of the, v, 152 Turks, the, ii, 334 rout of the, ii, 346 enter Egypt, ii, 350 capture Edessa, ii, 350 take Constantinople, iii, 246 invade Italy, iii, 268 take Rhodes, iv, 87 league with France, iv, 88 gain victory over Hungarians, iv, 87 take Buda, iv, 87 take Tripoli, iv, 109 defeat of, at Lepanto, iv, 149 capture Crete, iv, 316 invade Hungary, iv, 323 defeated by Louis of Baden, v, 41 defeated by Prince Eugene, v, 66 driven from Hungary, v, 131 defeated by Russians, v, 309 suppress revolt in Crete, vii, 84 Venetian wars with the, vi, 49 burn Smyrna, ix, 207 Ottoman, ix, 213 heritage of, ix, 213 Turks and Greeks, ix, 206-207, 210, 211 Tuscaloosa, x, 229, 239-240, 246, 247 Tuve, Dr. M. A., x, 407

Tweed Ring (N. Y.), vii, 129 TWEEDIE, E. ALEC Diaz: The Maker of Modern Mexico, viii, 281 Twenge, Sir Marmaduke, 11i, 111 Tycoon, the, vi, 322 Tyler, Wat, Tebellion of, iii, 170 Tyranny, the, i, 187 encroachment of ducal, in Switzerland, in Tyrants, suicide of the, i, 240 the ten, i, 239 Tyrconnel, v. 35 Tyre, wealth of, i, 123 importance of, i, 123 flight of King of, i, 125 loss of rank, i, 125 captured by Crusaders, ii, 350 Tzargrad, the queen of cities, ii, 274 invaded by Oleg, ii, 275 third invasion of, ii, 276 Tzar's Rescript, the, vii, 248

U

Ukraine, ix, 52, 92; x, 14, 16 Ulm, capitulation of, vi, 110 Ulster, colonization of, iv, 211 Ulundi, vii, 144 Umberto, Prince, x, 214 Umezu, Yoshijiro, signs Japanese surrender, x, 414 Uniformity, Act of, iv, 207 Unzodjarski range, viii, 35 Union of Soviet Socialist Republics, Spain recognizes, ix, 293 in non-aggression pacts with Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania, ix, 294 sends first ambassador to United States, ix, in Spanish Civil War, ix, 312 treason trials in, ix, 343 border warfare with Japan, ix, 374-375, 380 refuses British terms, x, 20 Russo-German pact, x, 22 invades Poland, x, 23 invades Finland, x, 27 Russo-Finnish peace, x, 27 takes Lithuania, x, 64 takes Latvia and Estonia, x, 75

Union of Soviet Socialist Republics, invaded by United States of America, Senate passes Naval Treaty, ix, 258 Germany, x, 77-85 in Manchunan conflict, ix, 259, 270, 271, renounces Japan pact, x, 331 army enters Vienna, x, 339 accepts German surrender at Rheims, x, 344 Franklin D. Roosevelt elected President, ix, delegates at San Francisco Conference, x, Philippine independence bill passed, ix, 291 388 Repeal amendment passed, ix, 292 at war with Japan, x, 402 United Nations: Last Chance, x, 387 Roosevelt inaugurated, ix, 292 United Nations, declaration of, x, 110 bank holiday declared, ix, 292 Beer bill signed, ix, 292-293 shipping losses of, x, 138 Bretton-Woods Monetary Conference, x, 249 relations with Soviet Union, ix, 13 neutrality in Spanish Civil War, ix, 323-327 Dumbarton Oaks Conference, x, 254 Neutrality Act, ix, 343 Bulgaria signs armistice with, x, 312 San Francisco Conference, x, 339, 386, 387 stake in China, ix, 376-378 "cash and carry" foreign trade, x, 27 United Nations World Charter, x, 387 opens relations with Saudi Arabia, x, 27 Security Council, x, 387, 388, 394, 395, 399 Selective Service Act, x, 75 Assemblies, x, 387, 395 attack on Pearl Harbor, x, 85, 87-108 International Court of Justice, x, 387, 401 declares war on Japan, x, 109 Economic and Social Council, x, 387, 395, Germany and Italy declare war on, x, 110 400 wins Battle of Midway, x, 111 trusteeships, x, 392 troops control Guadalcanal, x, 171 veto power, x, 392-393 Roosevelt dies, x, 331, 335 bilateral treaties, x, 394 Truman takes oath as President, x. 331 use of military force, x, 394-395 drive on Berlin halts, x, 339 basic social rights, x, 395 V-E day in, x, 341 ratification of, x, 396-398 accepts surrender of Germans, x, 344 U. S. ratifies, x, 402 opposes Yugoslav claims to Trieste, x, 356 United States of America, foundation of the, announces demobilization plans, x. 356 laid, v, 209-210 control Reich with Britain, France and recognized, v, 293 Russia, x, 386 war against England, vi, 120 at San Francisco Conference, x, 388 recognizes French Republic, vi, 275 Senate ratifies Security Charter, x, 402 expedition to Japan, vi, 323 reply to Japanese surrender plea, x, 410 and Mexico, Empire of, vii, 50, 51 accepts Japanese surrender, x, 414 buys Alaska, vii, 92 United States Coast Guard, x, 237, 317 annexes Hawaii, vii, 204 United States in World War I, rejects Boy-Ed cables to Japan established, viii, 215 and Von Papen, ix, 9 boundary agreement with Mexico, viii, 320 dismisses Bernstorff, ix, 12 conference of A.B.C. Powers in, ix, 4 declaration of war, ix, 13, 15, 17, 19 signs treaty with Turkey, ix, 216 Selective Draft Law, ix, 18, 20 reservations to World Court protocol, ix, 242 shipbuilding, ix, 18, 93 accepts French war debt agreement, ix, 242 cantonments, ix, 19 Senate defeats ratification of Lausanne National Army mobilized, ix, 19, 20 Treaty, ix, 255 first American dead, ix, 21 oil lease cases in, ix, 256 war on Austria-Hungary, ix, 21 Herbert Hoover elected President, ix, 257 Rainbow Division, ix, 92 and the Briand-Kellogg Treaty, ix, 257 Americans in Italy, ix, 94 at Naval Conference, ix, 258

United States in World War I, Belleau Wood, ix, 23, 94 troops reach Grandpré, ix, 33 aids starving Europe, ix, 95 naval tonnage allowed by treaty, ix, 191, 192, 196 United States in World War II, Pacific possessions of, attacked, x, 85 losses of, at Pearl Harbor, x, 96, 99-103, 108 declares war on Japan, x, 110 Japan, Germany, and Italy declare war on, X, 110 loses Wake and Guam, x, 110 Manila falls, x, 110 Bataan and Corregidor fall, x, 110, 111 raids Tokyo, x, 110 lands on Guadalcanal, x, 132 Battle of Midway, x, 111 invades North Africa, x, 133 Pearl Harbor report, x, 149 invades Sicily, x, 171 lands on Kiska, x, 171 Salerno bridgehead established, x, 172 invades Naples area, x, 182 wins Tarawa, x, 182 invades Marshalls, x, 214 establishes Anzio beachhead, x, 214 bombs Berlin and Truk, x, 214 invades Europe, x, 214 superfortresses bomb Japan, x, 249 win Saipan, Guam, and Tinian, x, 249 enters Germany, x, 254 invades Philippines, x, 255 Second Battle of Philippine Sea, x, 257-300 German counter-offensive, "Belgian bulge," X, 312 retakes Corregidor, x, 313 Cologne capitulates, x, 313 Patton crosscs Rhine, x, 330-331 invades Okinawa, x, 331 Germans surrender at Rheims, x, 344 Philippines liberated, x, 401 atomic bombs dropped on Japan, x, 402 Japan surrenders, x, 408, 415 United States Marines, x, 183, 249, 254, 356, United States Navy, x, 87, 113, 149, 200, 257, 371, 401 United Yugoslavia, A, ix, 67

University of Halle, v, 66
Ur, i, 22, 26
Uranium, x, 405
Urban II., Pope, ii, 335
Uruguay, Orders out Graf Spee, x, 27
Urukh, i, 25, 26, 29, 30
U.S.S.R. (See Union of Soviet Socialist Republics)
Utah, x, 105
Utica, ii, 36
Utrecht, Union of, iv, 163
Peace of, v, 112; x, 387

V-2 rocket bombs, x, 312 Valdez, Juan, iv, 99 Valée, General, vi, 227 Valens, ii, 153, 168 VALENTINE, DAVID T. The Discovery and Settlement of Manhattan Island, iv, 245 Valentinian, ii, 153 Emperor of the West, ii, 168 Valentinian III. sends embassy to Attila, ii, 176 Valera, Eamon de, ix, 259, 292 Valerian, persecutes Christians, ii, 116 conquered by the Persians, ii, 142 Valerius, i, 240 Valetta, iv, 146 Valette, Jean Parisot de la, Grand Master of Knights of St. John, iv, 143, 145 Valmy, battle of, vi, 1-14 Valois, House of, iii, 112 Vancouver explores northwest coast of America, v, 334 Van de Graaff, R. J., x, 406 Vanguard, the, vi, 58 VAN NORMAN, LOUIS E., AND PEET, GEORGE The Czecho-slovak Nation, ix, 79 Varangians, the, ii, 265, 270 and Slavs, ii, 271 Varangian soldiers, ii, 266 Variag, wreck of, viii, 216 Varus, Q., succeeds Tiberius in Germany, ii, 80 character and achievements of, ii, 80-86 Vasa, Gustavus, King of Sweden, iv, 87 Vasco da Gama, voyage of, iii, 320-321, 326 Vasco da Gama, captains of, and fleet of, iii, 319 names Natal, iii, 322 return of, iti, 325 Vassal, the feudal, ii, 331 Vaterland, seized vessel, ix, 18 Vatican, the, vii, 359 attacked, iv, 67 Vaudois attacked, iv, 316 V-Day in Paris, x, 251 Ve, i, 18 V-E day in Europe, x, 339, 341 Vedrines, makes speed record, viii, 310 Veu, Romans, at, i, 294 Venables and Penn take Jamaica, iv, 316 Vendée, La, vi, 43, 84 Venetians, aid Crusaders, iii, 13 gain Constantinople, iii, 18 attitude toward the Empire, iii, 20 Venezuela, vii, 280; x, 395 declares independence, vi, 217 and United States, viii, 231 Castro exiled, viii, 263 Vengrov, battle of, vii, 36 Venice, foundation of the Republic of, ii, 174 wealth of, ii, 174 Doge of, ii, 350 aided by Cosmo de' Medici, iii, 176-177 France declares war with, iv, 2 greatness of, vi, 45 Republic, policy of, vi, 46 Republic, conspiracy against, vi, 47 and French Revolution, vi, 51 attacks the French, vi, 54 Allied troops seize, x, 339 Venizelos, Greck premier, 1919-1920, ix, 206 heads revolt in Greece, ix, 307 Verdun, surrender of, vi, 7 Verneuil, taken by Bedford, iii, 209 Vernon takes Portobello, v, 164 Verona, Congress of, vi, 196 Verrazano enters New York Bay, iv, 245 Versailles, mob marches to, v, 317 Versailles Treaty, Germany abrogates, ix, 308, 343 (See also Treaty of Versailles) Ver-sur-Mer, America comes down at, ix, 248 Vervins, Treaty of, iv, 203 Vesle River, crossed by Americans, ix, 26, 27, 28

Vespasian becomes Emperor of Rome, ii, 118 Vestal, x, 99, 104 Vestal priestesses, i, 289, 290 Vesuvius, eruption of, ii, 131-141 earthquake, viii, 168-169 eruptions of, viii, 165 Viau, Sir Philip, x, 229 Vichy, capital of Unoccupied France, x, 75 Vicksburg, capture of, vii, 54 Victor, General, vi, 135 Victor at Olympia, i, 83 Victor Emmanuel, vi, 191, 195; vii, 11, 14, 21 Victor Emmanuel III, x, 214 Victoria becomes Queen of England, vi, 231 Empress of India, vii, 130 celebrates Diamond Jubilee, vii, 204 Victoria Falls Bridge, The, viii, 123 Victory in Europe, x, 341 Victory of Arminius, ii, 79 Victory of Victories. (See Nehavend) Victory Parade, in Paris, ix, 182 Vienna, capture of, vi, 117 siege of, iv, 321 Peace of, v, 165 Congress of, vi, 172 revolution (1848), vi, 280 Treaty of, vii, 38; x, 387 falls to Russians, x, 339 Vietinghoff, Heinrich von, x, 348 Vieweg, Walter, x, 290, 300 Vikings, ferocity of the, ii, 262 conquests of the, ii, 259-260, 261-267 Vili, i, 18 Villa, Mexican bandit, killed, ix, 10, 201 Villa, Viciosa, iv, 316 Villafranca, Peace of, vii, 15 Villars, Marshal, v, 107, 113 Villehardouin, Geoffroi, iii, 12, 14 Villeins, the, ii, 331 Villena, ravages Alpuxarras, iii, 276 Villeneuve, Admiral, vi, 105 Vilna, assigned to Poland, ix, 201 Vinland, (America) discovered, ii, 260 Vinoy, General, vii, 124 Vipiteno, Italy, x, 351 Virginia, Charter, the first, iv, 215 English colonists in, iv, 215, 220 Jamestown founded in, iv, 217 the new charter, iv, 221

Virginia, negro slaves imported to, iv, 259 House of Burgesses, v, 259 story of, i, 239 Virginius, i, 236, 239 Visconti, the, extinguished, iii, 226 Visigoths conquer Spain and Gaul, ii, 194 Vitellius the Glutton, ii, 118 Vitiges, King of the Goths, ii, 199 Vitousek, Roy, x, 97 Vittoria, battle of, vi, 138 description of, vi, 141-153 VIVIAN, HERBERT A Glorious Revolution in Servia, vii, 347 Vladimir I., ii, 265-266, 278 Voisin Brothers, inventors and builders of airplanes, ix, 248 Volksstrum, x, 254 VOLTAIRE, FRANÇOIS MARIE AROUET DE Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, iv, 331 Voyage of the "Mayflower," The, iv, 283 Voyages of Vasco da Gama, iii, 317

W

WAC. (See Women's Army Corps) Wad-en-Nejumi, vii, 149 Wage Law, Minimum, ix, 308, 343 Wagram, battle of, vi, 117 Wainwright, Gen. Jonathan M., commands in Philippines, x, 415 Wake Island, attacked by Japan, x, 88, 110 Walcheren Island, x, 312 Waldemar I. of Denmark, ii, 350 Waldenses founded, ii 350 Waldo, Peter, ii, 350 Waldron, John C., x, 115 Wales, Prince and Princess of, in India, viii, 127 Wales, Prince of, origin of motto of, iii, 129 Wales subjugated by Edward, iii, 82 WALLACE, ALFRED RUSSEL Anæsthetics and Antiseptics, vii, 81 Modern Illumination, vi, 213 Photography, vii, 195 Wallace, William, iii, 82 Wallenstein, Albert (Count), marches of, iv, beseiges Stralsund, iv, 273 described by Schiller, iv, 274

Wallenstein, dismissed, iv, 274 recalled, iv, 277 assassination of, iv, 279 Waller, Capt., x, 240 Walpole, Horace, v, 139, 141, 209 Walter, Hurbert, Bishop of Salisbury, iii, 4 Walter the Penniless, ii, 337 Wandu and Wejas, i, 18 War Between Charles I, and the Parliament, The, iv, 295 War Correspondents, x, 320, 372 War of 1812, vi, 120 War of American Revolution, v, 268 War of Greek Independence, vi, 201 War of the Austrian Succession, v, 165 War of the Polish Succession, v, 145 War of the Roses, iii, 254 War of the Three Henrys, iv, 192 War Production Board, x, 201 War Production in United States, x, 203 of synthetic rubber, x, 204 of merchant ships, x, 205-206 of smokeless powder, x, 206 of machine tools, x, 207 capacity of, x, 207-208 manpower in, x, 209 of planes, x, 210-211 peak of, x, 204, 212 American genius in, x, 213 of atom bomb, x, 406, 408 Ward, x, 89, 90, 106 WARD, H. SNOWDEN Discovery of the X-Rays, vii, 181 Warr, Lord de la, iv, 222, 225 Warsaw, occupied by Russians, v, 243 agitation at, vii, 32 taken by Germans, x, 27 freed, x, 313 Warships, modern, first battle of, vii, 169 Wartburg Castle, Luther in, iv, 33 Warwick, Earl of, sends message to Edward at Creey, iü, 127 Warwick, captured, iii, 67 Washington, George, captures Fort Duquesne, v, 207 elected President, v, 312 Washington, city of, laid out, v, 312 Washington Naval Treaty, ix, 191, 198, 216 Wasp, x, 257

Water, early boiling of, i, 6	Why I Revived the Olympic Games, viii,
Waterloo, vi, 174	187
Watt, James, v, 227; vi, 92, 306	Wilderness, battle of the, vii, 80
Weather, in invasions, x, 221-223, 226, 316-	Wilkes, John, v, 213, 264
317	William I. (England), the Conqueror, ii, 263,
Webster, Daniel, "open door" policy of, ix, 272	305
Wedgwood potteries, v, 235	prepares to invade England, ii, 306
Weimar, Constitution of, ix, 285, 288	anchors off Pevensey, ii, 308
WEINERT, ERICH	ruse of, ii, 310
A Close-up at Stalingrad, x, 151	coronation of, ii, 311
Weissenburg, battle of, vii, 120	general submission to, ii, 311
Wellesley, the Marquess, v, 335	William II., Rufus, ii, 349
Wellington, Duke of, vi, 116, 145, 152, 170,	William III., of Orange (England), v, 19
	supporters of, v, 21
173, 210, 237 Wellman, Walter, viii, 243, 278	enters England, v, 23
We Must Win Another Battle in Germany,	
	invades Ireland, v, 30
x, 357	army of, v, 32
Wenceslaus, son of Charles IV., iii, 191, 196	heroism of, v, 39
Wenzeslas, Duke, attacked by Henry I., ii, 282	death of, v, 73
Werder, General von, vii, 126	William of Orange, iv, 153, 162
Wesley, Charles, v, 159	becomes a Calvinist, iv, 158
Wesley, John, v, 159	becomes stadtholder, iv, 160
in Georgia, v, 154	assassination of, iv, 164
Wessex, Golden Dragon of, ii, 308	William I., King of Prussia, vii, 117, 123
Western Europe and the Holy Alliance,	William II., German Emperor, flees, ix, 95
vi, 177	William and Mary, v, 27
WESTERVELT, G. C.	Williams, General Fenwick, vi, 342
The Flight of the NC-Boats, ix, 167	Wills, laws concerning, i, 117
West India Company, the, iv, 251, 253	Wilson, Sir Henry H., assassinated, iv, 199
West Virginia, x, 97, 102, 103, 104, 275	WILSON, WOODROW
Westminster, Provisions of, iii, 73	The Fourteen Points, ix, 39
William the Conqueror crowned at, ii, 311	Wilson, Woodrow, nominated, viii, 320; ix, 11
Westminster Abbey, vii, 315	address on submarine issue, ix, 10
Westphalia, Peace of, iii, 121; iv, 280	war message, ix, 13, 16
Treaty of, iv, 165; x, 387	Fourteen Points, ix, 44-47
Weygand, Maxime, x, 59	works of peace, ix, 94, 95
Weyler, George, x, 277	serious illness of, ix, 182
Weymouth, Captain George, iv, 255	death of, ix, 224
discoveries of, iv, 256	Wimbledon, battle at, ii, 191
Whigs, fall of the, v, 103	Wimpffen, General, vii, 122
WHITE, ARNOLD	Winchester, ii, 190, 311
Massacre of the Jews in Russia, vii, 337	Windsor, Duke of, ix, 331
White, Stanford, shot, viii, 206	Winter, Thomas, iv, 234
White Company, the, iii, 37	Winters, Commander, x, 299
White Plains, x, 289, 291, 293	Wippedsfleet, struggle at, ii, 188
White Russia, x, 390	Wireless telegraphy, viii, 216, 279
Whitefield, v, 154, 157	development of, viii, 320
Whitlock, Brand, leaves Belgium, ix, 13	WISBY, HROLF
Whitney, John Perry, x, 286, 288, 289, 290	Haakon VII., King of Norway, viii, 203

Wisby, iii, 115	World War I, Jerusalem taken, ix, 21
Witches (Salem), v, 65	Russian-Teuton armistice, ix, 22
Witiza the Goth, 11, 228	Allied counter-offensive, 1x, 94
Witte, chief Minister of Russia, viii, 98	German retreat, ix, 94
Witwatersrand, vn, 158	Armistice, ix, 37, 95
Wodehouse, Colonel, vii, 149	surrender of German fleet, ix, 95
Wolfe, General, at Quebec, v, 208	World War II, (All of Volume x is devoted to
WOLFE, HENRY C.	the causes, progress, and completion of
Nazi Eyes Turn East, ix, 347	World War II. See chronological refer-
WOLFERT, IRA	ences listed below.)
The Invasion, x, 236	September 28, 1939-April 9, 1940, x, 27
Wolff, Karl, x, 348	May 10, 1940-June 22, 1940, x, 64
Wolsey, Cardinal, iv, 49, 51, 52	June 27, 1940-June 22, 1941, x, 74-76
Woman Suffrage League, International, viii, 46	June 26, 1941-December 7, 1941, x, 85
in California, viii, 278	December 8, 1941-June 3-6, 1942, x, 110-
British demonstrations, viii, 290	111
Women, training of, i, 65	July 1, 1942-November 7, 1942, x, 132-133
Women's Army Corps (WAC), Mrs. Oveta	November 10, 1942-January 31, 1943, x,
Culp Hobby duects, x, III	148-149
Wood, Leonard, ix, 256	February 6, 1943-September 9, 1943, x, 171-
WOODHOUSE, HENRY	172
The Conquest of the Air, viii, 355	October 1, 1943-November 23, 1943, x, 182
Word, the, i, 37	November 22-25, 1943-June 6, 1944, x,
Worden, John L., vii, 43	213-214
World War I, assassination of Francis Ferdi-	June 15, 1944-August 25, 1944, x, 249
nand, ix, r	August 21-October 7, 1944-October 23-26,
ultimatum to Servia, ix, 5	1944, x, 254-255
Austrians bombard Belgrade, ix, 5	October 28, 1944-March 16, 1945, x, 312-
Russia mobilizes, ix, 5	313
Germans invade Belgium, ix, 5	March 17, 1945-April 12, 1945, x, 330-331
British in Belgium, 1x, 6	April 13, 1945-May 8, 1945, x, 339
Allies retreat, ix, 6	May 9, 1945-May 29, 1945, x, 356
the Maine battle, ix, 6	June 1, 1945-June 26, 1945, x, 386
Antwerp falls, ix, 7	June 28, 1945-August 9, 1945, x, 401-402
Battle of Lodz, ix, 7	August 10, 1945-September 2, 1945, x, 408
Belgrade taken, and retaken, ix, 7	September 8, 1945-September 10, 1945, x,
Russians in the Caucasus, ix, 7	415
Russians in East Prussia, ix, 8	(See also separate countries)
submarine war zone, ix, 8, 13	China
Bulgarians invade Serbia, ix, 9	Czechoslovakia
Second Battle of Ypres, ix, 9	Denmark
Lustania torpedoed, ix, 9	Egypt
case of Edith Cavell, ix, 9	Ethiopia
Gallipoli evacuated, ix, 9, 10	Finland
submarines uniestricted, ix, 12	France
Kut-el-Amara taken, ix, 12	Germany
United States in War, ix, 15, 20	Great Britain
Pershing commands A. E. F., ix, 19	Greece
Italy invaded, ix, 20-21	Hungary

World War II, India	Y		
Iran (Persia)	Valta Conference V ava		
	Yalta Conference, x, 313		
Italy	Yalu, battle of the, vii, 169; viii, 30		
Japan Luxembourg	Yankee Clipper, first transatlantic mail flight		
Manchukuo	of, ix, 392		
Mexico	Year, the Greek, i, 77		
Morocco	"Yellow Peril," the, vii, 276		
Netherlands	Yezdegerd, grandson of Chosroes, ii, 219		
New Zealand	King of Persia, flight of, ii, 224		
Norway	Ymir, i, 18		
Philippine Islands	YONGE, CHARLOTTE M.		
Poland	Conquests of Mexico and Peru, iv, 13		
Rumania	La Fronde, iv, 305		
Spain	Malta and Lepanto, iv, 141		
Thailand	Partition of Poland, v, 237		
Tunsia	The Siege of Vienna, iv, 321		
Turkey	York, the capital of Britain, ii, 193		
US.S.R. (Russia)	Yorktown, x, 114, 119-120, 123-124,		
United States	129-131		
Yugoslavia	YOSHI-AKI AND EASTLAKE		
(See also United States in World War II,	The Battle of the Yalu, vii, 169		
United Nations, and Battles.)	Yoshihito, crowned, ix, 9		
World's Columbian Exposition, vii, 168	death of, ix, 242		
Worms, Council at, ii, 321	Young Plnn, ix, 258, 290		
Diet of, 1v, 32	"Young Turks," revolt of, viii, 231, 233		
Worth, battle of, vii, 120	Ypres, Second Battle of, ix, 9		
Wright, John, iv, 234	Yuan Shih-Kai, viii, 310		
Wright brothers, Orville and Wilbur, viii, 243,	Yugoslavia, peoples in, ix, 67-69		
364, 366-369; ix, 248, 249	Austrian oppression of, ix, 70-71		
WYLLY, COLONEL H. C.	Nazis invade, x, 76		
Into Tibet, viii, 19	at San Francisco Conference, x, 394		
Wyndham, William, arrest of, v, 121	YULE, HENRY		
	Marco Polo's Travels, iii, 83		
x	Yunnan, French sphere of influence in, ix, 275		
••			
Xanthippus's dog, i, 224	Z		
Xavier, Francis, iv, 101	and the same of the same		
Xenophon, march of, i, 273	Zama, effect of the battle of, ii, 1		
Xeres, battle at, ii, 231	Zamoiski, Count Andrew, vii, 32		
Xerxes, i, 221-222, 226-231	Zamora, Niceto Alcala, elected President of		
Ximenez, appears in Granada, iii, 340	Spain, ix, 258		
vandalism of, iii, 342	Zanzibar, Treaty of, vii, 129		
goes to Seville, iii, 344	Zara, ii, 350		
policy of, iii, 346	siege of, iii, 14		
Xisuthrus, i, 13, 21	Zarathustra, i, 38		
Xochiquetzal, i, 15	Zealots, the, ii, 121, 123, 125, 129		
X-rays, vii, 179, 181	Zeni-Zem, the well, ii, 206		
Xylography, iii, 251	Zend-Avesta, i, 33		

Zenobia, ancestry of, ii, 143
character and accomplishments of, ii, 143
domains of, ii, 145
captured by Aurelian, ii, 148-151
Zeppelin, Count, viii, 231, 263
Zhukoff, Gregory, x, 345
Zingis Khan, ancestry of, iii, 23
first battle of, iii, 23
barbaric rites of, iii, 24
laws of, iii, 25
religion of, iii, 26
illiteracy of, iii, 26
invasion of China by, iii, 27
empire of, iii, 28

Zingis Khan, army of, iii, 29 citics conquered by, iii, 29 generals of, conquests of, iii, 30 sons of, iii, 31 Successors of, iii, 31 Zion, destruction of, ii, 129 Ziska, iii, 197 Zonta, the, iii, 159 Zorndorf, battle of, v, 196, 204 Zoroaster, i, 33 Zoroaster, i, 33-42 Zoroastrianism, i, 19, 33, 42 Zozimus, ii, 165 Zwingle, Ulric, iv, 27, 34